

Chapter 401 - Won by One Move

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Sixteen sergeants who were guarding the gate also turned their gaze to Chen Tianran and Zhang Ruochen.

They had not expected that this young man was the young conqueror recorded in the Eastern Region Report.

“Is he really so strong?”

The Fire Lycan tribe sergeant who had kept Zhang Ruochen out before became nervous. If Zhang Ruochen was a respected guest of the East Region Saint Mansions, it would be easy for him to punish a gatekeeping sergeant.

“I don’t know whether he is really that strong or not.”

The sergeant stared at the two men, who were ready to fight in the distance, hoping that Chen Tianran would beat Zhang Ruochen.

When Chen Tianran stabbed with a spear, rather than dodging Zhang Ruochen attacked actively.

He could test the sixth Palm, Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm that he had just learned.

“Divine Dragon’s Steal.”

Zhang Ruochen looked calm. He mobilized his Genuine Qi without any reservation, gathered power into his palms, and then threw his palms with full strength.

The center of the palm emitted a flash of lightning that turned into a spectacular electric cloud.

The sound of thunder and dragon howling came out from the cloud.

A 10 meter long Divine Dragon's illusory image flew out with a strong Genuine Qi fluctuation. It struck against Chen Tianran's Ghost King Spear. In a flash, it dissolved the power of the Ghost King Invisible Spear.

But the strong palm power did not disappear completely.

Chen Tianran's expression changed. He realized that he was quite far from Zhang Ruochen.

He quickly opened his arms, mobilized his Genuine Qi. He immitted it into the Ghost King Spear, activating the inscription.

He placed the spear horizontally to block attacks.

“PING!”

The dragon shadow hit against the long spear. It shattered Chen Tianran's Celestial Bodyshield and struck him down.

Chen Tianran fell to the ground heavily 70 meters away. His robe was torn.

His arms were covered with bloody wounds.

Chen Tianran climbed up with difficulty. His arms were sore and his whole body was shaking, but his eyes were full of excitement. “What great strength. Let's fight again... Eh-hem...”

Chen Tianran felt a sharp pain in his internal organs, just as he tried to mobilize Genuine Qi.

He was suffering internal injuries and could not fight again.

In the younger generation of Chens, the ten genius juniors could almost all rank in the top 100, and all of them were masters of the Heaven Realm.

But at this moment, they were so stunned that they could not speak.

Chen Tianran had not expected Zhang Ruochen to even be a match. Yet Chen Tianran couldn't even catch up with one

move. It was horrible.

Were the top masters of the East Region Saint Mansions this vulnerable?

In fact, they didn't know that Zhang Ruochen had used all his power.

It was amazing that Chen Tianran could take a move and stand up again.

If a warrior in the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm was in the same position, he would have probably been broken to bits.

Chen Tianshu stepped forward and laughed. "Sixth Brother, you should know this by now: 'However strong you are, there is always someone stronger.'"

Several of the Chens god's favored daughters were also amazed. They were staring at Zhang Ruochen with great admiration with their beautiful eyes.

Some people even made eyes at him, brazenly expressing their affection for him.

The Chens had always been able to draw top geniuses over to their side by way of marriage.

With his talent Zhang Ruochen was definitely an ideal candidate. If they could marry him, their status in the family would be promoted greatly.

The reason the Chens had thrived eternally from the ancient times to the present was not that each generation had geniuses who could bear the burden. The more important factor was that they knew how to draw geniuses in.

Arranged marriages were the best way to draw geniuses.

Besides, few geniuses did not want to find one of the Chens God's favored daughters. Not only could they have a beautiful wife, they would also be sheltered by the Chens and get cultivation resources. Only fools would refuse it.

And the Chens had never been short of beautiful female descendants.

Chen Tianran squeezed his fists tightly. “Zhang Ruochen, do you think that you have defeated the genius of the East Region Saint Mansions? Even if you defeat me, the top talent of the East Region Saint Mansions is learning Kungfu from a Saint in Liangyi Sect. If he goes downhill, he can compete with you.”

Chen Tianshu laughed. “Sixth Brother, what are you fighting for? Brother Zhang is not an outsider, he is one of us. He is cousin Yanchen’s fiancé. He probably came here to see her.”

“What? Cousin Yanchen’s fiancé?”

Chen Tianran slapped his forehead. “You are one of us. Brother Zhang, you should have told me that earlier!”

The major reason Chen Tianran wanted to fight with Zhang Ruochen was that he was not reconciled with the thought of the East Region Saint Mansions being defeated by a warrior from a small place.

Since Zhang Ruochen was one of them, it was completely different.

The god’s favored daughters chasing Zhang Ruochen were also somewhat discouraged. They didn’t expect that Zhang Ruochen was already engaged with Huang Yanchen. They didn’t stand a chance.

Chen Tianran quickly changed his attitude and became quite enthusiastic. He took Zhang Ruochen into the Saint Prince’s Mansion and ordered a Fire Lycan tribe sergeant, “Asi, go and ask cousin Yanchen to come meet her fiancé.”

“Forget it. Ask her to my Fenglin Pavilion directly. Today, I’m going to have a good drink with my Brother Zhang. All of you go and call out the brothers and sisters of the Saint Prince’s Mansion. I’m going to have a banquet for Zhang Ruochen, one of Six Young Kings of the Eastern Region. Tell them all to come and join in. Hey-hey! It’s not every day they can see one of the Six Great Kings.”

The sergeant who had kept Zhang Ruochen from entering quickly knelt on the ground and apologized to him. “Sir, I

apologize to you. I failed to recognize your identity. Please forgive me.”

Sir, of course, meant Zhang Ruochen.

Chen Tianran looked down. “What? You, an understrapper, dare to offend Brother Zhang? Drag him down and hack him to pieces...”

Zhang Ruochen quickly stepped in with a smile. “It’s just a trivial matter. In fact, he didn’t offend me. It’s not necessary to punish him.”

Chen Tianran thought for a moment. “Okay! Since Brother Zhang has plead on your behalf, I will let you go. From now on, you have to recognize him clearly. Brother Zhang is one of the Six Young Kings in the Eastern Region, you can’t afford to offend him. Capital crime can be forgiven but punishment is inevitable. From tomorrow onwards, you will go to the Ten-thousand Meteorite Mine and serve in hard labor. It will be 30 years before you can leave.”

“Thank you, childe. And thank you, sir.”

The sergeant bowed three times on the ground and retreated gratefully.

Chen Tianran wasn’t an outrageous man, he was rather clever. He had reprimanded the sergeant only to show Zhang Ruochen that the Chens already treated him as one of their own.

Wasn’t it nice to sacrifice a servant in exchange for Zhang Ruochen’s sense of belonging to the East Region Saint Mansions?

Zhang Ruochen understood this clearly too. That’s why he had stood up for him.

He was still an outsider because he hadn’t actually married Huang Yanchen yet.

The sergeant was a master of the Heaven Realm after all, and he was a faithful slave.

What would other descendants think when an outsider who had not even entered the East Region Saint Mansions yet caused the death of a faithful slave of the Heaven Realm over

a small incident? Would they feel that Zhang Ruochen was too arrogant and self-righteous?

The Chens were powerful and influential, but their internal battles were also very fierce. Zhang Ruochen did not want to get involved in the internal competition of the Chens. He had to be careful about everything and try not to bring trouble on himself.

That night, Chen Tianran held a banquet in Fenglin Pavilion and hundreds of descendants came.

Many people had seen the most recent issue of the Eastern Region Report and learned of Zhang Ruochen's recent achievements. They were very curious about his sudden rise and wanted to get to know him.

Of course, there were also some people, who thought their own cultivations profound enough. They wanted to challenge him.

But when they found out that Zhang Ruochen had only used one move to defeat Chen Tianran, suddenly, no one dared to challenge him.

Chen Tianran ranked 12th in the young generation of Chens. If he could not defeat Zhang Ruochen, it would be even more difficult for others.

Huang Yanchen also came to Fenglin Pavilion. After seeing Zhang Ruochen, her face grew cold. "Sir, you are so noble that I have to meet you personally."

"Zhang Ruochen, are you dizzy with your overnight success?"

Zhang Ruochen smiled bitterly. "Senior Sister Apprentice Huang, I think you misunderstood me. I have come to the Saint Prince's Mansion to give you the Sword Heart Pill."

He took out an elixir bottle full of Sword Heart Pills and handed it to her.

Huang Yanchen saw the elixir bottle and felt warm in her heart. Her cold face thawed and there was more tenderness.

Of course, she knew that the Sword Heart Pills were Zhang Ruochen's reward for coming first in the Sword Technique

Department.

The Sword Heart Pill was a seventh-class pill, so it was very valuable. Although it had little effect on Zhang Ruochen, his sword technique and cultivation would certainly be enhanced if he took it.

However, Zhang Ruochen had not taken them. Instead he'd traveled thousands of kilometers to the East Region Saint Mansions to give them to her personally.

His thoughtfulness touched her deeply.

In the past, Huang Yanchen had always felt that Zhang Ruochen had no affection for her, that he had decided to marry her because of the bond of the marriage contract.

But now she realized that Zhang Ruochen might care about her. But he was not good at expressing himself.

Huang Yan Chen bit her lip tightly and tightened her face. She took the Sword Heart Pills and squeezed them in her hands. She said, "You still have some conscience."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "The third round of the Saint Academy examination will surely be dangerous. If you can improve your strength a little, you will be much safer."

Huang Yanchen sighed. "It's a pity that you didn't come a day earlier. My mother left yesterday to visit a friend. Otherwise, I could take you to see her."

Zhang Ruochen touched his nose with fingers. "Even if we don't see each other this time, there will be other opportunities."

Chapter 402 - The Six Great Kings of the New Generation

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

After the banquet, Zhang Ruochen left Saint Prince's Mansion of Lake Jiangyue and bought the latest edition of the

Eastern Region Report

when he passed by the Martial Market Bank.

The cover of

Eastern Region Report

was a drawing of the landscape of the Holy Land in the Eastern Region. It was vividly drawn by the hand of the master painter.

It was said that the cover of the

Eastern Region Report

had always been a drawing of a place that had scenic spots and historical sites in the Eastern Region. This was done so the newspaper could promote the culture and history of the Eastern region, drawing in people to travel there.

On the lower right corner of the cover, four small texts were printed—

Compiled by: Saint Lady.

Zhang Ruochen heard a lot of legends about that Saint Lady, but all the legends were vague. It seemed that no one had actually seen her in person.

Some people said that Saint Lady did not practice martial arts, but she read many books and was proficient in chess and calligraphy. She used the “lyre-playing”, “chess”, “calligraphy”, and “painting” to enter the way. All four had reached a saint-like stage.

Although still at a young age, her Spiritual Power had reached fifty level or more, and she had become a Psychic Sage.

Rumors said that she could read astrological signs and communicate with gods. Also, she could speculate about major events around the world. There were nothing she wouldn't know about and no person she wouldn't recognize.

Since she started writing the

Eastern Region Report

, there had never been any flaws in her writing and she had always been the first to know of any major events in the Eastern Region.

Moreover, she also had good relations with the Saints of the Eastern Region, and she often spoke with them and invited the saints to discuss on the events of the world. At the same time, she also published their comments in the

Eastern Region Report

.

There were too many rumors about that Saint Lady, but Zhang Ruochen had never taken her existence seriously.

Not considering anything else, for a Saint to have insights into the entire Eastern Region affairs merely relying on her own power was impossible.

To write the

Eastern Region Report

, she surely had control over the huge intelligence agency in the Martial Market Bank. The number of intelligence personnel under her command must also be uncomparable. All she needed to do was to organize the information.

But in any case, the Saint Lady was certainly a great figure. If there was a chance, Zhang Ruochen would like to go meet her.

If she really was omniscient, Zhang Ruochen wanted to ask her what actually happened eight hundred years ago and whether the Nine Emperors were really all killed by Chi Yao.

On the first page of the

Eastern Region Report

, the title was marked with a line of eye-catching characters—The Six Young Kings of the New Generation in the Eastern Regions.

Next, with a great number of words, she had described in detail, of the rising stars of the Eastern Region.

Each of their age was all between 16 and 22. They were truly young warriors.

Before the six people were introduced, it was a large segment of rendering, such as:

“The era of the four Saintly Beings had passed. The Six Young Kings will become the new stars of the young generation of the Eastern Region which will belong to them in the next decade. After 100 years, the Eastern Regions would be dominated by them.”

In the Eastern Region, a generation lasts about 10 years.

10 years ago, four Saintly Beings were born there, becoming the talents of the new generation, and none of their peers could match them. As a result, they could only look for opponents that were two or three generations older than them.

Nowadays, the four Saintly Beings almost reached the age of thirty. They were exalted and their martial cultivation was unfathomable. Although they were still young, they could not represent an era anymore.

The Six Young Kings would now replace them, becoming the leader of the younger generation in the Eastern Region in the decade to come.

The Six Young Kings were—

Yunwu Commandery Prince, Zhang Ruochen.

Holy Body of Golden Light, Luo Shuihan.

Saber God for Guard, Bu Qianfan.

Heartless Saint Being, Di Yi.

Heresy Saintness, Mu Lingxi.

Yang Spirit, Gai Hao.

Zhang Ruochen read carefully and found that Saint Lady was indeed smart as she had written Zhang Ruochen's deeds in great detail.

For example, the article wrote that Zhang Ruochen opened the Sacred Mark at the age of 16 and began to practice. He had achieved such astonishing accomplishments in a mere three years.

It also recorded several major achievements of Zhang Ruochen, including the battle with Di Yi on the Tongming River, and his victory over the disciples of the four Saints on the Stairway to Heaven by himself.

In addition, the Saint Lady also invited a Saint to analyze Zhang Ruochen's martial arts and wanted to find out the true teacher of Zhang Ruochen.

They thought that Zhang Ruochen's Master was not Lei Jing.

There was someone else.

Lei Jing could not teach disciples like Zhang Ruochen.

The Saint analyzed that Zhang Ruochen had practiced the unique technique of Thousand Buddhism Sect, the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, and the unique technique of Liangyi Sect, the Yin-Yang Two Forms Sword Array and Sword Ripple of Ten Channels.

In the end, the Saint came to the conclusion that the Master of Zhang Ruochen should be the superior in Buddhism, Golden Dragon.

800 years ago, Golden Dragon probably did not die, but had been hidden in Omen Ridge. In recent years, Zhang Ruochen

was accepted as an apprentice. When he was about to die, he gave his Dragon Pearl and Buddhist Emperor Sarira to Zhang Ruochen.

Of course, these were all speculations of the Saint. Even the Saint Lady was very cautious when writing this paragraph, and she put a question mark behind it.

“There are indeed many smart people in the Eastern Region, although they didn’t get everything right, they have already correctly guessed some parts.”

Zhang Ruochen thought to himself that he must proceed with extreme caution in the future.

The Dragon Pearl’s getting exposed was unexpected by Zhang Ruochen.

As long as he entered the Saint Academy, the Dragon Pearl in his body would be seen by Half-Saint’s cultivation.

The key was that his identity must not be noticed by Empress Chi Yao. Otherwise, the consequences would be disastrous.

Of course, for Empress Chi Yao, there were many important events to be dealt with. For the time being, the story of a young genius in the Eastern Region would not be noticed.

Zhang Ruochen went on reading. After seeing the name of the Heresy Saintness, he secretly guessed that the Heresy Saintness Mu Lingxi refers to Duanmu Xingling, but he too had no idea which one was her real name.

When he saw the introduction of Di Yi, Zhang Ruochen stopped again.

“Why’s the evaluation of Di Yi is ‘Heartless Saint Being’?”

Zhang Ruochen clearly remembered that Di Yi was a Saintly Being of five elements, and he also had a Heart of Flame Demon.

Of course, that Demon’s Heart had been dug out by Zhang Ruochen and was swallowed by the rabbit Guoguo.

Since Saint Lady dared to write this on the front page of the Eastern Region Report

, she must've been certain about it.

As a result, after losing his heart, Di Yi still did not die. Instead, he became a Heartless Saint Being.

“Heartless Saint Being represents an immortal. It seems that Di Yi may become even more terrifying in the future.”

After learning this news, Zhang Ruochen did not have a trace of fear in his heart. Since he already beat Di Yi once, he could do it for the second time.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen had a lot of pressure at the same time. In the future, he must work harder to cultivate to stay ahead. If he slacked even a little bit, he may be overtaken by others.

Among the six new generation kings, Luoshui Han, Diyi, Mu Lingxi, and Gai Hao were all Saintly Beings. Only Zhang Ruochen and Bu Qianfan were not.

However, in the writing of Saint Lady, except for Bu Qianfan, the four Saintly Beings did not seem to reach the Ultimate Realm in the Yellow Realm.

At the same time, the Saint Lady also boldly speculated that Zhang Ruochen was likely to reach the Ultimate Realm twice.

The reason was that Zhang Ruochen's physical quality was weak three years ago, and there was a large difference between him and ordinary people, not mention to the Saintly Being.

Only if he reached the Ultimate Realm twice could he close the gap between him and the Saintly Beings.

This is the same with Bu Qianfan, it was his Ultimate Realm that made up the gap with the Saintly Being. If not, non-Holy ones could never be opponents of the Saintly Beings.

Of course, those were the speculation of the Saint Lady and could not be confirmed. Therefore, they did not cause much sensation.

At the same time, the Saint Lady also made an analysis on the four Saintly Beings. The reason why the four Saintly Beings did not reach the Ultimate Realm was probably because the Saintly Being itself had incredible physical quality and was

suppressed by the heavenly way. So the difficulty of practicing to the Ultimate Realm was much greater than the non-Saintly Being.

Since ancient time, there had been an analysis of the Saintly Being and the Ultimate Realm. Many Saints had spent their entire life on studying and practicing, but ended up just wasting their time.

At the end of the article, the Saint Lady predicted that with the birth of the six new generations of kings, a great era of opportunities would come. In the future, not only would there be fierce collisions between geniuses, but also fierce confrontation between Saints.

Previously, in the Eastern Region, if a certain generation could produce a Saintly Being, it would have been able to lead a golden age.

After the sanctification of the Saintly Being, it represented the invincible fighting strength.

However, geniuses were emerging left and right. The last generation was born with four Saintly Beings and this generation produced six young kings, which indeed gave people a feeling that martial arts were in vogue.

After seeing

Eastern Region Report

, Zhang Ruochen also admired the Saint Lady. She was indeed very talented and knew many secrets that ordinary people did not know.

Some of these secrets could not be explored with information networks, and they needed to be deduced with human wisdom.

Perhaps, she really could calculate the major events in the world.

“It is no wonder that the

Eastern Region Report

has caused such a scene that everyone wants to challenge me. Conquering the six young kings of the new generation is the

fastest way to become famous.”

“The

Eastern Region Report

must have passed through the Vessel Spirit of Earth Board and spread all over the Eastern Region, and Zhang Ruochen has become a target for many young fighters.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and put away the

Eastern Region Report

.

Returning to the Courier Station of Martial Market, Zhang Ruochen continued to absorb the Divine Dragon Strength of Dragon Pearl and worked hard to enhance his cultivation.

On the second day, Zhang Ruochen, Duanmu Xingling, Si Xingkong, and Chang Qiqi left the Courier Station of Martial Market and went to the Saint Academy together to participate in the upcoming third round of assessment.

All the students who passed the first two rounds of examinations arrived one after another, and there were more than 35,000 people gathered in the martial-arts arena below the Stairway to Heaven.

According to different departments, students stood in different teams and were ready to travel to the Five Elements Primitive World.

Of course, before that, they must first go to the camp of the Battlefield of Primitive World— Chaotic Millionverse Mountain.

Only there could they find a passage into the Five Elements Primitive World.

—

Chapter 403 - Space Moving

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Those participating in the third round of examinations took the Silvery Moon Ships and flew out of the East Region Saint City to a patch of empty desert.

The ships stopped there.

The ten ships carried over 3,000 students each. The banner of the School of Martial Market was hung at the top of each mast.

A huge array sat at the bottom of the ship. The silver inscriptions flowed out from the center of the array and slowly rotated to form an egg-shaped light screen, shielding the ship.

Looking up from the ground, it was like 10 round silver moons hanging in the vault of heaven.

In the Sword Technique Department of the Silver Moon Ship, a sallow and lean student glanced down and overlooked the endless desert. With some confusion, he asked, "Aren't we going to the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain? Why are we stopping here?"

Laughter rang out beside him.

One of the genius students of the Saint Shen Gentry looked at him like he was an idiot and laughed mockingly. "Bumpkin, where did you think the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain is? It's the main camp of the Battlefield of Primitive World! It's not even in Kunlun's Field. Rather, it's in the mysterious illusory space. If we don't through a wormhole and Space Jump, it's impossible to get there."

The sallow and lean student didn't mind his sarcasm and still asked modestly, "What's a wormhole? Space Jump? How can

we arrive at the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain?”

“Idiot.”

The genius student from the Saint Shen Gentry held his sword with both hands and turned his head to the side. He wore a very proud expression and didn't continue to explain.

Standing next to the sallow student, Zhang Ruochen chimed in, “The so-called wormhole is a naturally formed space hole. It connects Kunlun's Field and the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain.”

“There are many wormholes in the Eastern Region. Some are connected to the Central Region, some to the Western, Southern, and Northern Regions. Some are connected to mysterious Primitive Worlds. These are just the dozen or so wormholes that have been found and they are spread everywhere.”

“For example, the Eastern and Central Regions are countless kilometers apart. Without wormholes, it'd take 10 years of running without stopping at the speed of the Heaven Realm but they may still not reach the Central Region. With wormholes and Space Jump, it'd just take them a short moment.

“The wormhole leading to the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain is right where we are now.

“This wormhole has long been under the control of the Ministry of War of the imperial court. Furthermore, there are Saints from the Ministry of War who have laid down defensive arrays around the boundary and it is guarded by the army. A normal warrior needs to save enough Spiritual Crystals to be able to go through the wormhole toward the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain.”

The genius student of the Saint Shen Gentry was angered, feeling that speaker was speaking too much.

But once he turned around and saw the speaker was Zhang Ruochen, his anger immediately disappeared.

He had seen Zhang Ruochen at the Stairway to Heaven so he naturally knew how powerful the latter was. Though his gentry

had a resounding reputation, it couldn't subdue Zhang Ruochen, one of the Six Great Kings of the new generation.

He thought it was best to keep his distance from Zhang Ruochen.

The genius student immediately retreated far away.

The sallow student raised his hands in gratitude and professed his thanks. "I'm Wu Zhiyao of the Linkong Commandery. Many thanks for your teachings. How should I address you?"

"I'm Zhang Ruochen from the Yunwu Commandery." Zhang Ruochen smiled.

"Brother Zhang... Wait, you're Zhang Ruochen, the Commandery Prince?"

Wu Zhiyao gave a loud cry and stared at him wide-eyed.

He was so shocked that he didn't even lower his voice.

Nearly all of the students on the ship heard him yell.

Countless pairs of eyes turned toward Zhang Ruochen.

The shock was especially apparent in the students who had been standing close to Zhang Ruochen, like Wu Zhiyao. They didn't expect the famous Zhang Ruochen to be on the same ship as them.

Zhang Ruochen had become famous overnight after the publication of the

Eastern Region Report.

He became the benchmark for countless young warriors and an Adonis for countless young girls.

Wu Zhiyao, in particular, had made Zhang Ruochen his idol after reading the report and his goal to work toward.

Unexpectedly, he was actually standing so close to his idol. His idol even gave him guidance!

How exciting!

Fortunately, right at this time, the Silver Moon Ships began moving again and flew toward the wormhole.

Just as they were about to proceed with a Space Jump, all of the genius students suppressed the excitement in their hearts. They closed their eyes and mobilized all of the Genuine Qi in their bodies to form a Celestial Bodyshield.

When passing through wormholes, they still had to endure an enormous space pressure even with the defensive cover of the ship.

It was best to use the Celestial Bodyshield to prevent injury.

Zhang Ruochen was the only one who didn't trigger his Celestial Bodyshield. Instead, he released his Spiritual Power and prepared to sense the power of space.

“When passing through a wormhole, the fluctuation of space are extremely intense. I can use this opportunity to perceive the power of space.”

He thought.

BOOM!

The ship shook violently the moment they entered the wormhole.

An enormous amount of pressure surged in from all sides and exerted itself on the students.

The students were masters in the Heaven Realm. Coupled with the protection of the Celestial Bodyshield, the pressure didn't greatly affect them.

Zhang Ruochen used only his body to defend against the pressure of Power of Space.

In a flash, all of the pores in his body shrunk violently.

His Spiritual Power seemed to have become light streaks. He released them outward and they followed the ship through layers of space.

Through his Spiritual Power, he could clearly sense that the ship crossed a distance of tens of thousands of miles of space in every moment.

In an instant, he came to understand the true essence of Space Moving.

He immediately mobilized his space power and executed, for the first time, Space Moving.

SWOOSH!

In a flash, his body disappeared and then reappeared about 33 meters away. He stood beside a female student with long golden hair and pale skin.

The student still had her eyes closed, defending against the Power of Space. She didn't notice him at all.

“What a magical power, not any fluctuation of Genuine Qi.”

If there was Genuine Qi fluctuation, that student would certainly have noticed.

Zhang Ruochen unconsciously clenched his hands, his heart beating wildly. He was extremely happy. He had finally successfully executed Space Moving. Now, he had one more lifesaving unique technique.

Space Moving wasn't a matter of speed.

No matter how quickly if one wanted to cross 33 meters of space, it would still take time.

But he crossed 33 meters of space in almost no time at all. Even a Half-Saint couldn't be faster than him.

SWISH!

SWISH!

...

Zhang Ruochen tested it 13 times in a row in differing positions, leaving behind a number of human shadows. It was like there were 13 of him standing on the deck of the ship.

12 shadows gradually disappeared, leaving just one Zhang Ruochen.

He returned to his original position and stood there.

“Given my current cultivation, I can cross about 56 meters at most each time. Even if a Monk of the Ninth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm wanted to kill me, probably won't be easy for him.”

He thought.

Though he had mastered Space Moving, it didn't mean that he was invincible.

Each time, he could only move a distance of about 33 meters. He then had to stop and spend some time to execute Space Moving for the second time.

A Half-Saint would be able to kill him the moment he stopped. He wouldn't even have the chance to use Space Moving a second time.

Of course, that was a Half-Saint.

It was enough for him easily escape a Monk of the Fish-dragon Realm using Space Moving. Only a superior of the Fish-dragon Realm would be able to hold him.

“With Space Moving, it should be enough to move unhindered through the Inferior Primitive World if I'm careful. There shouldn't be any power that can threaten me.”

His mood was excellent.

BOOM!

Just then, the ship once again shook violently.

They were about to pass through the wormhole.

BAM!

A streak of eye-piercing white light radiated out, piercing Zhang Ruochen's eyes. He temporarily lost his sight in that instant.

In the next moment, the ship entered a pitch black and icy cold illusory space.

Zhang Ruochen gazed into the distance and only saw an enormous mountain ridge hovering in the darkness. It was about 500 kilometers long.

The mountain ridge was made of strong rock, crisscrossed like canine teeth. Forests lined the peaks, appearing impressive and majestic.

It was like an enormous mountain-shaped meteorite, forever hovering in space.

It was the first time for many students on the ship to visit the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain. They were shocked speechless at the scenery before them.

As the ship flew closer and closer, they could faintly see the densely packed army camps built on the 500-kilometer-long mountain ridge.

Some warships flew out from the mountain ridge and went through the Primitive World passage. It took a boatload of human warriors to the Battlefield of Primitive World.

Warships were flying out at the same time, carrying bloody sergeants to the army camp on the mountain to recover.

This was a splendid sight. Every day, countless young warriors come from all over Kunlun's Field to the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain. They would enter the army camp and head for the battlefield. They would fight to open up land for humankind, open new worlds, and create new human culture.

The students from the School of the Martial Market felt their blood boiling when they saw this scene. They also wanted to enter the battlefield and become a pioneering warrior of humankind.

Raging flames surged in the sallow student, Wu Zhiyao's eyes. "We who train in martial arts should use our power in the Battlefield of Primitive World. We should do our best to kill enemies and open up a wider world for humankind to live in."

"Only the great Empress Chi Yao could have such daring to not only unite the humans of Kunlun's Field but also beat the savage beasts into submission. Furthermore, the expansion of the land of Primitive World. Under her leadership, humankind is sure to be the Dominator of the entire world."

Many students were kneeling with utmost respect on the ground, kowtowing towards the enormous statue of Empress Chi Yao in the Chaotic Millionverse World. They were incomparably respectful and pious.

It was only after Empress Chi Yao had unified Kunlun's Field that Human tribe truly freed their hands to deal with the clans of savage beasts. They suppressed the beasts in all directions and opened the Primitive World. The status and overall power of Human tribe seemed to have reached a Peak.

Previously, the Human tribe of Kunlun's Field was powerful but almost all of them were fighting and killing each other. It was difficult to align their hearts and have them work together to defeat the clans of savage beasts, much less open up land in the Primitive World.

In the eyes of these students, Empress Chi Yao was far more divine than the great emperor. It was to the extent that they considered her to be the true Peerless Saint Emperor.

Chapter 404 - The Heaven Board

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

An 874-meter-tall stone figure of a beautiful woman in an imperial robe stood atop the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain. The figure had one of her hands resting on the hilt of a huge sword, her eyes gazing at the infinite sky.

Though it was only a statue of Empress Chi Yao, people felt that the stone figure seemed to contain some kind of soul. Warriors passing the stone figure couldn't help feeling fearful.

So it was no surprise that when the students of the School of the Martial Market arrived at the mountain, they immediately kowtowed at the stone figure as if worshipping a god.

Zhang Ruochen stared at that stone figure. When he met the eyes of the stone figure, he felt shocked as if a person had seen through him at a glance.

He felt as if he could hide no secrets.

“How incredible. It's terrifying just to see a stone figure of her. I wonder what realm Chi Yao's cultivation has reached after 800 years?”

One could build a personal Divine Temple after achieving the status of Half-Saint and worship stone body, mud body, and golden body.

The Half-Saint will automatically leave a trace of the Divine Soul in the temple and absorb the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi around it.

Since Chi Yao had placed her stone figure here, she must have left a trace of her Divine Soul to absorb the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi in Chaotic Millionverse Mountain.

She could use the Divine Soul to secretly keep an eye on the Primitive Worlds at the same time.

She would find out the instant anything major happened in any of the Primitive Worlds.

Her stone figure wore a crown, with a golden Wheel Disc in the center.

The center of the Wheel Disc was emanating a red light. It was as if a ball of fire was burning inside.

Zhang Ruochen felt great spatial fluctuations coming from the Wheel Disc.

The world seemed to rotate slowly alongside the Wheel Disc.

“That’s... the Space Treasure of the legends, the Holy Wheel Seal.”

There were only a handful of space treasures that had been preserved in Kunlun’s Field. Each one was an incredible Holy Weapon.

The Holy Wheel Seal was one of them.

The mountain was apparently supported by the space power of the Holy Wheel Seal.

Furthermore, the seal was also the reason for the passages in the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain that led to each of the major Primitive Worlds.

The seal was a true Space Treasure. The power it had could assimilate as well as destroy a Small World.

The Spatial Ring that Zhang Ruochen made could only be considered the most basic and lowest-level of Space Treasures. It couldn’t be compared to the Holy Wheel Seal at all.

The seal was refined by Saint Monk Xumi. According to the records of

The Mystery of Time and Space,

the seal also has its own internal space. Only a warrior who cultivated space-time power could open the internal space.

The ratio of the internal space of the seal to the outside world was 30 to 1.

If one were to practice in the internal space of the seal for a month, only one day would have passed in the external world.

Zhang Ruochen, of course, was interested in getting the seal. Only he could use the true power of the seal.

However, he also knew that he had no chance of getting close to the seal just relying on his current strength. He could only make a plan after working hard to raise his cultivation.

The ships stopped after entering the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain.

More than 35,000 students got off the ships and stood under a giant monument.

The giant monument, 676 meters tall, was a milky white color. It was like an inscription carved out of a giant piece of jade stone.

It was another incredible Holy Weapon.

There was no need for the Half-Saint of the School of the Martial Market to introduce it. Everyone had already seen the stone table on the top with two large words carved on it, "Heaven Board".

This piece of Jade Tablet was the Heaven Board.

The Jade Tablet listed the names of every warrior in the Heaven Realm, with numbers behind the names.

Huang Shenyi was in the first place on the Heaven Board.

Behind his name was a series of figures, 6,786,000 military merits.

Hua Li was in the second place.

Behind his name was also a series of figures, 2,463,401 military merits.

Some of the students were doubtful, “How could military merits appear on the Heaven Board?”

SWOOSH!

Just then, a white light descended from heaven.

The white light dissipated, leaving a white-haired, Beard Elder in a purple robe in its place. He stood on a patch of white clouds and hovered in the air. Spiritual Qi emanated from his body.

The white-haired elder’s voice was powerful and traveled clearly to the ears of every student present. “I’m the Vessel Spirit of the Heaven Board. Now, the Jade Tablet before you is the true body of the Heaven Board. Over the next month, you’ll pass the third round of the examination as long as you accumulate 100 military merits.”

The Vessel Spirit had just finished talking when the students began discussing among themselves in whispers.

“The third round of the examination is so simple. Do we even need a month to collect a mere 100 military merits?”

“It’s only 100 military merits! Isn’t this too easy?”

...

The Vessel Spirit waved his hand, forming strands of white light haze in front of him. The white mist converged to form rows of text.

It was an introduction to the military merits.

The first line read, “Kill 10 indigens of Primitive World at the Completion of the Earth Realm or one at the Initial Stage in the Heaven Realm to gain 1 military merit point.”

When they saw the first line, the students who had thought the third round would be simple suddenly stopped smiling. Some even held their breath as they began making calculations.

If they wanted to accumulate 100 military merits, didn’t that mean they had to kill 1,000 indigens of Primitive World at the Completion of the Earth Realm, or 100 at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm?

That was too difficult!

The second line read, “Kill an indigen of Primitive World at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm to gain the two military merits.”

The second line read, “Kill an indigen of Primitive World at the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm to gain the five military merits.”

The fourth line read, “Kill an indigen of Primitive World at the Dawn State in the Heaven Realm to gain 10 military merits.”

The fifth line read, “Kill an indigen of Primitive World at the Medium State in the Heaven Realm to gain 20 military merits.”

The sixth line read, “Kill an indigen of Primitive World at the Final State in the Heaven Realm to gain 50 military merits.”

The seventh line read, “Kill an indigen of Primitive World at the Completion of the Heaven Realm to gain 100 military merits.”

The students finally let out a small breath after reading the first seven lines.

One could accumulate 100 military merits in one go by killing an indigen of Primitive World at the Completion of the Heaven Realm.

Otherwise, one month wouldn't be enough if one were to kill indigens of Primitive World at the Completion of the Earth Realm or at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Of course, it wasn't very difficult for students in the higher realms. They could easily complete the third round as long as they could survive in the Primitive World for a month.

However, the students in lower realms were wearing grave expressions. They felt a tremendous pressure. They could accumulate enough military merits only if they continuously work hard in killing the indigens.

The Vessel Spirit smiled. “You may ask me if you have any questions.”

A plump student bowed at the Vessel Spirit and asked in a clear voice, “Your Excellency, how many merits do we need to be able to leave our names on the Heaven Board?”

“10,000 merits.”

The students were shocked to hear the number.

Indeed, it wasn't easy to become a warrior on the Heaven Board. Given their current power, it would still be difficult to accumulate 10,000 military merits even if they spend a long time killing enemies in the Battlefield of Primitive World.

They had a greater possibility of dying there.

Zhang Ruochen asked in a clear voice, “It's said that if we accumulate a certain amount of points, we can attract the Chord of Gods and reach the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm. How many merits do we need for that?”

The Vessel Spirit nodded. “The true body of the Heaven Board is actually a huge altar, where the killed indigens will become oblations to the gods. As long as enough indigens die, one could indeed communicate with the gods and invite the Chord of Guards to receive blessing and reach the legendary Ultimate Realm.”

“Since it's the the Ultimate Realm, naturally not everyone will be able to do it. It's difficult beyond your imagination. You'll need 30 million military merits to be able to reach the Ultimate Realm.”

“In the past 500 years, only five people among Heaven Realm warriors managed to accumulate 10 million military merits. They were basically rare talents that appear only once in a century.”

“There are only 18 people who have accumulated one million military merits on the Heaven Board right now.”

“No matter how you put it, it's almost impossible to accumulate 30 million military merits.”

Zhang Ruochen gently nodded. It was indeed much more difficult to reach the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm now compared to 800 years ago.

800 years ago, only 20 million merits were needed.

However, the current environment of the Battlefield of Primitive World was much better than before.

It was reasonable that the Heaven Board would raise the level of difficulty for warriors to reach the realm.

The Vessel Spirit also answered questions from other students. When he was done answering, he continued, “You need to put a drop of blood on the true body of the Heaven Board before entering the Five Elements Primitive World. Through the power of the blood, I can see your every battle outcome in the Primitive World and record your military merits in the Heaven Board.”

The students passed by the tablet in order. They cut their fingers and left a drop of blood on the tablet. They were then sent to the third location of the examination by the Vessel Spirit.

Zhang Ruochen frowned when it was his turn and hesitated. In the end, he opened his palm and produced a small Genuine Qi sword.

He gently swung his arm and allowed the sword to slice open his index finger. He let a drop of blood fall on the Jade Tablet.

SWOOSH!

A white light flashed.

The blood sank in the Jade Tablet and disappeared.

Chapter 405 - Indigenous Savage Beasts and Humans

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Jade Tablet absorbed Zhang Ruochen's drop of blood. From now on, his actions in the Primitive World would be under the monitoring of the Heaven Board.

It wasn't a big deal.

It was true that Zhang Ruochen was hiding some of his power, but in the eyes of the Vessel Spirit of the Heaven Board, he was like an ant having the power of a cockroach.

Whether he was an ant or a cockroach, the Vessel Spirit could easily crush him to death. Therefore, the latter couldn't be bothered even if he used his hidden power.

Besides, the Vessel Spirit's main purpose was calculating the warriors' military merits. It didn't have the energy to peek at the secret of a mere student in the Heaven Realm.

A deep voice came from behind him.

"Zhang Ruochen, the Five Elements Primitive World will become your burial ground."

Zhang Ruochen turned and looked in the direction of the voice. He happened to see Xu Qing's cold smile.

"Judging from your power, I suspect there's still some distance for you to catch up to." Zhang Ruochen said.

Standing 10 steps away from him, Xue Qing smiled. "Is that so? Didn't you know that I've already entered the Medium State of the Heaven Realm? Zhang Ruochen, your good days are ending."

Xu Qing was at the Peak of the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm in the first place. After Zhang Ruochen defeated him at the Stairway to Heaven, he didn't sink into depression. Instead, he broke free of the shackles of his realm and advanced his martial cultivation.

“In the Five Elements Primitive World, I won't just kill you personally! I'll also capture your fiancée, Huang Yanchen, and make her my woman. Haw-haw!”

Xu Qing's confidence had grown greatly after achieving a breakthrough in his realm. He revealed a playful gaze as if he was purposely provoking Zhang Ruochen.

What Six Great Kings of the new generation? They were just a group of kids. In front of him, they were useless.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed and glinted with a cold, sharp light. “If you want to die, I'll fulfill your wish.”

THUD!

The power of the Heaven Board acted on Zhang Ruochen's body.

Just as he felt his body become lighter, he had already left the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain and entered the passage heading toward the Five Elements Primitive World.

The voice of the Vessel Spirit of the Heaven Board suddenly rang in his head. “There's one more thing I need to tell all of you. In the Five Elements Primitive World, there are five types of precious Spirit Treasures that can raise your cultivation. They're Golden Ganoderma Lucidum, Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, Black Glazed Spinel, Source of Spiritual Fire, and Bloody Saint-cultivating Soil.”

“Even Half-Saints would fight for these treasures. If you can find any one of them, you can save 10 years of hard practice. Of course, the treasures won't be so easy to find. There are great dangers ahead and I hope you'll act according to your abilities.”

After the voice of the Vessel Spirit disappeared, Zhang Ruochen felt the world spinning around him as if he had fallen into an abyss.

Shortly after, a curtain of light appeared in front of his eyes. He jumped and passed through it.

BOOM!

He was dropped mid-air, falling about half a dozen meters to the ground. He instantly steadied his center of gravity and landed firmly.

He found himself at the halfway point up the mountain. There wasn't anyone around him. Towering trees grew not too far away from he was, with vines as thick as bowls. They grew out of the ground and wrapped themselves around the tree, reaching for the sky.

“PFT!”

He took a deep breath. He felt a breath of fresh air entering his body, carrying with it the faint scent of vegetation.

“The concentration of the Spiritual Qi here is probably one-tenth that of Kunlun's Field. It's pretty thin, so creatures of the Half-Saint class shouldn't be able to grow here.”

It was possible to make a rough estimation of the limit of cultivation that creatures in a world would be able to reach based on its Spiritual Qi concentration.

The Five Elements Primitive World was only an Inferior Primitive World. In general, the most powerful creatures were only at the level of the Fish-dragon Realm. The probability of a Half-Saint being here was very low.

Of course, these worlds had been around for a very long time and had spawned many geniuses. Some of these geniuses were able to reach a high realm.

Zhang Ruochen's location seemed to be an ancient forest. Though it wasn't comparable to the ancient forests in Kunlun's Field, it still held many dangers. He had to proceed with caution.

“Let's look for the five kinds of Spirit Treasure first.”

He wasn't in a hurry to complete the examination. Getting 100 military merits wasn't difficult for him.

What was more important was finding treasures and improving his cultivation.

He mobilized his Spiritual Power and activated the Skyeye between his mid-brows to investigate his surroundings.

In just a moment, he discovered something.

In the northeast, 30 kilometers away, there was an aura of a fourth level savage beast.

Where there were savage beasts, there must be treasures.

With a swoosh, he executed his bodily movement and charged in that direction.

With his speed exceeding the speed velocity, he soon arrived at the forest where the lair of the fourth level savage beast was located.

The indigen of Primitive World didn't necessarily refer to people in the Primitive World.

Savage beasts were also classified as such.

He smelled the strong stench of blood just as he entered the forest. There were piles of white bones on the ground.

“AWOO!”

Feeling a superior entering its territory, the savage beast let out a ground-shaking roar and aggressively charged out of its cave.

This fourth level medium level savage beast was a Nine-teeth Winged Tiger.

The beast was four meters tall and seven meters long. Its overall strength was comparable to a warrior in the Medium State of the Heaven Realm. It was the king of this area.

It flapped its wings and immediately created a giant gale. With a swishing sound, 17 streaks of wind blade flew out of the gale and sliced Zhang Ruochen.

“To encounter such a powerful savage beast as soon as I arrive, it looks like the overall strength of the indigens here is

still pretty high. No wonder this is selected as the venue for the third round of the examination.”

He unleashed his Celestial Bodyshield and easily blocked the wind blades.

The beast was a highly intelligent creature. When it saw that Zhang Ruochen was too powerful to overcome, it immediately turned and fled inside the deep forest.

“You want to run?”

“Tranquility Pulse Sword Wave.”

Zhang Ruochen pointed with his right thumb and fired a cold Sword Wave at the savage beast.

BAM!

The body of the savage beast was split into pieces of flesh and blood. Blood splattered the scene as it died on the spot.

Zhang Ruochen entered the savage beast’s cave and found some medicine and fruit. They were all nearly one or two hundred years old and could only be considered low-level Spiritual Doses.

Putting the Spiritual Doses away, he picked up a blue spiritual fruit and took a bite. He began to analyze it and said to himself, “Though I see none of the treasures that the Vessel Spirit speak of, there are still things to be gained. I’ve earned at least 20 military merits.”

“When the Nine-teeth Winged Tiger found out that it wasn’t a match for me it rushed directly into the depths of the jungle. Could there stronger beasts in the jungle capable of protecting it?”

His interest was immediately piqued. In any case, given his current power, he had the power to escape even if he meets a fifth level savage beast. Why not have a look in the jungle?

Finishing the spiritual fruit in two bites, he immediately headed toward the depths of the jungle with his Violet Thunder Sword.

Though the Five Elements Primitive World was only an Inferior Primitive World, it was very spacious.

Zhang Ruochen probably walked 300 kilometers before reaching the depths of the ancient forest. The surrounding peaks became even taller, the trees became thicker, and the ground was covered with thick layers of fallen leaves.

On the way, he also killed four other savage beasts. Three were low-level fourth level beasts while one was a medium level fourth level beast. He obtained 22 military merits.

Zhang Ruochen now had 42 military merits.

With an advanced cultivation, one could easily pass the third round of the Saint Academy's examination.

Of course, there was another condition.

Not only did they have to accumulate 100 military merits, they must also survive in this world for a month.

Many evidently had the power to obtain the necessary military merits but died at the hands of the indigens. It was a common occurrence.

Thus, no matter how powerful you were, you had to be careful to be able to pass the examination.

For example, Zhang Ruochen was doing something very dangerous at the moment. He was actually running right into the depths of the Demonic Ape Ridge. Other students certainly wouldn't do something this stupid.

The Demonic Ape Ridge could be considered as one of the most dangerous places in this world.

Zhang Ruochen once again activated his Skyeye and found a deep valley filled with miasma.

There were unusually strong fluctuations in the valley. Even with his current cultivation, he could tell it was slightly dangerous.

“Interesting.”

Zhang Ruochen was talented and daring. He didn't pull in his aura and walked straight into the deep valley.

SWOOSH! SWOOSH!

Two human shadows flashed past him at the mouth of the alley.

One of them wore a yellow robe while the other wore a blue robe.

They wore metal masks on their faces.

The yellow-robed man was holding a crystal wand in his hand. In a deep voice, he asked, "Who goes there? Don't you know this is the practice place for Master Longze?"

"It's the indigenous Monks of the Five Elements Primitive World!"

Zhang Ruochen frowned. He thought he would run into powerful fifth level savage beasts in the forest. He didn't expect to encounter indigens so quickly.

He knew nothing about this world, so it was a good time to learn some information from them.

He guessed that they weren't aware of the huge group of foreign masters in this world.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen didn't answer, the yellow-robed man scolded him. "Kid, if you don't leave, don't blame me for being rude!"

He lifted the crystal wand.

A cluster of yellow brilliance emerged from the spherical spinel at the top of the Holy Staff and formed a great wave of power.

The rules of this world weren't the same and their practice methods seemed different from that of Kunlun's Field as well.

Even the language wasn't the same but his Spiritual Power had reached the fortieth level. Thus, he could easily understand and learn any language.

Only people whose Spiritual Power had reached the fortieth level had this ability.

Zhang Ruochen finally opened his mouth. “Who are you? And what kind of person is Master Longze? If you honestly answer my questions, I’ll let you live on the simple fact that we’re all humans.”

Chapter 406 - Master Longze

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“If you answer my questions honestly, I’ll let you live for the simple fact that we’re all humans.”

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t trying to trick the indigens of the Primitive World. He truly intended to let them live.

Why was it that only killing indigens above the Completion of the Earth Realm could be counted toward the military merits?

It was because Empress Chi Yao’s wish wasn’t to have the indigens massacred. She only wanted to control the large Primitive Worlds.

He himself was against genocide. He considered it the best situation if he could reduce the number of killings that he had to do.

If they could kill the top masters in the Primitive World, the First Central Empire could easily control this world and its indigens to build a new culture.

Thus, if the indigens were willing to go with the flow, unnecessary killings could be avoided.

This was, of course, impossible. No one wanted to be dominated by people from a different world. They would certainly fight back and began a battle that would see blood flow like rivers just to see who was stronger.

In reality, the indigens referred to the warriors from Kunlun’s Field as the “Extraterritorial demons”. It was impossible for them to submit to Kunlun’s Field.

The Five Elements Primitive World was newly discovered Primitive World. The indigens here had yet to learn other

worlds and they didn't know that Zhang Ruochen came from another world.

“Haha!”

Hearing Zhang Ruochen's words, the two indigens laughed out loud like they had heard the best joke.

They were both Master Longze's disciples. In the Five Elements Continent, there had only been people who were terrified of them. This was the first time that someone had said they would let them live.

Had they not seen that Zhang Ruochen was able to enter the Demonic Ape Ridge alone and seemed to have some true ability, they would've wondered if he was insane.

“Child, perhaps you truly don't know our identities. Do you know where you are? Who you're talking to?” The blue-robed man said.

“No. That's why I was just about to ask you,” Zhang Ruochen replied seriously.

“Then I'll tell you now. You're currently at the Demonic Ape Ridge that stands right beside the edge of the Fine Gold Federation. The master of the ridge is Master Longze. We're both his disciples. Even the nobility of the Fine Gold Federation wouldn't dare be so impudent as you did when they see us.” The blue-robed man said proudly.

It was indeed a source of pride to be able to become Master Longze's disciple.

Zhang Ruochen nodded, wearing a thoughtful expression.

“How many factions are there in the Five Elements Primitive World? How big are they, roughly? How big is their territory?”

The yellow-robed man finally realized that Zhang Ruochen had been using a condescending tone to speak to them. What madness!

He smiled coldly. “Kid, do you really think you're a big shot? I want to see just what you're truly capable of.”

“Ground Stone Beast.”

The yellow-robed man drove the strength in his body into his crystal wand. He raised the wand and brought it down ferociously, striking it against the ground.

With a boom, fine cracks appear in the ground.

Pieces of stone flew out from the cracks in the ground, bundling together to form a six-meter-tall behemoth.

Zhang Ruochen watched very carefully. The yellow-robed man had moved a power like Genuine Qi from his body and immersed it into the crystal wand. The power then transformed into another type of Power of Origin, capable of moving the Earth elemental power of the Five Elements Primitive World.

The practice methods here were outdated. They couldn't be compared with the methods of Kunlun's Field at all.

However, the yellow-robed man was strong. His power was even greater than that of a warrior at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm. He was doubtlessly a top master in the Five Elements Primitive World.

BANG!

Kicking with its hooves, the Ground Stone Beast caused an aftershock that shook the ground and rocked the mountain. He began to charge at Zhang Ruochen.

The yellow-robed man revealed a pleasant expression, already seeing the picture of Zhang Ruochen being grounded into a bloody mess in his head. It was a sight worth anticipating.

Zhang Ruochen neither moved nor dodged. He stood where he was.

Just as the beast came within three meters of his position, he struck it with lightning from his right palm. His palm power split the beast into pieces of fist-sized rocks.

He then moved and vanished without waiting for the yellow-robed man to strike again.

“How could this be? Where did he go?”

The yellow-robed man was shocked. He hadn't expected the young man would be so powerful as to crush the Stone Beast

into smithereens with just one palm.

SWISH!

Zhang Ruochen reappeared next to the yellow-robed man.

The yellow-robed man quickly waved his crystal wand, preparing to strike again.

Zhang Ruochen extended his arm and stole the crystal wand. Activating his Spiritual Power, he began to investigate the wand.

The yellow-robed man looked at his empty hands in a daze. Before he had time to react, Zhang Ruochen struck out him in his chest with a palm and sent him flying.

THUD!

The force of Zhang Ruochen's attack broke three of the yellow-robed man's bones and forced him to spit a mouthful of blood. He flew backward and slammed into the cliff in the valley, sending pieces of rock cascading down.

“You dare hurt my junior fellow apprentice! Go to hell!!”

The blue-robed man held his crystal wand with both hands and struck the ground. With the crystal wand as the center, a blue light shot outward in all directions.

“Century-old Thorn Vine.”

With a whoosh, two meter-thick black vines sprouted around him and shot into the sky.

The two vines morphed into two dragons lined with thorns and reached for Zhang Ruochen, trying to twine around him.

“The power of the wood nature.”

He moved his Genuine Qi and converged it in the Meridians in his two hands. He extended his arms and struck with his two little fingers at the same time.

WHOOSH!

The Sword Waves carried with them a powerful sword Qi and sliced the black vines into pieces of wood shavings.

With the crystal wand in one hand, Zhang Ruochen struck with his palm across the air. Genuine Qi converged to form a large handprint that struck against the blue-robed man's chest. It also sent that blue-robed man flying out and caused heavy injuries.

Both men lay on the ground and couldn't rise, the fear in their heart reaching its peak. This was the first time they had met such a powerful adversary besides their Master.

Furthermore, he was still so young. He was already powerful on his own.

How much worse he would be if he used the crystal wand?

"Ah, so the crystal wand is only used to transform power and communicate with the five elements of supernatural power in this world."

Shaking his head, Zhang Ruochen withdrew his Spiritual Power. He lost interest and threw the crystal wand on the ground.

To him, the crystal wand that was considered priceless in the Five Elements Continent couldn't even live up to a seventh level Genuine Martial Arms.

"What power to be able to so easily defeat my two best disciples! Dare I ask where Your Excellency is from?"

An elderly voice rang out from the depths of the valley full of miasma.

Zhang Ruochen placed his hands behind his back and looked in the direction of the deep valley. "You're Master Longze? Why pretend to be so mysterious? Why don't you come out and show yourself?"

"Hoho! Young man, your power is truly strong. It's a pity about your condescending attitude. Today, I'll teach you that there'll always be someone better than you regardless of how strong you are!"

SWOOSH!

A black shadow rose from the ground like a streak of light, landing on top of the cliff to the left of the valley.

It was a black-robed elder. He revealed only a pair of dry hands. They were tanned and full of wrinkles.

He was gripping a crystal wand fastened with a skull in his right hand.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel an enormous cold power seemingly contained within that skull there. It made his skin crawl and he felt a chill.

When Master Longze raised his crystal wand, all of the Spiritual Qi in the air shook violently. That cold power became even more intense.

The wind turned into a gale in the wood in the mountain.

Snowflakes began to fall in the vault of heaven.

Master Longze's voice was hoarse like a devil letting out a long cry. He spat out three words, "Polar-icy Dragon."

He pointed the crystal wand forward.

WHOOSH!

Streaks of cold air converged into a giant, roaring dragon made out of ice crystals. Its head, body, scales, and claws gradually materialized.

Seeing such a shocking scene, the heavily injured disciples crawled up from the ground and knelt. They continuously kowtowed at Master Longze like they were worshipping a god.

With such a powerful force, who was he if not a Deity?

"Master Longze is so powerful. Who dares to compete against him in the Five Elements Continent?"

The two men's worship of their Master had reached an extreme. In their eyes, their Master was synonymous with invincibility.

Master Longze's power was indeed great, far superior to many warriors at the Completion of the Heaven Realm.

However, he had yet to reach the level of Fish-dragon Realm. His overall strength was slightly beneath the weakest warrior

on the Heaven Board.

“Perfect. I’ll use him for some practice.”

Zhang Ruochen decided to not use his Spiritual Power and Martial Soul power for now. He wanted to use this battle to test his strength. Would he be able to measure up against a superior warrior like Master Longze?

“Ten-thousand-feet Prairie Fire.”

Zhang Ruochen sent out the Blue Genuine Qi in his body and immediately drew down a vision of heaven and earth.

The Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi transformed into fire, forming blossoms of blue flames that hovered in the void space.

It was like the three kilometers in the surrounding area had become a smelter. In a flash, it burned the grass and wood to ash. The Ten-thousand-feet Prairie Fire continued to disperse Master Longze’s Icing cold power.

The disciples had long escaped to three kilometers away. They were shaking all over, feeling a great fear in their hearts. They didn’t expect such a young man to wield such terrifying power.

Master Longze appeared surprised. “Are you that rare Genius that the Temple of Holy Fire nurtured?”

There was a rumor that the Temple of Fire had produced an exceptional, once-in-a-millennium genius. The genius had apparently practiced the Sutra of Holy Fire to the seventh level at a very young age.

Master Longze didn’t believe the rumor until he saw Zhang Ruochen. This young man might just be the Genius of the Temple of Fire.

Chapter 407 - Deep Valley Dungeon

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Temple of Holy Fire?”

Zhang Ruochen displayed a look of doubt.

Master Longze muttered coldly, “Do you want to keep hiding? In the Five Elements Continent, apart from the Temple of Holy Fire, can other powers train a man to possess such a strong supernatural power of fire? How ridiculous! Even if you are from the Temple of Holy Fire, you won’t defeat me.”

Master Longze had his own plan in mind. Although he couldn’t afford to offend the Temple of Holy Fire, the Temple couldn’t tyrannize in the Five Elements Continent. After killing this genius of the Temple, he would at worst, join its hostile forces.

Most importantly, since he was the genius of the Temple, he had a lot of great treasures. If he got the treasures from him, maybe his cultivation would reach a higher level and break the limits of mortals.

Master Longze was very excited. He decided he would fight for it no matter what.

“Awoo!”

Under his control, the Ice Crystals Dragon whistled loudly and swooped down. It swiped at Zhang Ruochen with its claws.

With sharp eyes, Zhang Ruochen stood straight and put his right hand behind his back. He extended his left arm and hit the dragon claw with one finger.

“Sun Meridian Ripple!”

The tip of his thumb glowed scarlet.

A bowl-sized sword path flew out and collided with the dragon claw.

“Pow!”

The Sword Breath smashed the Dragon claws turning them to wisps of Ice Crystals.

Master Longze’s supernatural power was strong. Under his control, the Ice Crystals Dragon’s claws soon reunited, and attacked Zhang Ruochen again.

“This guy’s cultivation is really powerful. Only a Polar-icy Dragon can defeat him.”

Master Longze pressed on the top of his skull with a coldness in his eyes. The hollow of his palm emitted a black light. In an instant, 36 large icing cold swords were condensed and arranged into a sword array. It flew at Zhang Ruochen.

“Woosh!”

Zhang Ruochen’s pressure doubled under the attack.

“The indigens in the Five Elements Primitive World practice supernatural power, so they are very adept at battling from a distance. I have to get closer to him in order to regain the upper hand.”

“Twelfefold Force of Elephant Palm.”

Zhang Ruochen displayed the fifth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. He quickly threw his arms and shot out 12 handprints one after the other.

Twelve handprints overlapped and turned into a huge fingerprint, releasing twelve times the power.

“Pow!”

With just one palm, the Polar-icy Dragon was smashed into Ice Crystals.

This kind of palm technique was more advanced than the mid-class of Spiritual Stage. It was a superior-class Spiritual Stage

technique that could be used when one reached the sixth palm. Its power was also better naturally.

The fifth palm could only unleash nine times the attack force. Now it could release 12 times the force.

Zhang Ruochen raced out from the 36 icing cold swords. Arching his body and extending his legs like an arrow, he flew up 100 meters to reach Longze at the top of the cliff.

Master Longze did not think that the young man's physical strength was so strong that he couldn't fight him at close quarters.

He quickly retreated into the deep valley. He waved his Crystal Wand to merge the 36 large icing cold swords into a huge 10-meter sword. He slashed at Zhang Ruochen and tried to prevent him from moving forward.

The huge sword had not yet fallen, yet a strong sword breath had already torn apart the ground under Zhang Ruochen's feet, moving the plates on his right and left.

Zhang Ruochen did not dare to underestimate the power of the sword.

“Out of sheath!”

The Violet Thunder Sword flew out of its sheath and fell into Zhang Ruochen's hands.

He immediately injected Genuine Qi into the blade to activate the 72 Inscriptions of Electricity. With a bang, several thunderbolts flew out of the blade and condensed into an illusory image of a Thunder Vulture.

There was a Bang!

Zhang Ruochen shattered the huge icing cold sword and rushed out again with the Soul-breaking Windwhisper, one of the Thirteen Sword Techniques of Soul Chasing.

It pierced the sky and made a harsh sound that was enough to shatter the soul.

The sword technique had reached the level of Martial Arts Perfection. It was comparable to the inferior-class of Ghost

Level in terms of power.

Master Longze's face sank. He immediately lifted the Crystal Wand to block the attack. A nine-layer defensive light curtain appeared.

“Break!”

Zhang Ruochen growled. The Violet Thunder Sword broke Master Longze's defensive light curtain easily. It was like breaking nine pieces of paper.

“Bang!”

The Crystal Wand collided with the Violet Thunder Sword.

The strong explosive power passed through the combat sword, forcing Master Longze back awkwardly. He kicked into the air, fell off the cliff, and dropped into the deep miasma-filled valley.

“Swoosh!”

Zhang Ruochen displayed the Heart Integrated into Sword and tossed the Violet Thunder Sword down. It turned into a flying sword and hit Master Longze as he crashed toward the earth below.

When the Violet Thunder Sword flew back up, the sword edge was stained with blood.

Zhang Ruochen knew very well that based on his strength, Master Longze was only injured, the strike had not been enough to kill him.

He leapt off the cliff and chased into the deep valley.

Since he had already wounded him, he would take the opportunity to kill him.

If he could kill Master Longze, he would get 100 military merits. He would meet the third round of assessment requirements.

The deep valley was permeated with black miasma, one could not see more than 30 meters into the distance.

Zhang Ruochen used his Skyeye, so he was not affected.

“This valley is Master Longze’s lair; it must be equipped with arrays. I have to be careful. I can’t believe such a strong superior would build a lair in this poisonous fog-filled valley. There must be some reason. Are there treasures in the valley?”

Master Longze was hiding. Zhang Ruochen could barely find a trace of him, even with his Skyeeye.

He had to be careful.

Suddenly, a figure moved quickly in front of him.

The figure disappeared quickly.

Zhang Ruochen found a deep well leading to the underground. There was an array at the entrance.

“Swoosh!”

Swinging his sword, Zhang Ruochen easily broke the array. He jumped into the well.

He went down more than 20 meters before reaching the bottom of the well.

The space at the bottom of the well was very wide. There were stone walls on all sides. There were iron rings and chains on the wall. It appeared to be a dungeon.

One wall had a hole that was locked with an iron gate.

He smashed the iron gate. The sound of women screaming suddenly echoed on the stone walls.

Behind the gate he found more than 10 shabbily dressed women locked up. They were all beautiful. The youngest was only twelve or thirteen years old, she looked very young.

They seemed frightened and immediately curled up in the corner, staring at Zhang Ruochen in fear.

In another corner were two naked corpses. They were covered in blood. It seemed they had not died long ago because the blood was still wet.

“This Master Longze is really horrible!”

Zhang Ruochen left immediately.

Suddenly, the ground shook slightly, and a loud noise came from above.

The entrance to the deep well seemed to be blocked with heavy objects. All the light disappeared, and his surroundings grew dark.

“Swoosh!”

Inscriptions emerged on the stone wall to form a black layer of array light.

The stone walls of the dungeon turned to metal, morphing into iron bastions.

Master Longze’s voice sounded above, raspy and low. He laughed evilly. “Little brat, I have already turned the stone walls of soil nature into black iron walls using the Five Elements Array. Even if you have far-reaching supernatural power, you have no way to escape. Haha, just stay inside and wait for death!”

Zhang Ruochen looked very calm. He hit the wall with a hard blow. An earsplitting metallic noise sounded.

A five-inch deep handprint appeared on the wall.

“What a hard metal wall.”

Zhang Ruochen touched the cold metal wall with a slight smile. “Five elements transform, earth generates metal, metal generates water, water generates wood, wood generates fire, fire generates earth.”

A mere layer of the metal could not hold Zhang Ruochen inside.

The five elements could generate each other, but they could also restrain each other.

Among them, fire restrained gold.

Although Zhang Ruochen looked very calm, the women who had been detained in the dungeon began to panic.

“Swoosh!”

Zhang Ruochen took out a light nature Spiritual Crystal and placed it in his hand.

He injected Genuine Qi into it. The crystal quickly emitted a bright light, illuminating the whole Dungeon.

The women suddenly calmed down. They stared at him, ten pairs of beautiful eyes.

They were very curious about the handsome guy in front of them. Who was he? How could he infuriate Master Longze?

In their eyes, Master Longze was a devil. He was invincible due to his powerful supernatural power. Once, he had even destroyed an entire city with his power.

They had been captured and brought here as slaves. They had to make the greatest efforts to serve him because any mistake could lead to death.

They were extremely afraid of him and didn't believe anyone could compete with him.

Zhang Ruochen stared at them and started thinking. If he used the Power of Fire, the dungeon would have to be refined.

He did not fear the flames with his cultivation. However, most of the women were ordinary people. If he exerted the Power of Fire, they would vanish in an instant.

Other disciples would certainly not let a group of indigens' lives stop them. Their deaths would not affect their hearts of Martial Arts.

However, Zhang Ruochen thought differently. If the women burned in front of him, his Martial Arts heart would surely be knotted. It could lead to a stagnation of cultivation in the future.

“Master Longze might have thought of this when he led me to the dungeon.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned.

“There must be another way.”

Everyone had weaknesses, Zhang Ruochen was no exception.

Zhang Ruochen's Martial Arts were almost perfect and flawless. However, he was not cruel and merciless. Such a man would often be get caught and fall into a passive position.

Chapter 408 - The Black Glazed Spinel

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

A group of women who were trapped in the dungeon curled up in a corner. Among them, a young girl who was neatly dressed stood up cautiously and walked towards Zhang Ruochen.

She was still slightly scared and said in a low voice, “You... are not Master Longze’s disciple, right?”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at her. She was about 15 or 16 years old. She had fair white skin and a beautiful appearance. Among these women, she was definitely the most gorgeous one.

Moreover, from her clothes which were made of superior class materials, one could tell that she should be a daughter of a nobility.

The more important thing was that there was a slight of supernatural power fluctuating around her, which meant that she was not an ordinary person.

Zhang Ruochen said, “No, I’m not.”

The young woman immediately felt relieved and said, “I’m the daughter of the city governor of Snowleaf City, Fine Gold Federation, Xue Yiyi. I’m captured by Master Daye who is the eldest disciple of Master Longze. He took me here to the Demonic Ape Ridge. Please spare us your strength and help us get out of here.”

Xue Yiyi could tell that Zhang Ruochen was very powerful.

Although he was trapped in the dungeon, he could still remain calm. Such a person was definitely not ordinary.

Xue Yiyi did not believe that Zhang Ruochen had the power to defeat Master Longze though.

It was impossible for her to escape with her power. There was always a glimmer of hope for her to get out of here with a master by her side.

She would rather slam her head on the wall and die than stay in the dungeon and serve the old and ugly Master Longze. She would be at least be less abused by doing that.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the young girl named Xue Yiyi and thought for a moment. He said, "Since you are the daughter of the city governor, you should be more knowledgeable about things around here! As long as you answer some of my questions, I will promise to get you out of here."

After that, Zhang Ruochen asked Xue Yiyi carefully for some information about the Five Elements Primitive World.

After an-hour discussion, Zhang Ruochen had a general idea of Five Elements Primitive World.

The Five Elements Primitive World was a land suspended in the void space. The sky was round and the earth was square and flat. There were no countries but only city states and alliances.

There were 10 alliances in total, and the Fine Gold Federation was one of them.

The Fine Gold Federation was composed of 12 cities. They formed alliances and conducted business with each other. At the same time, they had set up an army to resist attacks from the savage beasts.

Except for the three major federations, there were three Holy Temples and two Evil Palaces in the Five Elements Primitive World. They were respectively the Temple of Holy Fire, the Temple of Holy Water Hall, the Temple of Holy Earth, the Evil Golden Palace, and the Evil Wooden Palace.

One of the five Spirit Treasures mentioned in the Vessel Spirit of Heaven Board was called the Source of Spiritual Fire, which was a scared object of the Temple of Holy Fire.

Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood was the treasure of the Evil Wood Palace.

As for the other three Spirit Treasures, Xue Yiyi had only heard of the name and did not know where they were kept.

“The Heaven Board is really good at giving out tough tasks. The Source of Spiritual Fire and the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood are placed in the Holy Temple and the Evil Palace. It would be extremely difficult to get. It is probably the same for the other three Spirit Treasures.”

Zhang Ruochen was very confident in his own strength, but he was not arrogant. He knew that it was still impossible for him to challenge the strongest forces in the Inferior Primitive World alone.

It was said that the Master of the Hall of the Temple of Holy Fire was known as the strongest master of the Five Elements Primitive World.

According to Xue Yiyi’s description, Zhang Ruochen guessed roughly that the strength of the Holy Fire Lord was comparable to that of the superior in the Fourth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, and he may even be stronger.

Moreover, the three Holy Temples did have a few Half-Saints before. Although the Half-Saints were dead, they certainly left behind some powerful tactics. The warriors in the Heaven Realm who dared to go there would only end up dead.

According to the Vessel Spirit of Heaven Board, even the Half-Saints would fight for the five Spirit Treasures if they came across them because those treasures could save them ten years of efforts of cultivation. If I get one of them, maybe I can reach the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm, or even the Medium State of the Heaven Realm in a short time. Even if it is dangerous, I must try.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes gradually became firm and he made up his mind, even if it was dangerous, he must give it a try.

Xue Yiyi sat aside and saw that Zhang Ruochen had not talked for a long time. She said, “Young hero Zhang, if we can escape, you can visit Snowleaf City. With my father’s knowledge, he certainly knows the whereabouts of the other three Spirit Treasures.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head and said, “If there is a chance, I will definitely go there.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and stared at the metal wall of the dungeon. He grinned and said, “I have already thought of the way to break the Five Elements Array. Since I can’t break the gold wall with fire, then how about break gold with gold?”

Using gold to break the gold was to compete with brute strength. It was to break the power with power.

The stronger one would win.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the Genuine Qi and infused it into the Dragon Pearl in his heart.

Immediately, large amount of dragon Qi gushed out of the Dragon Pearl, passing through his Meridians and pouring into his blood and flesh.

Zhang Ruochen’s body was immediately enveloped by a layer of golden Dragon Scales. His arms turned into sharp dragon claws.

BAM!

He swung his dragon claws and smashed them toward the metal wall.

Under the attack of the golden Dragon Claws, the large piece of the metal wall was easily torn off like tofu.

Seeing this scene, Xue Yiyi was startled and she could not help but step back two steps. This young man who was in front of her was horribly powerful that the moment he waved his hand the gold and stone broke. How powerful must his strength be!

...

...

In the Demonic Ape Ridge, there was a valley filled with miasma.

The yellow-robed man and the blue-robed man knelt down in front of Master Longze, trembling in fear. They feared that Master Longze would kill them with rage.

The man in the yellow robe, with one hand on his severely aching chest, was as pale as snow. He said, "I was incompetent and failed to stop that young man. Master, please punish me."

Master Longze crossed his legs on a stone chair with a gloomy eye. He said, "It's not your fault. He is probably the Genius in the Temple of Holy Fire. You two are still far from him... Cough, cough."

While he was talking, Master Longze coughed twice, and blood was spat out of his mouth.

The man in the yellow robe and the man in the green robe glanced at each other, and both of them were shocked. The young man was so powerful that he even managed to hurt Master.

The yellow-robed man said, "Master, what shall we do now? He is so powerful that you may not be able to kill him with the Five Elements Array."

Master Longze sneered and said, "The Five Elements Array is extremely mysterious. Now it's just a stone generating gold. A moment later, it will be metal generating water. By then, the dungeon will be filled with extremely cold water. No matter how high is his cultivation, he will be froze to death in the water..."

BOOM!

Before Master Longze finished his words, a muffled sound came from the underground.

The deep miasma valleys vibrated violently, then the Five Elements Array was ripped apart by a stroke of golden dragon Qi.

Master Longze's face changed. He shouted, "That's not good! The young man's strength is so strong that he is going to

escape from the Five Elements Array.”

Master Longze knew that he was not on Zhang Ruochen’s level, so he instantly mobilized the supernatural power to support himself and rushed toward the depths of the valley.

BAM!

A golden light column rushed to the sky from the deep well and went straight to a height of a hundred meters. When the light dissipated, it showed the shape of a man.

It was Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen applied his Skyeeye and instantly saw Master Longze who was fleeing. He shouted at him, “Where are you escaping to?”

SWOOSH!

By applying his bodily movement, Zhang Ruochen immediately rushed above Master Longze’s head and struck with his golden dragon claws. Five of his sharp claws were like five sharp swords.

Master Longze only felt that all the surrounding scenes had disappeared. His body was surrounded by walls of wind, and he was unable to move. A huge golden claw like a lofty mountain above his head slapped down and made him tremble.

“No...”

Dragon claws dropped down without stopping and smashed Master Longze’s head into pieces. Blood red cracks extended down from his neck passing down through his chest, back, thighs, and feet.

With a banging sound, his entire body turned into pieces of flesh and blood.

Zhang Ruochen landed on the ground and looked at the bloody golden dragon claws. He said to himself, “Another hundred military merits are mine. Maybe I can accumulate 10,000 military merits in the Five Elements Primitive World and enter the Heaven Board.”

Being in the Five Elements Primitive World for less than half a day, Zhang Ruo Chen had gotten 142 military merits.

The reason why Zhang Ruo Chen accumulated the military merits was not only to enter the Heaven Board, but also to reach the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm.

Master Longze's corpse turned into pieces. Only the crystal wand with a skull on top was still in good condition.

Zhang Ruo Chen picked up the crystal wand and examined the wand his Spiritual Power. In that skull, he felt an eccentric cold air.

POW!

Zhang Ruo Chen cumulated his Genuine Qi and crushed the skull with his palm, turning it into white powder. At the top of the crystal wand, there was a thumb-sized black crystal.

He could faintly see streaks of golden light glowing in the black crystal.

The eccentric cold air was just released from that small piece of black crystal.

“What a pure source of power this water nature is.”

Zhang Ruo Chen was surprised. He enveloped his fingers with Blue Genuine Qi and carefully took off the black crystal. He refined it with the Genuine Qi.

SWISH!

The black crystal turned into streaks of black Icing air and merged with the Blue Genuine Qi, which rushed into Zhang Ruo Chen's hand to enter his Meridians and the Qi Sea.

CRACK! CRACK!

Zhang Ruo Chen's body sent out a series of exploding sound. His bones, blood, and Meridians were refreshed once again by the Icing air. There was great improvement of his body.

“Amazing. My cultivation increased greatly just after I absorbed a small piece of black crystal, which saved me one month of hard work. Moreover, my physical quality seems to

be strengthened as well. Streaks of ice lines have appeared on my bones which greatly improved my strength.”

“I wonder that if this is the Black Glazed Spinel, one of five Spirit Treasures mentioned in the Vessel Spirit of the Heaven Board.”

Zhang Ruochen got excited. He can be sure that what he had just absorbed was the Black Glazed Spinel, because in the Five Elements Primitive World, only this thing would have had such a powerful yet magical effect.

He absorbed only about 50 grams just now. If he could find more, it would definitely not be difficult to reach the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

“After seeing me rushing out of the dungeon, common people would choose to escape from the valley. And yet, Master Longze escaped into the depth of the valley. Is there any secret hidden in it?”

Thinking about the Black Glazed Spinel he had just refined, Zhang Ruochen suddenly had an idea, and ventured forth to explore the depths of the valley.

Chapter 409 - Monster Ape at the Bottom of the Water

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Of course, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't carelessly venture into the depths of the valley. First, he activated the Skyeye in his glabella to use his Spiritual Power to probe the surroundings. Going through layers of miasmas, he could see a cold black pond at the bottom of the valley.

An extremely dangerous power emanated from the cold pond and forced back Zhang Rouchen's Spiritual Power.

"What a fierce power! Is there a strong savage? So fast!" beast living in the cold pond?"

Zhang Rouchen caught two disciples of Master Longze and asked them if they knew anything.

Master Longze's two disciples were called Master Daye and Master Xiaoye respectively.

At that moment, both of them knelt on the ground and kept kowtowing to Zhang Ruochen as if he was their Deity.

Master Daye said, "Master Longze has done all kinds of evil things. You killed him, and he deserved it. We are willing to follow you and be your servants in the future."

Master Xiaoye said with a trembling voice, "I'm also willing to follow you and will always faithfully stay by your side."

How could they dare to challenge Zhang Ruochen after witnessing his immense power? They could only submit to his rule since it was the only way to live.

Even Master Longze was killed by Zhang Ruochen with one move, then wouldn't he kill them only need a snap of a finger?

Zhang Ruochen said, "Tell me, what on earth is it in the cold pond at the bottom of the valley? And where did Master Longze get his Black Glazed Spinel?"

In order to get on Zhang Ruochen's good side, Master Daye replied immediately, "There is a monster ape living in the cold pond. It is the Dominator of the entire Monster Ape Ridge. Master Longze and we are just its servants."

Master Xiaoye also added, "That Black Glazed Spinel that Master Longze wore was a reward given by the monster ape. Apparently, now is the key moment for the monster ape to break through its realm. It needs to swallow two women every day in order to increase the Yin-cold Qi in its body."

Zhang Ruochen showed a cold expression and an aura burst out from his body. He said in a deep voice, "Are you talking about the women in the dungeon?"

The pressure released by Zhang Ruochen pressed on Master Daye and Master Xiaoye like a mountain. They were getting squeezed to death by the raw power.

"Do not hurt us, please! We are just following the orders of that old fool, Longze. If we don't follow his order, we'll surely be killed." Master Daye begged.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Tell me, how powerful is that monster ape?"

Master Daye was shocked. Was this man really going to deal with the monster ape?

The monster ape was notorious across the whole Five Elements Continent.

Although he was shocked, he said honestly, "The monster ape is terrifyingly powerful. Just the Icing cold evil energy that flows out from his skin overwhelmed us and forced us to lie down on the ground when near it. Even that old fool, Longze, can't possibly survive after one strike."

Master Xiaoye's face was a little pale. He said, "Young hero, you'd better not bother it. Once it is irritated, there will be an uproar in the entire Five Elements Continent."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Both of you have said that it is the key moment for the ape to have a break-through. Maybe I can take this chance to kill it."

Zhang Ruochen certainly would like to be able to obtain the Black Glazed Spinel.

There must have been a large amount of Black Glazed Spinel in the cold black pond at the bottom of the valley. Otherwise, the monster ape would not have settled down there.

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen found that the Black Glazed Spinel contained the most succinct water-natured power. If he could refine a large amount of the Black Glazed Spinel, he could possibly practice into Treasured Body of Water Spirit.

Although the treasured body was one level lower than a Saintly Being, it was much more powerful than the ordinary human constitution.

If Zhang Ruochen practiced into the Treasured Body of Water Spirit, his Martial Arts would be improved even further.

Zhang Ruochen called out the Violet Thunder Sword and walked toward the depths of the valley step by step.

Watching Zhang Ruochen's back, Master Daye and Master Xiaoye looked at each other. They could see the fear in each other's eyes.

"We'd better quickly run as far as we can. Once the monster ape is angered, anywhere within 50 kilometers will be razed to the ground."

"He is too arrogant. There is no way he can survive once he starts fighting against the monster ape."

They immediately rushed out of the valley and went into the forest, quickly running away into the distance.

The deeper Zhang Ruochen was in the valley, the colder his surroundings got.

When Zhang Ruochen got close to the cold black pond, he released the Space Domain and regulated the power of the space warps. In a flash, Zhang Ruochen disappeared from the ground.

Being enveloped by the Space Domain, Zhang Ruochen restrained his aura and sneaked into the cold black pond to look for the lair of the monster ape.

Although the cold pond was small and narrow on the surface, the deeper he dived in, the wider the pond was.

The temperature at the bottom of the cold pond was extremely low. Warriors in the Heaven Realm with weak cultivation would certainly be frozen to death if they dived more than 100 meters deep.

However, the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi was dozen times thicker than outside. This place could be considered to be a practicing sanctum even in Kunlun's Field.

“How strange! The temperature is so low, but the water's still not freezing at the bottom of the pond.”

Zhang Ruochen vaguely felt the slight power of Black Glazed Spinel in the black cold pond.

Even if Zhang Ruochen didn't use his exercises, that power still continued to infuse into his body, integrating into his blood and Meridians.

“Even if I didn't get the Black Glazed Spinel, I could still practice into the Treasured Body of Water Spirit if I practiced in the cold pond for 10 years.”

Right now, Zhang Ruochen could affirm that there must be a large number of Black Glazed Spinels at the bottom of the cold pond.

After diving about two hundred meters, light couldn't reach the depths at all. Zhang Ruochen could only use his Skyeeye to see in the water.

A giant black shadow appeared below, which was 30 meters tall and was fully covered by the long black hair. It was a giant ape shape looking from afar.

SWOOSH!

The monster ape was breathing heavily. Every time it breathed in, huge water wave gushed toward it and going into its body through its nostrils.

Every time it breathed out, the water pushed back like a tsunami.

An unbeatable power emanated from his body. It seemed that the lofty mountains could even crumble with one punch from the monster ape.

“Black Glazed Spinel.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the stone wall below the monster ape.

On the stone wall appeared pieces of black crystals, of which the smallest one was the size of the finger, and the biggest one was as large as a washbasin.

The Black Glazed Spinel Zhang Ruochen had refined before was only about the size of the smallest among them.

Suddenly, the monster ape that was practicing discovered Zhang Ruochen’s aura and made a loud roar.

It opened two big eyes and shot out two golden light columns, which broke through Zhang Ruochen’s Space Domain and hit his body.

POW!

Zhang Ruochen flew backward and violently hit the stone wall in the distance. He sank into the stone wall, forming a big pit.

Fortunately, he mobilized the power of the Dragon Pearl in time, which formed a golden light screen to protect his body. Otherwise, he would be certainly badly hurt by that strike of the monster ape.

The monster was furious, as it did not expect someone could actually break into the Blackwater Chillpool undetected. It struck out one palm. The speed reached the maximum limit and was nearly twice the speed velocity. In an instant, its fist hit Zhang Ruochen’s body.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to dodge, but before he could mobilize his Genuine Qi, the ape's fist had landed on his body, almost breaking through the defense of the Dragon Pearl.

The monster ape was like a peerless giant demon. It looked ferocious and had infinite power. It immediately struck out the second palm.

However, the moment before its fist had landed on Zhang Ruochen, he disappeared.

Zhang Ruochen appeared above the monster ape's head. He had used the Space Moving move just now.

CLANG!

The Violet Thunder Sword flew out and Zhang Ruochen grabbed the sword, he then chopped down towards the ape.

“Soul-slaying Sword!”

Zhang Ruochen demonstrated the last move of Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing, which was also the most powerful one.

Dozens of glass thick purple lightning gathered into the sword tip. The sword screamed like the wind and thunder, as it tried to split the monster ape in half.

CRACK! CRACK!

The monster ape blocked the Violet Thunder Sword with one hand.

It swang its arm with explosive strength and slapped Zhang Ruochen away.

The hit Zhang Ruochen made just now only left a half-meter long wound in its palm. For the ape, it was not a big wound.

“So powerful. This monster ape must have practiced into the Treasured Body of Water Spirit.”

Zhang Ruochen used his Skyeye to observe. He could see that the monster ape's cultivation had already reached the Peak of the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

The monster ape's strength was many times powerful than the chief chairman of Poisonous Spider Club, even though both of them were in the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

The biggest reason was that the monster ape had practiced into the Treasured Body of Water Spirit.

Zhang Ruochen immediately released his Martial Soul and his body emitted a dazzling white light.

There was a soul shadow above his head.

After absorbing Half-Saint's Light, Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul was strong enough to be put on a par with that of Monk in the Fourth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

The Martial Soul began to mobilize the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi and converted into its own power, which suddenly increased Zhang Ruochen's strength to a large degree.

Although the Martial Soul could be comparable with the Fourth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, it didn't mean that Zhang Ruochen could display the strength of the Fourth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. After all, he was still in the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Of course, with the help of the Martial Soul, Zhang Ruochen had exceeded the ordinary person's limit of practicing the martial arts. With Zhang Ruochen's current strength, he was only a level weaker than the monster ape, and he at least had a chance.

“Fight.”

Zhang Ruochen activated the power of the Dragon Pearl, then a layer of golden Dragon Scale appeared on the surface of his body, and a pair of giant dragon wings came out of his back. He held the Violet Thunder Sword and faced the monster ape.

The Spiritual Qi of heaven and earth constantly converged to Zhang Ruochen and incessantly injected into the Violet Thunder Sword. 72 basic inscriptions and three medium level inscriptions in the sword were fully activated and broke out the full power of the tenth level Genuine Martial Arms.

Zhang Ruochen flapped the dragon wings on his back, pushed aside the pond water and took the first step, charging towards the monster ape. He held the sword with his hands, and the lightning emitting from the sword seemed to turn into a long river of thunder and lightning.

Chapter 410 - Bring Under Control

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The power of the tenth level Genuine Martial Arms was activated and the power reached its maximum.

The Blackwater Chillpool was completely covered by the electric light emitting from the Violet Thunder Sword. Every drop of water seemed to be full of destructive power.

The monster ape's body was of a water-natured physical quality, and it was suppressed by the power of thunderbolt.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen's power had been growing steadily, the monster ape became cautious.

When Zhang Ruochen carried the sword to kill it, the monster ape did not use brute force. He gathered the power in its abdomen and opened its mouth, and he spit out a dozen of large ice spikes. They were as sharp as black spears.

BANG! BANG!

Zhang Ruochen kept swinging his sword to destroy the ice spikes.

With a swishing sound, he leaped to the above of the monster ape's head and chopped down towards its head.

A purple sword light of thunderbolt that was at least 10 meters flew out with a bang.

The monster ape swung its palms again and suddenly beat towards the direction of the sword Qi.

The palm and the combat sword clashed together.

CRACK!

The combat sword destroyed the monster ape's defense. A large amount of blood immediately splashed out.

The monster ape's palm was torn by the sword Qi, leaving a long sword mark.

The blood poured out like a stream and colored the black pond water into a strange scarlet color.

After suffering from the attack, the monster ape was in pain and quickly retreated away from Zhang Ruochen.

What Zhang Ruochen used was a physical attack, and he fought against the monster ape in melees. He fought force with force, which was completely different from how other masters of Five Elements Continent usually fought. He slightly frightened the monster ape.

Zhang Ruochen had hurt the monster ape with a single attack; however, he was not satisfied with the outcome.

The attack only cut the flesh of the monster ape's palm on the surface, and it was blocked by the skeleton of the monster ape. It did not cut off its hand.

If looked closely through the wound, one would find that the skeleton of the monster ape was a dark color, just like the colored surface of a crystal.

Strips of quirky Lines flew through its skeleton.

It had practiced into the Treasured Body of Water Spirit. Its skeleton had undergone a transformation and was harder than dark steel.

“AWOO!”

A layer of black cold light emerged on the monster ape's body.

The black light flowed from the wound of its palm, then flesh meat immediately grew out and its wound quickly healed.

SWOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen certainly would not give it a chance to recover from the injury, so he immediately attacked it again.

The monster ape stared at Zhang Ruochen, its giant eyes revealed a cunning light. It did not fight with Zhang Ruochen directly. Instead, it kicked its legs and dashed toward the surface of the water at its fastest speed.

BOOM!

After a moment, the monster ape broke out of the water, and its huge body flew up more than 10 meters high.

Zhang Ruochen was closely chasing after the monster ape. He was about to get out of the water.

Above the water, the monster ape forcibly reversed its body, and attacked Zhang Ruochen who was still in the water.

This time the monster ape no longer looked underestimated its foe. It mobilized the power of its water nature, forming a black light ball to protect its fists, and fended off the impact of the sword Qi.

“Its actually so intelligent.”

Zhang Ruochen just rushed out of the water. Before he stood steady, he had to clash with the monster ape’s fists. He lost the upper hand once again and had to remain on the receiving end.

Having previously underestimated its wisdom, Zhang Ruochen immediately put away the contemptuous attitude and treated the monster ape as an enemy of equal wisdom.

The raw power of the monster ape was unparalleled. Even with the Martial Soul, Zhang Ruochen did not want to fight it with sheer strength.

BAM!

Zhang Ruochen displayed the Space Moving. With a swooshing sound, he disappeared below the monster ape’s fists.

Through power of space, Zhang Ruochen teleported 12-meter away and appeared in front of the giant face of the monster ape. The body of the monster ape was huge, even its face was several times larger than Zhang Ruochen’s body.

BOOM!

The monster ape's fist hit the water surface and made the water of the cold pond splash up for more than 10 meters high.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen chopped his sword on the monster ape's neck and broke through its iron-hard fur, leaving a long sword mark of a palm wide.

POW!

The sound of metal clashing gave out from the monster ape's neck.

This sword attack still failed to cut through the monster ape's neck, as it once again got fended off by the bones under the flesh. It just slightly injured the monster ape.

“After he has practiced into the Treasured Body of Water Spirit, the defensive power of its skeleton is so amazing that even if I use all my strength, I have to take out dozens of sword attacks in the same spot to possibly break its bones.”

The Violet Thunder Sword was already a tenth level Genuine Martial Arms. Both the sharpness and the power of the inscriptions on it were powerful.

According to Zhang Ruochen's guess, only by using the twelfth level Genuine Martial Arms at its most powerful state could he easily cut off the monster ape's bones.

But the twelfth level Genuine Martial Arms were just too expensive, and there's no way that Zhang Ruochen could afford right them now.

The Treasured Body of Water Spirit alone had already been so powerful. If the Saintly Beings of the Eastern Region reached the Fish-dragon Realm, it meant that they reached the Small Success of the Saintly Being. How terrifying would the defensive power of their bodies be?

When one reached the Fish-dragon Realm, one reached the Small Success of the Saintly Being.

Once one was a Saint, one reached the succeed of the Saintly Being.

The monster ape roared again and once again attacked toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was only slightly delayed in reactions, but he was hit by the monster ape's fist. He flew out and smashed into the stone wall of the valley.

The ape didn't expect that it would actually get injured twice in a row by a mere human. The monster ape got mad and its roar resounded through the valley.

It opened its bloody mouth, showing two rows of sharp teeth. It bended over and bit toward Zhang Ruochen to tear apart his body.

Zhang Ruochen transported his Genuine Qi into the Meridians in his arms. He used his golden dragon claws to tightly grab the upper and lower front teeth of the monster ape. He kept the monster ape's mouth open.

The Divine Dragon Strength started to circle around Zhang Ruochen's body. It provided a constant stream of power.

Fortunately, with the help of Divine Dragon Strength, Zhang Ruochen could temporarily resist the monster ape with pure strength. Otherwise, how could he fight with the monster ape with his cultivation of the Heaven Realm?

“Heart Integrated into Sword, Defense Sword.”

The pressure Zhang Ruochen bore was bigger and bigger. He had to display the power of the Heart Integrated into Sword.

The Heart of the Sword in his glabella flashed and controlled the Violet Thunder Sword, which turned into a light shuttle. It struck into the monster ape's throat and stabbed into its internal organs.

Does it matter how strong it is or how hard its bone is?

As long as one messed up its internal organs, it had to die.

When the Violet Thunder Sword flew into the body of the monster ape, the monster ape quickly responded and released its beast soul which flew into its body. It wanted to use its own beast soul to control the Violet Thunder Sword.

The monster ape definitely had high intelligence that greatly exceeded those of other savage beasts.

Zhang Ruochen coldly hummed and pulled his arms back. And then, he gathered the Genuine Qi of his whole body and struck out his palms again.

“Divine Dragon’s Steal.”

The powerful force on his palms knocked off two front teeth of the monster ape. At the same time, the powerful impact sent the monster ape flying.

Zhang Ruochen kicked his legs and flew backwards for about 33 meters. He stood on a bulge stone on the cliff. He squeezed his index finger and middle finger together. He mobilized the Violet Thunder Sword and displayed the sword skill.

CRACK!

The Violet Thunder Sword quickly flew inside the monster ape’s body, which cut off more than ten Blood Meridians, penetrated the monster ape’s lobe, and continued to stab toward the monster ape’s heart.

The monster ape had no chance to survive if he pierced its heart.

At this critical moment, the monster ape’s beast soul flew into its body and formed a Black Ape shape.

The beast soul floated above its heart and shot out a palm. It sent the Violet Thunder Sword flying.

The monster ape’s beast soul mobilized the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi and condensed into a whirlpool that enveloped the Violet Thunder Sword. It forcefully hit the Violet Thunder Sword out of its body.

With a whooshing sound, the Violet Thunder Sword with its electric light flew out from below the monster ape’s second rib.

POW!

The Violet Thunder Sword was out of Zhang Ruochen’s control and crashed into a giant stone in the distance.

“What a powerful beast soul. In this case, let’s see if your beast soul is stronger or my Martial Soul is stronger.”

Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul floated above his head. He moved his arm, and the Heart of the Sword that had originally floated in the Qi sea flew out and landed in the hands of the Martial Soul.

The Heart of the Sword turned into a white sword.

The Martial Soul held the Heart of the Sword and directly rushed into the monster ape's body with traces of shadow left behind.

The Martial Soul and the beast soul fought each other using the monster ape's body as a battlefield.

Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul was obviously more powerful and he continued to use the Heart of the Sword. He only used a dozen sword attacks to severely injure the monster ape's beast soul.

The monster ape screamed with pain and immediately wanted to retreat its beast soul.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen would not let it, so his Martial Soul chased after it. The Heart of the Sword stabbed into the back of the beast soul and locked the monster ape's beast soul in place.

The monster ape felt a severe pain in its body, and its soul seemed to be broken into pieces.

Zhang Ruochen pointed his right index finger to the sky to condense the power of Spiritual Power. The Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi vibrated violently, and a stroke of air flow converged into his fingers.

Above the sky, a thick thunder was formed and slammed onto the monster ape's body.

BOOM!

A big pit with a diameter of dozens meters appeared on the ground after hitting by a thunderbolt.

The monster ape's body collapsed into the giant pit and it was completely blackened by the thunderbolt, just barely alive.

Streaks of flames kept flowing above its body, and the ground around the large pit was sparking with lightning fire and emitting the black smoke.

Zhang Ruochen flew down and stood on the edge of the big pit. He controlled the Violet Thunder Sword that floated above the body of the monster ape, with the sword tip pointing down and ready to stab at any time.

He said seriously, “Yield? Or death?”

The monster ape’s beast soul was still suppressed by the Heart of the Sword, and it simply dared not to resist.

In fact, the monster ape was depressed. Its strength was obviously much stronger than that of a human being. If they did not compete with the beast soul and the Martial Soul, it could surely defeat the human being.

However high the savage beast’s intelligence was, it had more faith in its brute force.

The martial technique, the sword technique, and the Spiritual Power were useless in front of its strength.

Of course, the monster ape had not expected that the human’s Martial Soul was so terribly powerful. It suppressed its beast soul within seconds.

Was this human really that powerful?

“I... yield...”

The beast soul of the monster ape sent out a thought.

Naturally, the monster ape was unwilling to surrender, but its life was held in Zhang Ruochen’s hands. There was no other choice.

Zhang Ruochen said, “In that case, leave your beast soul with me so that you won’t rebel.”

Regardless of whether or not the monster ape would like to, Zhang Ruochen’s hand swung, he put the monster ape’s beast soul into the Yin Yang Wooden Graph of his Qi Sea.

According to the rule stipulated in the Heaven Board, one could get 1,000 military merits by killing an indigen in the

First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

If Zhang Ruochen killed the monster ape, he could get 1,000 military merits.

However, Zhang Ruochen did not do that, he temporarily let the monster ape live for his own use. The power of the monster ape could greatly help Zhang Ruochen in the Five Elements Primitive World.

Chapter 411 - The Great Improvement of Cultivation

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Monster ape, go heal your wounds in the valley and wait for my return.”

After Zhang Ruochen gave the order to the monster ape, he leaped into the Blackwater Chillpool to dig out the Black Glazed Spinel.

In the cold pond of more than 200 meters deep, the water pressure was suffocating and it was freezing. The stone wall around the pool was very hard. Zhang Ruochen used all his strength but only managed to dig out a small piece.

It weighed only about 50 or a 100 grams, which was about the same size as the Black Glazed Spinel above the Master Longze’s Holy Staff.

“Who would have thought that the legendary Black Glazed Spinel was actually nurtured at the bottom of the cold pond.”

The Black Glazed Spinel was formed by the purest power of water nature in the Five Elements Primitive World. Even if they were brought back to the Kunlun’s Field, they could be sold at very high prices.

After he spent half a day, Zhang Ruochen could only dig out the Black Glazed Spinels on the surface. There were more than 310 kilograms of them.

The largest piece, which was about the size of a washbasin, weighed over 100 kilograms and contained the purest pure power of water nature. Inside the crystal, one could see streaks of golden light of colored glaze.

Afterward, Zhang Ruochen released the Skyeye and discovered a few more Black Glazed Spinels that were still buried underneath the soil, so he continued to dig.

He spent a day and a night to dig up 100 more kilograms of Black Glazed Spinels. He left none untouched.

All together, Zhang Ruochen harvested more than 410 kilograms of Black Glazed Spinels.

“The Blackwater Chillpool is a wonderful place to cultivate. I should refine these Black Glazed Spinels here.”

Zhang Ruochen did not enter the internal space of Time and Space Spinel. Instead, he decided to rely on the external environment of the Blackwater Chillpool.

He took out a piece of Black Glazed Spinel that weighed about half a kilogram and pinched it in his hand. He then enveloped it with Blue Genuine Qi.

BAM!

Squeezed by the Genuine Qi, the Black Glazed Spinel exploded and turned into a cloud of black crystal fog. With the flow of the Genuine Qi, the dust entered Zhang Ruochen’s Meridians.

He circulated large circle of vital energy through his body, and a third of the power contained in the Black Glazed Spinel was absorbed instantly.

The power of water nature contained in the Black Glazed Spinel was freezing cold. As the result, Zhang Ruochen trembled all over his body. His muscles, bones, and organs made crackling sound as if they were being stir-fried.

Streaks of black air flowed into Zhang Ruochen’s skeleton, leaving prints on his skeleton.

He then ran three more large circles of vital energy again in his body and just about absorbed all of the power contained in the Black Glazed Spinel.

“My cultivation has indeed greatly improved. Without this, I would have to practice for a year. I have reached the Peak of

the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, and I am only a few steps away from the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.”

If there was no Black Glazed Spinel, Zhang Ruochen would've had to practice for another year to achieve the present realm.

Even if he used the power of Time and Space Spinel, he would still have needed four months.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen had the Dragon Pearl and could constantly absorb the Divine Dragon Strength, saving half of the time. But even then, he still needed two months.

This was the importance of cultivation resources. Without sufficient resources, it is impossible for a top genius to achieve the Fish-dragon Realm, even if he practiced for a lifetime.

Zhang Ruochen checked his own bones and found that the black lines on his bones had increased tenfold and his bones became much harder. Vaguely, they gave off a feeling like they were crystal clear.

Except for his bones, every part of his body had gone through significant changes.

Not only did his strength and defensive power increase, but the coordination between his body and Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi had also improved. Precisely, he had better coordination between his body and the power of water nature in heaven and earth.

If he could practice into Treasured Body of Water Spirit, Zhang Ruochen would be the manifestation of the power of water nature in heaven and earth, and he could easily control the water of the earth, the void space, and the body.

Just like the monster ape, he could condense an ice spike directly in his abdomen and spit it out his mouth.

However, the monster ape was only a savage beast, and it could not use the special power of the Treasured Body of Water Spirit. If it could use the power, Zhang Ruochen may not have been able to suppress it even if he used the Martial Soul.

Water was the source of all things, and the power contained within it was limitless.

Water could both attack and defend.

If he practiced into a Treasured Body of Water Spirit, there were two major advantages in addition to the great enhancement of his physical quality.

First, the warrior could practice directly to the Fish-dragon Realm without any difficulty.

This is the same as warriors who had the Saintly Being practicing directly into the Saint Realm without any difficulty. Of course, the Treasured Body of Water Spirit could not be compared with the Saintly Being as Treasured Body of Water Spirit was still inferior.

Second, warrior's practicing speed was obviously faster than that of ordinary warriors. Moreover, it was easier for him to perceive the Holy Road and comprehend the true meaning of the Holy Road.

This was because the warriors who possessed the Treasured Body of Water Spirit were more harmonious with Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi.

Although Zhang Ruochen only had an ordinary physical quality, he had many advantages that other warriors did not have. He had the Time and Space Spinel, his previous life's memories, strong Spiritual Power, Scripture of Emperor of the Ming Dynasty, etc., so his practicing speed was faster than that of the Saintly Being.

Cultivation experience was also an advantage.

If he could practice into a Treasured Body of Water Spirit, his practicing speed would be even faster.

Zhang Ruochen took out another piece of Black Glazed Spinel that weighed half a kilogram. He began to refine it as he wanted to break through the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

He ran three large circles of vital energy again, and the Black Glazed Spinel was completely absorbed. His cultivation

greatly increased again, but he did not reach the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

Having reached the limit of the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, he was at the doorstep of breaking through the realm.

“After reaching the Heaven Realm, it would be difficult to break through any realm. Even if there is no actual limit, only the Vital Essence that is needed to break through the realm will cost countless warriors’ lives.”

It was reasonable to say that the Heaven Realm was the ultimate realm of Martial Arts.

Countless warriors were unable to break through the Heaven Realm. They could only be ordinary martial arts practitioners and couldn’t reach the Holy Road that they had always dreamed about.

Only reaching the Fish-dragon Realm could it be regarded as crossing the threshold of the Holy Road.

Zhang Ruochen took out the third piece of Black Glazed Spinel. When he refined half of them, there was a low roaring sound in his Qi Sea.

Afterward, it gave out a stroke of Absorbing Qi, and the speed at which Zhang Ruochen absorbed the Black Glazed Spinel doubled.

In a flash, he completely absorbed the Black Glazed Spinel.

Finally, he broke through the boundary barrier of the realm and entered the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

Zhang Ruochen felt the emptiness in his Qi Sea. He urgently needed to absorb more Spiritual Qi.

Therefore, Zhang Ruochen took out another piece of Black Glazed Spinel and continued to refine it. He transformed the power of water nature into Vital Essence, and the Vital Essence ball in the Qi Sea grew bigger and bigger.

He absorbed about 3.25 kilograms Black Glazed Spinel in total. Zhang Ruochen’s physical quality seemed to be saturated, and he could no longer absorb anymore of the Black Glazed Spinel into his body.

“Why is this happening?”

Zhang Ruochen took out a piece of small Black Glazed Spinel of about 100 grams and held it in his hand. He absorbed it into his body and continued to refine it.

However, just after he ran his exercises, a sharp pain struck Zhang Ruochen’s body, and he spat a mouthful of blood.

The power of the Black Glazed Spinel also sprung out of his body and dissipated in the water.

Zhang Ruochen covered his chest and took a deep breath. He said, “It seems that my body has reached its limit. I can no longer absorb the Black Glazed Spinel into the body before I break another realm.”

Even if he tried again, it would be useless. It would not only break his body but also waste the Black Glazed Spinel.

Of course, absorbing 3.25 kilograms Black Glazed Spinel, Zhang Ruochen had reached the Peak of the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm, which was also not far from the Medium State of the Heaven Realm. It probably saved Zhang Ruochen seven years of practicing.

“The Vessel Spirit of Heaven Board said that if I find the Black Glazed Spinel, it can save 10 years of my hard practice. It doesn’t simply mean my cultivation, but also Treasured Body of Water Spirit.”

“Refining half of kilogram Black Glazed Spinel will save me one year of bitter practice.”

“In other words, if I absorb five kilograms of Black Glazed Spinel, I can practice into a Treasured Body of Water Spirit?”

Zhang Ruochen had already inspected his own physical quality, especially his bones.

His bones were almost covered by the black Lines, and the lines were crystal clear. Although they were far less than the monster ape’s, they were far more advanced than before.

His guess may not be wrong. If he absorbed another 1.75 kilograms of Black Glazed Spinels, he would have a chance to practice into a Treasured Body of Water Spirit.

“Now, my physical quality has reached the limit. I must break through the Medium State of the Heaven Realm in order to continue to absorb the Black Glazed Spinel. After that, I should be able to practice into a Treasured Body of Water Spirit.”

Zhang Ruochen rushed out of the Blackwater Chillpool and landed on the bank of the cold pond. He found that the water in the cold pond was not so cold after all.

He looked at the water surface. The water quality was no longer so dark anymore, and it became clearer.

“After the Black Glazed Spinels were taken away, the cold pond became just like any other!” Zhang Ruochen sighed.

After seeing Zhang Ruochen flying out of the Blackwater Chillpool, the monster ape stood up and roared loudly. His huge body moved and knelt down in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Monster ape, how many days have I been practicing in the Blackwater Chillpool?”

The monster ape transmitted its thought idea to Zhang Ruochen. It said, “Master, five days.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “It has been a long time. The Five Elements Primitive World has already been in chaos. I will go out for a walk and seize another four Spirit Treasures by taking advantage of the chaos.”

Refining the Black Glazed Spinel could make one practice into a Treasured Body of Water Spirit.

If he got the Source of Spiritual Fire, could he practice into a Treasured Body of Fire Spirit?

If he got the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, could he practice into a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit?

Each of the five Spirit Treasures represented the purest Power of Origin of the Five Elements Primitive World, and even Half-Saints would come to loot it.

If he could find all of them, he would have the opportunity to practice into the legendary Five Elements Chaotic Body.

The Five Elements Chaotic Body was more powerful than the five elements Saintly Being, but the difficulty of practicing was also great. It was harder to practice than the Ultimate Realm.

Even if Zhang Ruochen seized all five Spirit Treasures, he may not be able to successfully absorb all their powers.

After all, the human body's ability to bear was limited, and it was already remarkable that he could practice into a treasured body of one kind.

Combining two kinds of strength and practicing into a Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits would be 10 times more difficult.

What about Five Elements Chaotic Body?

Zhang Ruochen's present goal was only to practice into a Treasured Body of Water Spirit. Of course, he could work hard to become a Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits, and even a Treasured Body of Three Spirits.

Chapter 412 - Another Encounter with Xu Qing

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

In accordance with the agreement, Zhang Ruochen took the 17 girls who were detained in the dungeons away from Demonic Ape Ridge and spent half a day before coming to the official road built by the Fine Gold Federation.

All of them knelt down to show their gratitude to Zhang Ruochen.

“We are indebted to you for our lives. May we ask your name? We will hold it in our hearts forever.”

Standing on the head of the monster ape, Zhang Ruochen’s stance was heroic, exuding an uncommon temperament as that of a young Saint, he said, “I am just an outsider, and soon I will leave this world, so my name means nothing to you.”

He thought a while and continued, “More importantly, I fear that the Five Elements Continent is in a mess at present and your home may already be destroyed. So you’d better live on the fringes of the Demonic Ape Ridge for a month before you go back.”

The 17 girls were bewildered by his words.

There is an old saying, “To escort the Buddha you must escort him to the East, to save a man you must take him all the way out of danger.”

Most of them were ordinary women who didn’t even have enough strength to bind a chicken. Given the present situation in Five Elements Primitive World, once they return to their homeland, it would be their doom.

Having rescued them from Demonic Ape Ridge, there was certainly no reason to watch them returned only to die.

Zhang Ruochen's finger tapped his Storage Ring and retrieved 200 Second-Class Blood Pills and cast them into the women's hands with a swish of his hand.

Each of them got either 10 or 11 Blood Pills.

Master Daye and Master Xiaoye stood on each side of the monster ape, staring at the Blood Pills in the women's hands, and licked their lips with envious looks.

This man defeated the monster ape, so the Pills he gave must, even at worst, be of extraordinary power.

They two had been trying to flee but were snatched up by the monster ape and brought back.

Zhang Ruochen still had a use for them, and so he brought them along.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the girls and said, "Taking one Second-Class Blood Pill can not only suppress your hunger for three days but also improve your physical quality to some extent. You must remember not to waste any."

Second-Class Blood Pills no longer had any use for Zhang Rouchen.

They were, however, still a priceless treasure for a Martial Arts novice. After refining the 10 Pills, they would have enough strength to knock down two or three strong men without a problem.

From now on, they had the power to protect themselves.

Giving those Pills were a simple matter for Zhang Ruochen, but it could alter the course of the girls' lives.

As an old saying goes, "It is better to do one good deed in a day than earn a pot of gold."

The 17 girls were all moved and kneeled to the ground once again, clasping the Blood Pills tightly in their hands as if they were Spiritual Doses.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Xue Yiyi and said, “I found the “Five Elements Statute Book” in Master Longze’s abode. This should be a decent rare book. Because you have a talent for this, I want to give it to you for your enlightenment. Their lives will rest in your hands.”

When he finished his words, Zhang Ruochen took out an ancient book about metal refining and threw it to her.

The “Five Elements Statute Book” was the ultimate book for practicing spell that Master Longze was extremely lucky to have gotten his hands on.

Even if Xue Yiyi was the daughter of the city governor of Snowleaf City, she was also delighted to receive this rare book. She held it tightly in her arms as if she would never let go.

“Master, will the Five Elements Continent really suffer a catastrophe?”

Xue Yiyi stopped smiling and asked anxiously, with the book still in her arms.

“The catastrophe already arrived precisely five days ago. If I am right, Snowleaf City would already be destroyed. You’d better not go back for now. If you hide among the barren mountain ridges, you may still survive.”

Although Zhang Ruochen did not like to kill innocent people, it didn’t mean that other students were the same. The invasion of one world by another will always be cruel.

People of the weaker world would be slaughtered, enslaved and trampled. The heavens would never answer their prayers.

The wars between two worlds were too great beyond the strength of one person to reverse.

If an even stronger power invaded Kunlun’s Field, Zhang Ruochen and the people there would also suffer a miserable fate.

So, the only thing to do is to keep on cultivating and get even stronger.

Seated on the head of monster ape with his legs crossed, he quickly disappeared into the horizon. He had stepped into the battleground of the Five Elements Primitive World. He was a member of Kunlun's Field, and he had his own faction and perspective.

“Let's fight!”

As his cultivation had arrived the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm, his strength increased a lot. It was the right time to meet the top masters of Five Elements Primitive World.

Zhang Ruochen was guided by Master Daye and Master Xiaoye towards Evil Wood Palace.

Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, one of the five Spirit Treasures, was a treasure of the Evil Wood Palace.

Furthermore, according to Master Xiaoye, Evil Wood Palace is the weakest of the Holy Land of Five Masters on the Five Elements Continent. On that account, it would be the safest to start from there.

Zhang Ruochen had also heard from Xue Yiyi that the Evil Wood Palace was indeed the weakest.

Of course, it didn't mean that Evil Wood Palace was defenseless. As a major force of the Primitive World, it couldn't be underestimated.

Master Daye said, “Evil Wood Palace has four Kings of Masters who have detached themselves from the mortal world. Their strength is incredible, and each one of them is a monster who has lived for hundreds of years.”

In fact, they are the superiors of the Fish-dragon Realm.

“Given your strength, even if you met one or two of them, it would still be easy deal with. However, if all four fought back together, even with your god-like strength, you might not be able to defeat them.”

“Also, there is a rumor that there is an array left by the Sage Master in the Evil Wood Palace. 300 years ago, the ten Kings of Sage Masters of the Temple of Holy Fire tried to invade

Evil Wood Palace, but they were crushed to death by the array, which is quite horrific.”

Zhang Ruochen thought to himself that the Sage Masters mentioned would probably be Half-Saints.

Five Elements Primitive World is a few hundred thousand years old, even if the Spiritual Qi is thin, there could be incredible talents who have broken the shackles and practiced themselves as far as the Half-Saint Realm.

The Holy Land of the Five Masters was supposedly built by Half-Saints and had a history of a thousand years in the Five Elements Primitive World.

Although the Half-Saints had passed away for many years, the array they left behind had such a power that ordinary people couldn't break it at all.

Master Xiaoye showed his obedience to Zhang Rouchen and said, “My lord, I have a plan and might be able to rob the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood from the Evil Wood Palace.”

“Tell me.” Replied Zhang Ruochen.

Master Xiaoye said, “Evil Wood Temple once sent an emissary to Demonic Ape Ridge, hoping to have Longze as their Elder Keqing. But Longze refused.”

“If you were to visit Evil Wood Temple as Longze, they would definitely regard you as a distinguished guest. That being the case, you would not only avoid being attacked by the array, but also sneak in there without difficulty. If you decide to go forward with it, I can contact the emissary right away.”

This idea of Master Xiaoye was indeed attractive to Zhang Rouchen.

But, Zhang Ruochen didn't trust him.

They were disciples of Master Longze, but they had no respect for him, so how could they be trusted to run errands for Zhang Ruochen?

What if Masters Daye and Xiaoye joined force with the masters of the Evil Wood Temple against him once he was

there alone? Would that not be walking into a trap?

Just when Zhang Ruochen was thinking, two silver flying knives shot out from a large river nearby.

The speed of the flying knives exceeded the speed velocity.

Without even a rustle of the wind, the flying knives hit Master Daye and Master Xiaoye right between their eyebrows.

CRACK!

Because of the great impact, their skulls exploded; flesh and blood flew in all directions. Only two headless bodies remained standing.

SPLASH!

Two human figures jumped out from the water.

Being enveloped by a layer of Genuine Qi, their feet leaped in mid-air and landed in front of Zhang Ruochen just about 33 meters away.

Xu Jiali stretched out her slender hands and used her Genuine Qi to retrieve the two flying knives. She laughed, "Killing two indigenous masters brings my military merits to 77 points. Very soon I will have 100."

Xu Jiali was a genius student of Saint Xu Gentry, her cultivation achieved the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm. It was an easy job to kill two indigens at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Moreover, it was a sneak attack so they were dead in one blow.

Xu Qing went forward with his hands crossed behind his back. His cold eyes fixed on Zhang Ruochen who sat on the head of the monster ape, and he didn't even spare a glance on the two corpses on the ground. He said, "We meet again. You didn't expect to see me so soon, did you?"

Zhang Ruochen remained calm, "That's true." He said with no indication of fear.

Xu Qing straightened his back, raised his chin and said proudly, "Do you know why I didn't ambush you just now?"

“Why?”

Xu Qing’s eyes were filled with war intent. He explained, “It was my greatest shame to lose to you at Stairway to Heaven. Only by defeating you fair and square can I erase that shame.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What makes you think you have the strength to fight me now?”

Xu Qing smirked and replied confidently, “You should know that I had arrived at the Medium State in the Heaven Realm before I came to the Five Elements Primitive World. At that time, I was already stronger than you. And now, I have arrived at the Final State of the Heaven Realm. How many attacks do you think I will need to beat you?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “You achieved the Final State in just a few days. You must have had an unexpected encounter.”

Xu Qing laughed loudly and said, “It wouldn’t matter if you know since you will be dead by the end of the day. I found one of the five Spirit Treasures— Golden Ganoderma Lucidum, the day after I came to the Five Elements Primitive World.”

“I just ate a little piece of it, and it saved me from 10 years’ of hard training and brought me into the Final State in one shot. I don’t believe it will be difficult to achieve the Completion of Heaven Realm within a month.”

“Additionally, I will soon cultivate the Treasured Body of Metal Spirit, and I should be successful, so as long as I can reach the Completion of Heaven Realm. After which, it will be easy to make it into the top 10,000 of the Heaven Board.”

Zhang Ruochen replied, “You were very fortunate to find Golden Ganoderma Lucidum.”

“Now, do you dare do battle with me?” Laughed Xu Qing.

Xu Qing wanted to defeat Zhang Ruochen in the mind, but what he didn’t know was that Zhang Ruochen had gotten the Black Glazed Spinel and achieved another breakthrough in his cultivation.

His arrogant manner seemed quite amusing to Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 413 - Overwhelming Victory

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Xu Jiali stood by, arms crossed, holding two silver flying knives. A smile on her beautiful face revealed that something interesting would happen.

She was quite confident of Xu Qing's strength. After refining the Golden Ganoderma Lucidum, Xu Qing had progressed in cultivation rapidly, leaving Zhang Ruochen far behind.

The battle seemed to be without suspense.

She only hoped that Xu Qing would give her some Golden Ganoderma Lucidum once he felt better after killing Zhang Ruochen.

To her surprise, Zhang Ruochen gently shook his head and said, "I won't fight with you."

Xu Qing had expected that and looked calmed. He knew that Zhang Ruochen did not dare to fight him with his current cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen patted the monster ape's skull and said, "Buddy, go kill him!"

Zhang Ruochen was not going to bother dealing with Xu Qing himself.

"What? Asking a savage beast to fight me?"

Xu Qing looked stiff. He had not expected that Zhang Ruochen could be so arrogant.

"ROAR!"

The monster ape raised its head, opened its bloody mouth, and roared.

A gigantic savage beast breath rushed out of its body like tides surging in all directions.

At first, the animal did not burst out any power. Although its aura was strong, Xu Qing did not worry about it.

Until this moment, when he was shocked by its force.

This was not a fourth level beast at all. It was a fifth level beast.

Both Xu Jiali and Xu Qing changed their expressions and stepped back. They could not imagine how Zhang Ruochen could tame such a ferocious beast.

“Flee away! It’s a fifth level savage beast. We cannot resist.”

With a ferocious look, Xu Qing turned his head and stared at Zhang Ruochen. “How is it possible? He is not a tamer. How can he tame a fifth level beast as his mount?”

Originally, he had thought that he could beat Zhang Ruochen. Unexpectedly, he had been chased by the mount before Zhang Ruochen even began to make a move.

Although they had profound cultivation, they were not strong enough to compete with the monster ape.

The monster ape had caught up with Xu Jiali. It hit her head with its giant black fists.

“BOOM!”

The necklace Xu Jiali wore was an amulet treasure. Driven by Genuine Qi, it emitted silver brilliance and formed a spherical shield, resisting the monster ape’s attack.

“BANG!”

For a split second the Genuine Qi shield was broken.

The monster ape’s fist, as big as a water tank, fell down on Xu Jiali, smashing her into a mass of blood and scattered crushed bones.

Even a beautiful God's favored daughter was unable to escape death in the face of absolute power. They could not withstand a single blow.

Xu Qing felt a tremble in his heart. He immediately pushed his Genuine Qi and displayed a body movement to the extreme.

“BOOM!”

The monster ape slammed against the ground and bounced up like a cannonball into the air. It quickly caught up with Xu Qing and took a slap at him.

Xu Qing gritted his teeth. He took out a Half-Saint bone bead, and injected Genuine Qi into it.

“SWISH!”

A pattern of inscription emerged on the surface of the bone bead. It burst out a white glaring brilliance that formed a 10 meter Half-Saint illusory image, with him protected in the center.

The monster ape beat against the top of it. Immediately a circle of ripples recoiled the palm power. The monster ape stepped back in shock.

As a Saint Gentry descendant, Xu Qing obviously had a much more powerful amulet treasures than Xu Jiali.

A general cultivator in the Fish-dragon Realm could not break through his defense.

The Half-Saint bone bead contained a whole Half-Saint skeleton that had been refined for nearly a year. It had eventually condensed into a pigeon-egg-sized bead.

Half-Saint bones were inherently hard and contained Saint Power.

The solidity of a Half-Saint bead was comparable to that of a Holy Weapon.

Moreover, an Array Master had carved defensive inscriptions onto it. Its defensive power was astonishing.

Of course, every time he used the Half-Saint bone bead, it consumed a lot of Genuine Qi. Even if Xu Qing had profound

cultivation, he could only activate it ten times at most before exhausting his Genuine Qi.

“ROAR!”

The monster ape pounded its chest and attacked Xu Qing again.

Its huge fists hit Xu Qing again and again, unleashing its power almost to the extreme.

Even with the defense of the Half-Saint bone bead, Xu Qing had to step back. He was like a leaf under the force of stormy waves, he could be torn up at any time.

“This animal’s strength is horrible. Even with the Half-Saint bone bead, I may not be able to resist against it much longer. Moreover, it’s surprisingly quick. Even if I tried to escape, I couldn’t get away. What should I do?”

Xu Qing had never expected that he would even fall into such a desperate situation in the Five Elements Primitive World.

If he had known, he would have acted together with Nie Wenlong.

Nie Wenlong was the master Demi-saint Sandao had been looking for. He was ranked 6,547th on the Heaven Board and was even stronger than Xu Qing. He had once killed a cultivator at the First Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

Warriors on the Heaven Board were superiors at the peak of the Heaven Realm.

Generally, they were not comparable with cultivators in the Fish-dragon Realm.

However, almost all the top 10,000 warriors on the Heaven Board had the strength to compete with cultivators at the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. A few could even kill weaker cultivators.

The Heaven Board encompassed the entire Kunlun’s Field. Warriors of the Heaven Realm in Kunlun’s Field could be listed on the Heaven Board as long as they accumulated 10,000 merits.

There were more than a million warriors on the Heaven Board. Heaven Realm Warriors in the top 10,000 had to have accumulated at least 100,000 military merits.

Demi-saint Sandao had sent Nie Wenlong into the Five Elements Primitive World in advance to assist Xu Qing in killing Zhang Ruochen.

It was no use lamenting. Nie Wenlong was in the Evil Wood Palace now; he would not be able to come save him in time

“BANG! BANG!”

As time passed, under the attack of the monster ape, Xu Qing’s Genuine Qi was consumed in large quantities. The defense of the Half-Saint bone bead was weakening.

Xu Qing shouted anxiously, “Zhang Ruochen, if you are a man, fight me yourself! It’s shameful for you to send a beast to fight with me.”

Zhang Ruochen said seriously, “If you can’t even defeat my savage beast, how can you fight with me?”

Xu Qing was so angry that he vomited blood.

The Half-Saint illusory image began to crack.

Xu Qing said, “Stop the monster ape. I have something important to tell you about your fiancée, Huang Yanchen.”

Zhang Ruochen’s face changed. He waved his hand slightly, signaling the monster ape to stop.

The monster ape exposed a pair of huge red eyes and roared at Xu Qing, almost blowing him backwards. The blood scent in its mouth made Xu Qing feel extremely ill; he almost vomited again.

It stopped attacking and stepped back two steps to stand behind Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Tell me!”

Xu Qing drew a long breath and stared blankly at the monster ape. “I won’t tell you until you let me go.”

“SHUA!”

Zhang Ruochen's footsteps were a stream of light. He charged at Xu Qing, grabbed his neck, and lifted him up.

"Eh... You..."

Zhang Ruochen's two fingers held Xu Qing's trachea like iron pliers. With just a bit more strength, he could burst his trachea.

"Spit it out!"

Zhang Ruochen said in a low voice.

He released a strong spiritual force to hit Xu Qing's Martial Soul with an overwhelming Spiritual Determination. Xu Qing began to tremble all over.

Xu Qing had thought there was a huge gap between himself and Zhang Ruochen. Even if he practiced to the Completion of the Heaven Realm, he would probably never compare to him.

Zhang Ruochen's strong Spiritual Power defeated Xu Qing's firm heart of Martial Arts. It daunted and terrified Xu Qing.

Xu Qing said shakily, "Okay, okay. I'll tell you. Yesterday, the Evil Wood Palace intelligence organization discovered Huang Yanchen's trace and dispatched masters to catch her. Today, I came here to meet them. I did not expect to meet you."

Zhang Ruochen frowned. "The Evil Wood Palace? How can you cooperate with them?"

Xu Qing said, "I did not contact the Evil Wood Palace, but rather Nie Wenlong, who made contact with the Evil Wood Palace on behalf of both of us. He promised the Evil Wood Palace that if Saint Xu Gentry takes over the Five Elements Primitive World in the future, he will allow the Evil Wood Palace to manage the Five Elements Primitive World. From then on, the other four Holy Lands in the Five Elements Primitive World would be wiped out."

In general, if an Inferior Primitive World was conquered, it would be handed over to a Saint Gentry.

Only the medium level Primitive Worlds and the superior class Primitive Worlds had to be managed directly by the imperial court.

If Saint Xu Gentry fought hard for it, it would indeed have the opportunity to take control of the Five Elements Primitive World.

“Who is Nie Wenlong?” Zhang Rouchen asked.

Xu Qing hesitated for a moment before replying. “Nie Wenlong is a Saint from the Saint Academy. He is one year ahead of us. He is also a warrior on the Heaven Board. He snuck into the Five Elements Primitive World to take your life under order from the ancestor. Zhang Ruochen, I’ve told you everything. Can you let me go now?”

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment. He raised his head and stared at Xu Qing. “I never said I would let you go.”

“SNAP!”

He clenched his fingers and broke Xu Qing’s trachea.

Then he snapped his neck.

With a bang, Xu Qing fell to the ground. He was dead.

Zhang Ruochen would never be lenient to people like Xu Qing, who had tried all means to kill him.

“Since Xu Qing has been waiting here, the master of the Evil Wood Palace, who was sent to catch Huang Yanchen, will surely pass through. I’d better wait for them here.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Xu Qing’s corpse. He knelt down and picked up the Half-Saint bone bead.

Chapter 414 - The Magic Golden Ganoderma

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Half-Saint bone beads are made from a Half-Saint's bones. They appear to be only the size of a pigeon egg, but weigh over a thousand kilograms.

“The Half-Saint's bones are ten times heavier than those of ordinary people, harder even than dark steel. The extent of their power is not known.”

The realm of Half-Saint is shrouded in mystery and awe.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his Genuine Qi and infused it into the Half-Saint bone beads.

Streaks of white light floated across their surfaces.

They were buzzing.

The Half-Saint bone beads cast a light far into the distance in which there was a ten-meter high phantom image, as if Zhang Ruochen had donned a suit of armor of light and shadow.

“He is a worthy descendent of the Saints. The protective amulet he carries is quite powerful. Although it is not a Holy Weapon, it might still be considered the best level of defense besides.”

Zhang Ruochen collected his Genuine Qi and puts the Half-Saint bone beads into his breast pocket. He may find some use for them in a future dangerous situation.

Searching Xu Qing's body, Zhang Ruochen found three bottles of Pills, all of them fifth rank, which are quite precious.

There was also a book of cultivation practices, the “Roc Martial Classic”, recorded in a Jade Book. The text was tiny, only by summoning Genuine Qi to his eyes could he see the 30,000 words carved upon it.

The Roc Martial Classic is the great scripture of the Saint Xu Gentry, which belongs to the King’s Stage Inferior Class, and records the mysteries of deification.

Only the first person of each generation of the Saint Xu Gentry is qualified to practice it.

Of course, the Jade Book only records the first three layers of the Roc Martial Classic. Xu Qing also has just begun to awaken. Only after having reached the Fish-dragon Realm can he begin formal training.

“Saint Xu Gentry even owns a rare book of King’s Stage, which is worthy of its millenia-long history.” Zhang Ruochen nodded his head and said, “Even though its only the first three layers of the text, the monks of the Fish-dragon Realm would kill to obtain it.”

Although Zhang Ruochen does not need to practice the Roc Martial Classic, he can still peruse and contemplate it, and absorb the essence of Martial Arts within, laying a foundation for him to take on the Holy Road.

Later, Zhang Ruochen discovered a dark steel box on Xu Qing’s body.

The box, about the size of a fist, was quite heavy. Where the lid latches to the box, it is sealed with an inscription, and contains something of obvious importance.

“Creak!”

Zhang Ruochen opened the dark steel box a crack.

Immediately, a golden light burst forth from inside accompanied by a strong medicinal fragrance.

Lying at the bottom of the box was a magical mushroom, shining with glaring light, as if forged from gold.

“A Golden Ganoderma!”

Zhang Ruochen was overjoyed at finding one of the five great Spirit Treasures.

A corner of the mushroom was missing, probably about a quarter of it. It must have been eaten by Xu Qing.

The rest of the Ganoderma should be enough for Zhang Ruochen to cultivate the Treasured Body of Metal Spirit.

Of course, he has yet even successfully cultivated the Treasured Body of Water Spirit and so for now has no plans to decoct the Magic Golden Ganoderma.

After clearing away the bodies of Xu Qing and Xu Jiali, Zhang Ruochen took out the "Roc Martial Classic" and began to study it, hoping to comprehend some deep truths about the Martial Arts.

...

The bright glare of the noon sun was like a golden furnace, baking the earth.

On the official road, a group of Monks dressed in cyan mage robes were driving thirteen savage beasts drawing thirteen chariots toward the main base of the Evil Wood Palace, forming an immense spectacle.

The headmost chariot was extraordinarily luxurious. It was made of costly gold wire platan wood and flying a battle flag woven from luzurite.

Under the pull of a Snow Eagle, a fourth-level, superior-class savage bird, the chariot sped rapidly ahead, nine-feet off the earth.

In the middle of these chariots, was an iron and bone prison van surrounded by the formation.

In the center of the van, a beautiful woman with long royal blue hair sat with her legs crossed. It was Huang Yanchen.

Despite being captured captured, Huang Yanchen still appeared to be very calm, circulating her Genuine Qi, with her beautiful eyes closed.

A dragon-shaped whisp of Genuine Qi went in and out with her breath.

A man aged forty or so, walked alongside the prison van. He had whiskers on his chin and an emaciated body, and glanced lustfully toward Huang Yanchen with sinister eyes.

He said: “Elder brother, this woman not only looks like a goddess, but is also quite strong in battle. If it hadn’t been for Master, I’m afraid no one among us could have subdued her”

That elder brother, the man wearing a blue mage robe, was holding a crystal wand, and appeared to be a mighty warrior. However, a few silver hairs on his temples made him look his age.

The elder brother of Evil Wood Palace coldly said: “Number Eight, you better not think about laying a finger on her. Master Xu Qing is extremely fond of her. If you dare to touch her, it just might mean your life.”

Number Eight sighed, “If I died for spending a night with a beauty like her, it will still be worth it.”

Number Eight moved his eyes back and forth and said: “Elder brother, are those supernatural monsters really so strong that our Evil Wood Palace must obey them?”

The Elder Brothern said, “It is said that Saint Xu Gentry, where master Xu Qing resides, has more than one Sage level Master. It would only be beneficial to us to go along with them. With their power, the Evil Wood Palace will be able to rule the entire Five Elements Continent. Whether the Temple of Holy Fire, Holy Earth, or Holy Water, they will tremble before us.”

Thinking of a Sage Master, Number Eight’s eyes glowed with awe.

It should be noted that since the establishment of Evil Wood Palace 1,800 years ago, there has only ever been one Sage Master born there.

The Saint Xu Gentry actually had several masters at that level, the thought of which was awe-inspiring.

The prison van suddenly started to shake violently.

Huang Yanchen was sitting in the center of the van and already recovered. She opened her sapphire-like eyes wide, pulled out the white jade hairpin in her hair and pinched it between two fingers.

If you look carefully, you will discover the white jade hairpin is actually a unique sword.

As Genuine Qi surged into the white jade hairpin, there was an explosion of light. The sound of a sword slashing arose from within it and, in the blink of an eye, it turned into a two-meter Jade Light Longsword.

This is a Holy Sword, which was given to her by her mother who told her only to use it in a dire crisis.

Previously, Huang Yanchen was seriously wounded by the King Sage of the Evil Wood Temple before she had time to use the Holy Sword. And she also lost her ninth-level Genuine Martial Arms combat sword to them.

“BAM!”

Huang Yanchene brandished the sword wildly and cleaved the prison van in two.

“AWOO!”

Her body erupted with a dragon roar.

She lept out of the van and performing the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon, she fled into the distance faster than the speed of sound.

“Damn, she’s escaping!”

The two men mobilized their supernatural powers and chased after Huang Yanchen.

At the same time, a thunderclap erupted from the head chariot and an elder with a shaggy head of black hair flew off of it.

He is one of the Four Sages of Evil Wood Palace, named Master Qingmu, already a hundred and twenty years old with unrivalled supernatural powers.

“Holy Wooden Spear.”

Master Qingmu pointed the crystal wand forward, deploying the Spiritual Qi of Wood which coalesced into hundreds of spears, which rained down like hail upon Huang Yanchen.

“That old monster reacts so fast.”

Although Huang Yanchen was gripping the Holy Sword, her martial cultivation was only in the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm and the Vital Essence of her Qi Sea was still not stabilized enough, so she was only able to use the Holy Sword at most two or three times.

Therefore, she would have to escape as quickly as possible.

“WOOSH!”

Just as the spears were at her back...

At the juncture, she twisted her delicate body and turned right back around, releasing the power of her Holy Weapon. She swung it downwards, cutting the hail of spears to shreds.

The strike depleted the greater part of her body's Vital Essence. If she struck a third time, she would already die from the Vital Essence exhaustion, even without the master of Evil Wood Palace doing anything.

After throwing that strike, Huang Yanchen immediately turned and escaped as fast as she could.

“Run, run, I must get away...”

“Yan Qing is too brash in allying against me with these heretics from the Five Elements Primitive World? When I get back to Kunlun's Field, I certainly will make him pay a heavy price.”

Huang Yanchen's eyes were as cold as frost with an underlying murderousness.

Master Qingmu was taken aback and said to himself, “Such power, can this be truly be her own strength? No, it is the sword. It must be a Holy Weapon.”

Master Qingmu's eyes became greedy, and he chased after Huang Yanchen. He would rob her of her sword, whatever it

took.

“Damn it! The old man is catching up!”

Huang Yanchen looked back, only to see that Master Qingmu was close behind her, approaching faster and faster.

Furthermore, the masters of Evil Wood Palace were also in pursuit, ten or more of whom could rival the warriors of the Heaven Realm.

What should I do?

Could I be destined to die in the Five Elements Primitive World?

Huang Yanchen pursed her lips tightly and reluctantly cycled her Genuine Qi to its extreme to continue her escape.

She will never give up, right until the end.

If really unable to escape, she would rather end her life than fall into their hands.

Huang Yanchen had a tough personality and was prepared to commit suicide.

There was sound of water ahead, in several hundred meters there was apparently a big river.

There was a huge black ape standing on its bank.

The aura radiating from its body was quite startling. It transformed into a disc of magic energy, hovering above the ape's head, which looked ancient.

Huang Yanchen was shocked at first. Such a savage beast actually dwells in the Five Elements Primitive World?

Afterwards, her gaze was attracted by the shoulders of the giant ape. A young man is sitting atop them, a Jade Book open in his hands, reading it earnestly.

“What's he doing here?”

Huang Yanchen's eyes opened wide. She was so stunned, she forgot she needed to escape.

Chapter 415 - Fight Against with the Master

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

With the intensity of Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power, he could completely perceive things that had happened 50 kilometers away.

However, when he perceived the Roc Martial Classics, he unconsciously entered into the deep state of practice and immersed himself in the subtlety of martial arts, evolving the Martial Arts with the Martial Soul.

It was for this reason that he did not realize what was happening until Huang Yanchen ran pass him. His Spiritual Power withdrew from the Roc Martial Classics.

“No wonder this book is a rare book of King's Stage, the first level of it is already so extensive and profound.”

Zhang Ruochen breathed out deeply. He felt that his martial arts had made substantial progress.

At that moment, Zhang Ruochen felt a pair of sharp eyes staring at him.

Turning towards the eyes, he landed his eyes on Huang Yanchen and made eye contact with her. Zhang Ruochen immediately revealed an apologetic smile.

Huang Yanchen hummed coldly. She said, “Zhang Ruochen, are you deliberately standing by and wanting to get me killed by an indigen superior? So that you can reasonably break our engagement?”

Zhang Ruochen was nearby, and with his cultivation, he must have already known that the master of Evil Wood Palace was chasing after her. However, Zhang Ruochen did not immediately go and save her, which naturally made Huang Yanchen very angry.

Zhang Ruochen sighed but did not give any explanation. Instead, he looked at the group of indigenous people who were in the distance and dressed in blue master robes.

More and more of the indigens appeared. There were only a dozen of them at the beginning, but soon there were more than 100 of them.

They rode on 13 chariots driven by savage beasts and held the battle flags in their hands. They stood about 33 meters away but did not immediately launch an attack.

Obviously, monster ape's power frightened them, so they did not dare to act rashly.

Originally, Huang Yanchen was also worried that Zhang Ruochen was not the opponent of the group of masters in Evil Wood Palace. However, when she saw that Zhang Ruochen actually defeated the monster ape, she was less worried.

Zhang Ruochen's present strength was indeed unfathomable.

"Master, that's the monster ape in the Blackwater Chillpool. How did it get out of the Demonic Ape Ridge?" The old man said in surprise.

The blackwater monster ape also had a fierce reputation in the entire Five Elements Continent.

"Shut up. Don't you see that the monster ape have already been tamed?" The eldest brother said solemnly.

"Someone actually tamed the monster ape? Just how powerful could that person be?"

The eighth brother's body trembled. His legs could not even stand upright.

Master Qingmu squinted his eyes and stared at the young man sitting on the monster ape's right shoulder. He said in a hoarse

voice, “My friend, I am Master Qingmu of Evil Wood Palace, and I’m arresting this woman. Please do not to intervene.”

In order to avoid a vicious battle, Master Qingmu wanted to use the name of “Evil Wood Palace” to suppress him.

When Master Qingmu declared the name of the Evil Wood Palace, even the masters who were standing behind him slightly straightened their backs, with pride on their faces.

Being the disciples of the Holy Land of five masters was an amazing thing.

Zhang Ruochen put away the jade book and stood up. He said with a smile. “You want me to not step into this matter? Don’t you know that the person you want to kill is my senior sister apprentice?”

Huang Yanchen rolled her eyes. She apparently was dissatisfied with Zhang Ruochen’s words.

Senior sister apprentice... What happened to “fiancee”?

Master Qingmu showed a cold look. The supernatural power slowly spread from his body. He said, “You are also an extraterritorial evil spirit. In this case, I have nothing to say. Today, I will eliminate you the both of you.”

BAM!

Master Qingmu lifted up the crystal wand and slammed the ground with it. Suddenly, vines that were as thick as bowl mouth grew on the ground. At first, they were only one meter long, but soon they grew to 10 meters, 20 meters... Numerous vines, like whips and chains, flew toward Huang Yanchen, Zhang Ruochen, and the monster ape at the same time.

Huang Yanchen immediately held the Holy Sword across in front of herself, making a defensive posture.

But Zhang Ruochen was very calm, and did not want to do anything.

The monster ape roared loudly and kicked its feet on the ground. He then attacked toward Master Qingmu.

Master Qingmu swung the crystal wand, and the wand separated into 36 vines wrapping around the body of the monster ape. They were like meandering blue tentacles and tightly wrapped up the monster ape.

“AWOO!”

Monster ape emitted Icing cold air from his body, spreading out in all directions.

There was frozen sound of tittering on the ground.

In a very short time, an area within one and half kilometers were covered with a thick layer of ice.

Most of the masters of the Evil Wood Palace were frozen, and even their blood and heart were frozen. They were dead for sure.

Only 17 of them survived because they had profound supernatural power, but they were shivering in the cold.

BAM!

The large vine ball that enveloped the monster ape was torn apart by a huge power and broke into short wooden vines before flying out violently.

The monster ape rushed out and punched on Master Qingmu’s head with his fist.

Master Qingmu’s pupils were enlarged and he immediately held the crystal wand in front of him, forming a blue protective shield five meters in front of him.

BAM!

The blue barrier was crushed into pieces by the monster ape with a single punch.

Master Qingmu flew backwards and his old face turned pale.

“Set up the Combined Attacking Array, now!”

Master Qingmu ordered, and sixteen masters of Evil Wood Palace immediately charged forward, moved their feet, and formed a circle around Master Qingmu in 16 directions.

BAM!

At the same time, 16 people inserted the crystal wand into the ground. Under the urging of supernatural power, the wands crystal wands were transformed into 16 array columns, out of which a blue light column surged.

The 16 light columns gathered toward Master Qingmu who was standing in the middle.

Master Qingmu's aura kept increasing. Under the impact of a powerful force, the ground under his feet was shattered, forming streaks of strange Lines.

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes. He said to Huang Yanchen, "Let me borrow your Holy Sword."

Zhang Ruochen's two fingers shook gently. The white Holy Sword in Huang Yanchen's hands flew out toward Zhang Ruochen.

SWOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen released his Martial Soul. Suddenly, the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi turned into a huge vortex and gathered toward the Holy Sword.

In particular, the Spiritual Qi of water nature surged the fastest and continued to inject into the Holy Sword.

A Saint Power gushed out of the sword.

Zhang Ruochen held the Holy Sword with his hands. The power it gave was much more powerful than when Hunag Yanchen had held it.

"Break!"

Zhang Ruochen controlled the Holy Sword and dashed out. His sword hit the boundary of the Combined Attacking Array set up by Master Qingmu and the 16 masters.

The Combined Attacking Array, which had not fully formed, was immediately disintegrated.

SWOOSH!

Stokes of sword Qi flew out from the tip of the Holy Sword and pieced through seven masters' body.

They flew backward and fell into a pool of blood.

The other nine masters were more or less wounded by the sword Qi and fled in different directions.

They were all in the Heaven Realm and were powerful. So they ran very fast. In the blink of an eye, they had already fled hundreds of meters away.

“You want to escape?”

Huang Yanchen immediately chased down one of them. She caught up the man in a single breath and struck him down with her palm.

SNAP!

Her palms hit the man’s head and broke his skull into pieces.

Afterwards, she went on to kill another person. Only after she had got right behind him, a blade of sword radiance flew past her and penetrated the man’s back.

With a tittering sound , the man fell forward to the ground, revealing a bowl mouth-sized blood hole in his back.

BAM!

The Holy Sword circled in the air before it flew back to Zhang Ruochen’s hand.

Just now, Zhang Ruochen stood where he was and used the Sword Defending Technique. He had killed eight people in a row and accumulated more than 100 military merits.

Moreover, because he used the Martial Soul to control the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi for his own use, so even if he used the Holy Sword, it only consumed 30% of his real Vital Essence.

“This sword is surely deserving of its name. The power it gives out is so powerful.”

Zhang Ruochen gently touched the jade-like blade with his finger. He swung the sword, and the Holy Sword immediately sent out a joyful tweeting sound.

After reaching the Heart Integrated into Sword, Zhang Ruochen could have affinity with any sword in the world. He could even communicate with them and become their best friend.

“What a profound realm of sword technique! If only I can also reach the Heart Integrated into Sword.”

Huang Yanchen had refined the Sword Heart Pill, but she was still far from reaching the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword.

Staring at Zhang Ruochen who was holding the Holy Sword, Huang Yanchen actually felt a tugging deep in her heart. Zhang Ruochen was a lot more talented than her, and she was not able to catch up to him in any way.

In the other direction, the monster ape and Master Qingmu were still fighting 50 kilometers away, sending out tremendous shockwaves in all directions.

Obviously, the power of the monster ape was much stronger than that of Master Qingmu, and it forced Master Qingmu to retreat again and again.

“The young man’s power is too strong. Just with one sword attack, he already broke the Combined Attacking Array. If he and the monster ape team up, I will be dead for sure.”

Master Qingmu thought so in his mind.

Although Master Qingmu was not an opponent of the monster ape, as a King of Masters, he had some trump cards in his hands, and it was not difficult for him to escape.

But now, he was not only facing the monster ape.

Zhang Ruochen, standing not far away, was fiercely staring at him. It was almost impossible for him to escape.

“It seems that I can only ask for help from the Evil Wood Palace.”

Master Qingmu fell backward quickly and took out a purple scroll. He then hit it toward the sky.

Under the urging of supernatural power, the purple scroll was opened. A light column rushed out of the gathered Spiritual Qi of wood nature with a swooshing sound. It pierced through the cloud as if it could reach the Ninth Heaven.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the purple scroll and felt the most primitive and pure power of wood nature.

Was the scroll made of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, one of the five Spirit Treasures?

When Zhang Ruochen was ready to seize it, with a banging sound, the purple scroll exploded and turned into a purple mist that dissipated in the air.

The light column connected the ground and the sky. It could be seen clearly even if one stood five hundred kilometers away.

Chapter 416 - Senior Sister Apprentice Yanchen

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

500 kilometers away.

Master Shenhai, the Palace Master of Evil Wood Palace, stood on the edge of a cliff. He looked afar and saw a purple light column shooting up to the sky towards the southeast.

Master Shenhai squinted his eyes. He spoke to himself, “How could this happen?”

Nie Wenlong sat on a stone table not far from him, and he also looked at the direction of the light column. He grinned and said, “Master Shenhai, it seems that Master Qingmu has encountered some troubles. Should I go help?”

Master Shenhai looked cold and serious. He said, “It’s only a small matter, Your Excellency. You don’t need to worry about it. I will send someone to help right now.”

A moment later, another Master King of Evil Wood Palace received an order from Master Shenhai. He immediately rushed to the direction of the light column.

Nie Wenlong was somewhat curious and said, “The young masters of the Kunlun’s Field are descending on the Five Elements Primitive World in a large number. The major forces are ought to be fully prepared to defend themselves. How could someone dare to have the idea of attacking the Evil Wood Palace?”

Master Shenhai also revealed a confused expression and said, “Your Excellency, do you think it is the master of Kunlun’s Field?”

Nie Wenlong instantly shook his head and said, “Impossible. This time, all the young students who came to Five Elements Primitive World are not true masters except me. No one can threaten a superior of Master King level. Unless... dozens of students come together to form a Combined Attack. Only in this way will Master Qingmu send out a signal of help. However, this possibility is even smaller.”

Nie Wenlong had been practicing in the Saint Academy for 10 years before he got his current strength.

Other students had not yet entered the Saint Academy. Even if some of them had a higher level of cultivation, there was still a big gap between them.

In ten years, the growth did not just mean in cultivation, but also in the advanced martial technique, the accumulation of fighting experience, and the understanding of Martial Arts.

Even though some people upgraded themselves forcibly by talents and treasures, there was not enough time for them to practice the martial technique. For such a warrior, their actual combat capability was probably be worse than those who were lower in the realm below theirs.

Therefore, Nie Wenlong could be sure that none of those students would threaten Master Qingmu. Even Zhang Ruochen, the Buddha Emperor’s descendant and Luo Shuihan, the Holy Body of Golden Light, were incapable of that.

CRACK!

Nie Wenlong took a deep breath. A purple light ring rushed out from above his head. The wood-natured Spiritual Qi in heaven and earth madly condensed toward him.

A rustling sound came from the ground around the stone table. A bunch of emerald grass grew out at a speed that is a hundred times the normal speed. They quickly grew up to more than 33 centimeters tall.

Master Shenhai exposed a surprised expression at the sight of this scene, “Amazing. He has practiced into a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit in such a short time.”

Master Shenhai also had practiced into a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit when he reached the King of Master Realm (Fish-dragon Realm).

Master Nie apparently did not reach the King of Master Realm, but he actually succeeded in practicing into a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit. Were all Monks in Kunlun's Field so powerful?

Master Shenhai did not know that Nie Wenlong could become a Saint and enter the top 10,000 places on the Heaven Board. He was an extremely talented genius. It was not difficult for him to practice into a treasured body successfully.

Nie Wenlong stood up and took a deep breath. He smiled slightly, "It indeed saves me from 10 years' hard practice. My martial cultivation seems to advance again, and I have already touched the threshold of the Fish-dragon Realm. I believe it won't take me long to break through the realm."

Moreover, Nie Wenlong's strength also improved greatly when he practiced into a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit. He should now possess the strength to confront the top 1,000 masters on the Heaven Board.

In other words, Nie Wenlong was already one of the top masters among Saintly Beings who were in the same realm.

After all, there were not too many young warriors who could practice into the treasured bodies in the entire Kunlun's Field.

"Master Shenhai, thank you for your Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood. You'd better prepare some more of these treasures. If you can present them to the Half-Saint Patriarch of the Saint Xu Gentry, your future will be so much brighter." Nie Wenlong said.

Master Shenhai showed a bitter smile, "It takes 10,000 years to get half a kilogram of the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewoods. The entire Evil Wood Palace has collected only a little of it for thousands of years. And with the consumption of each generation, there are less than 50 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood in Evil Wood Palace left."

Nie Wenlong did not believe what Master Shenhai had said. There were definitely more than 50 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood in Evil Wood Palace. Master Shenhai just did not want to offer them.

Of course, Nie Wenlong wasn't too bothered by it. He had already practiced into a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit. His future was bright, and he would not stay in such a small place like Five Elements Primitive World.

And if he killed Zhang Ruochen, it would be another great merit on his name.

...

Master Qingmu was heavily injured with his fight against the monster ape. The battle between them had only went on for 15 minutes.

He wanted to run away, but he was slowed down by Zhang Ruochen who was wielding the Holy Sword. Then he was caught up by the monster ape.

With his hair disheveled and his face full of blood, Master Qingmu kept swinging the crystal wand. He thought that as long as he could delay for a moment, the reinforcements could possibly arrive. At that time, this situation would be reversed.

Zhang Ruochen certainly discovered that Master Qingmu was delaying for time, so he did not give him any opportunity.

"It's time to end his life."

Holding the Holy Sword, Zhang Ruochen rushed to left side of Master Qingmu and displayed one move called Soul-repose Shadowing.

Master Qingmu was severely wounded and exhausted. How could he block the Holy Sword?

"No..."

Master Qingmu gave out a chilling and loud scream.

The Holy Sword chopped off the crystal wand. The cold sword edge fell on Master Qingmu's head and tore his body in half.

Zhang Ruochen took the sword back, and there was no stain of blood on the sword.

“Master Qingmu had almost reached the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. I can get 1,000 military merits by killing him.”

Zhang Ruochen picked up Master Qingmu’s Holy Staff that was cut in half. A piece of the purple wood bar of cloud pattern was mounted inside the Holy Staff.

Holding that piece of wood bar in his hand, he could slightly smell the delicate fragrance.

A slight smell of it would comfort people physically and mentally.

Zhang Ruochen opened his Skyeeye and saw streaks of Spiritual Qi of wood nature which were continuously sent out from the wood bar.

“This should be the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, but unfortunately there were only 250 grams of it, which were far from enough to practice into a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit.”

Zhang Ruochen picked up the piece of wood bar and stood up. He returned the Holy Sword to Huang Yanchen and said, “The masters of Evil Wood Palace should be here soon. Senior sister apprentice Huang, we must leave here now.”

Huang Yanchen took back the Holy Sword and looked coldly at Zhang Ruochen. She said, “You haven’t answered my previous question yet. Did you stand there and watch me being chased on purpose?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “If I really did, why would I save you? Senior sister apprentice Huang...”

“Call me Huang Yanchen, ” Huang Yanchen said.

Zhang Ruochen stopped smiling and remained silent for a moment. He said, “It should not be long before the deadline of the Three-year Agreement?”

Huang Yanchen nodded and dared not look directly at Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. She slightly lowered her head and said, “It

should be soon! By the end of the third round of the exam, we must start the preparations of the marriage.”

“Hmmm!”

Zhang Ruochen said.

Huang Yanchen raised her head and showed a pair of cold eyes. She said, “If you really don’t want to, I won’t force you. Anyway, I’m not without a pursuer. Xu Qing of Saint Xu Gentry has been chasing after me for a long time, but I just ignored him.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I literally just killed him!”

Huang Yanchen widened her eyes and was both delighted and curious. She asked tentatively, “Did you kill him because he was trying to ask me out?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “How would that possible? He wanted to kill me first. Even if I didn’t kill him, he would hire stronger people to kill me.”

Huang Yanchen was a little disappointed. She said, “Oh. I see.”

Zhang Ruochen said again, “Well, you are certainly one of the reasons. After all, he united Evil Wood Palace to bother you first. In order to prevent him from continuing to bother you in the future, I certainly cannot let him live.”

Hearing these words, Huang Yanchen was very pleased. She felt a pang of sweetness as if she just tasted honey.

For the first time, she found out that talking about murder could be so romantic.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen still had some feelings about Huang Yanchen.

However, he still could not accurately judge whether it was Huang Yanchen or the shadow of Chi Yao that he loved.

Chi Yao was as cold and proud as Huang Yanchen. They had many similarities in their characters.

However, although Chi Yao was cold, arrogant, and looked down upon all men, she was very gentle to Zhang Ruochen.

They grew up together and were each other's childhood sweethearts. Their soul was closely linked. She was definitely the special person in Zhang Ruochen's heart.

It was precisely because of this, that when Zhang Rouchen was killed by Chi Yao, he could not believe that she was the one who did it.

When Zhang Ruochen came to life again, he thought of countless possibilities. Perhaps someone pretended to be Chi Yao, or maybe that he did not see clearly at the last moment.

However, he rejected them all eventually.

Zhang Ruochen could only think that maybe he never really knew Chi Yao.

Pocketing his thoughts, Zhang Ruochen took a long breath. Looking at the pair of cold yet beautiful eyes of Huang Yanchen, Zhang Ruochen said, "Senior sister apprentice Yanchen, we really should leave now!"

Hearing the address of "senior sister apprentice Yanchen", Huang Yanchen was still somewhat dissatisfied. She did not force Zhang Ruochen, because she knew that it was really difficult for Zhang Ruochen to change his words immediately.

It was a great progress to make him call her senior sister apprentice Yanchen, which at least proved that she had a place in his heart.

If Zhang Ruochen had no affection for her at all, he would not change his words with his temperament.

"Whatever you say."

Huang Yanchen said as softly as possible.

However, when she finished, she still felt awkward and could not help but pursed her red lips.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen seemed to feel something. He looked up into the distance.

The Skyeye in his glabella emerged with a loud bang.

"What happened?"

Seeing Zhang Ruochen's face, Huang Yanchen asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I had told you to leave earlier, but you did not listen to me. Now, it's not easy to run now. Another superior in the Fish-dragon Realm is approaching, and, his strength exceeds Master Qingmu and should also be a master of the Evil Wood Palace."

Chapter 417 - Extravagant Life

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen took out the Half-Saint bone bead and handed it to Huang Yanchen in case of accidents.

He owned Dragon Pearl, which had superior defensive power. Though the Half-Saint bone bead was also very powerful, it was not essential to him.

“I lend the Holy Sword to you.”

Huang Yanchen put a hand into her long blue hair, removed the White Jade Hairpin and handed it to Zhang Ruochen.

“It’s not necessary. It’s enough to deal with him by using the Violet Thunder Sword.”

Zhang Ruochen was very confident and calm as if he had already had countermeasures.

“Swish!”

Master Zuxin ruled the Spiritual Qi of wood nature, flying in the sky, and came above Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. When he saw the corpses of the Master Qingmu and the masters of the Evil Wood Palace, he was boiling with rage.

“Who are you? Don’t you know the end of fighting against the Evil Wood Palace?”

With supernatural power, Master Zuxin’s voice became thundering. He uttered words like thrilling thunders, which vibrated the Spiritual Qi of heaven and earth.

In particular, Huang Yanchen felt pain in eardrums, just like a divine drum beating in the ears. Her whole body was boiling with vital energy and blood.

In fact, she was not weak. Instead, she was enough to compete with the warriors of the Completion of Heaven. But, the cultivation of Master Zuxin was too deep, so that she was injured by the power of sound.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the Master Zuxin who was flying about 33 meters high above the ground. He was fearless because there was a Celestial Bodyshield which could resist the power of sound waves. He said, "It's amazing that you can fly in the sky based on your cultivation. In my opinion, you've cultivated into Treasured Body of Wood Spirit and can control the Spiritual Qi of wood nature, so you can fly in the sky even if your cultivation hasn't reached the Half-Saint Realm."

Under normal circumstances, only those who reached the Half-Saint Realm could mobilize the Spiritual Qi and fly in the air.

However, some talented practitioners refined into special physical qualities, so that they could control the Spiritual Qi of heaven and earth and fly across the sky.

Master Qingmu and Master Zuxin were both at the first change of the Fish-dragon Realm. Master Zuxin had practiced the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit, so his strength was far beyond Master Qingmu.

Zhang Ruochen brandished the Violet Thunder Sword to form the shape of a flower and pointed it to Master Zuxin, saying, "There's nothing more to be said. Let's fight!"

Master Zuxin sneered and said, "Junior, you're wrong in supposing that you can fight with me since you have killed Master Qingmu. To tell the truth, it's easy for me to kill Master Qingmu. So it is with you."

"Root of Heaven and Earth."

Master Zuxin mobilized the Spiritual Qi of wood nature to the top of the crystal wand. He pointed to the ground with the wand. In a flash, a large green tree grew out of the ground.

The trunks, branches, and roots of the big tree grew thicker and thicker. It became a towering tree of 100 meters high.

“WOOSH!”

Leaves were sharp like knives. From all directions, they hit Zhang Ruochen fiercely.

At the foot of Zhang Ruochen was a blood wave with a diameter of nine meters. In the blood wave, the Nine Handle Blood Sword, one dragon, and one elephant were flying. The incoming branches and leaves were constantly crushed into pieces.

“Boom!”

As Master Zuxin waved the crystal wand, a giant tree as heavy as a millstone was immediately formed. It weighed in several tens of thousands of kilograms and flew to hit Zhang Ruochen.

The giant tree smashed the blood wave under Zhang Ruochen’s foot with a crackle. Blood swords, blood dragons, and blood elephant were completely turned into smoke.

Zhang Ruochen immediately waved the Violet Thunder Sword to straightly cut off the giant tree. However, he was shaken by the powerful force and flew back about 66 meters away.

“How strong the power is! If I didn’t use the power of Martial Soul, I wouldn’t be able to withstand ten moves.”

Zhang Ruochen only felt pain in his arms. His jaw of hand was torn by that force and kept bleeding.

“It was no more than that.”

Master Zuxin smiled coldly and his despise for Zhang Ruochen became a little more. He stepped on the ground and chased after Zhang Ruochen.

Wherever he trod with his feet, a metal-colored vine rushed out of the earth. It then turned into a combat whip to lash Zhang Ruochen.

“Snap!”

He gave a lash with the combat whip in the air, which suddenly generated a large spark.

If someone was lashed by the combat whip, the wound it caused would be imaginable.

“Among all weapons, whip techniques break sword techniques. Kid, you have nowhere to escape.”

Master Zuxin managed eighteen combat whips and simultaneously lashed Zhang Ruochen to block all his retreats. Whichever direction he escaped to, he would be whipped.

“Bump!”

Zhang Ruochen cut off three combat whips at a time, but he still failed to escape.

Two combat whips cracked and lashed him in the chest, and the Celestial Bodysield was pierced through.

Zhang Ruochen was tossed out. When he was about to fall into the river, a current of Genuine Qi suddenly turned into wind power and spouted from his body's pores to gently support his body.

His body was like a leaf, fluttering down to the surface of the river. He touched the surface of the water with tiptoe and engendered ripples.

Zhang Ruochen looked at his chest and saw his specially refined Silvery Martial Robe was pierced by the combat whip. There left two whip scars, below which the skin could be clearly seen.

However, Zhang Ruochen was not injured under the protection of Dragon Pearl.

“Haha! Go to die, Kid!”

Master Zuxin followed up a victory with hot pursuit. He jumped up and rushed to Zhang Ruochen who was standing above the water level, trying to give him a fatal blow.

He did not know that the reason why Zhang Ruochen had not used the power of Martial Soul was that he wanted to bring him here.

Seeing Master Zuxin swooping around, Zhang Ruochen slightly upturned and began to mobilize his spiritual power.

“Boom!”

When Master Zuxin flew halfway, from the water surface below him, a huge bubble suddenly poured out and burst. The monster ape quickly rushed out of the water and punched Master Zuxin’s chest.

“Puff!”

Master Zuxin spat out blood and half of his bones cracked.

The monster ape was so powerful that Master Zuxin was punched to the vault of heaven of two hundred meters high.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen, who stood over the water level, had completely mobilized his spiritual power and pointed a finger to the sky.

A streak of purple thunderbolt flew across the sky like a lightning dragon and struck Master Zuxin.

“Bump!”

In a flash, Master Zuxin was struck by and penetrated by the thunderbolt.

Master Zuxin was burning like a lantern. When he fell to the ground, he had become pieces of charred flesh.

“Awoo!”

The monster ape stood by the river and shouted so loud that the waves ran high.

Zhang Ruochen stretched out his arms and caught the falling crystal wand. Then, he mobilized his Qi with both hands to break it into two pieces with a bang.

In this crystal wand, there was indeed a small piece of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood about half a catty.

After packing up the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, Zhang Ruochen walked in the waves, returned to the shore, and met with Huang Yanchen.

“Evil Wood Palace continuously lost two kings of masters, they’re not going to tolerate. It is said that the Palace Master is an extremely powerful figure. He is beyond the First Change

in the Fish-dragon Realm. We'd better leave this place quickly," Huang Yanchen said with a little worry.

Master Qingmu and Master Zuxin were just in the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, so their strength was not too strong.

Of course, Master Zuxin had practiced the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit. He would not suffer serious loss even if he fought against practitioners of the Second Change or the Third Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Zhang Ruochen's instant success was attributed to the monster ape's surprise attack.

If not, it was uncertain whether Zhang Ruochen could kill him, even he used the power of Martial Soul and collaborated with the monster ape.

The Evil Wood Palace's Master was far greater than the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. Moreover, he must have practiced the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit.

If a person was one realm above the others, their difference would be double.

Even if Evil Wood Palace's Master was only in the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, Zhang Ruochen had no ability to resist now.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes gleamed with wisdom, saying, "We don't need to have a direct confrontation with Evil Wood Palace's Master. But, we must seize its Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood. I have an idea that we can have a try."

"What is the idea?" Huang Yanchen said.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and took out the two broken crystal wands of Master Qingmu and Master Zuxin, saying, "If we lure Evil Wood Palace's Master away from the palace, we'll have a chance to seize Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, right?"

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen sat on the monster ape's shoulder and came to Fengling City, which was five hundred miles away from the Evil Wood Palace.

Among the indigenous masters in Fengling City, those who had attained a cultivation above the Completion of the Earth Realm, were almost killed by the talented students of The School of the Martial Market.

After those masters were killed, the whole FengLing City became a chaotic city without law, order, and morality. Murder and arson could be seen everywhere.

Of course, there were also some people who lived quite comfortable like a local despot. They ate the best meat, drank the best wine, and held the most beautiful women in their arms.

For example, Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong lived such a life.

When Zhang Ruochen saw them in the Duke's Mansion, both of them were living an extravagant life.

Chang Qiqi was surrounded by a large group of servants, and the vast majority were young and beautiful women. Some who sat in his arms and offered kisses played and laughed with him. Some who kneeled on his left and right sides handed glasses ceaselessly. Some good-shaped women danced in sexy and colorful clothes.

Si Xingkong sat on the other side with 36 huge wine jars and tasted various kinds of wine. He was very joyful.

Because they were masters, they were respected by all people, and no one dared to provoke them.

“Bump!”

The monster ape hit the gate of the Duke's Mansion and the gate was tossed out like two big iron sheets. They fell in front of Chang Qiqi with a thud, and the pretty women surrounding him screamed in fear.

“Who?”

Chang Qiqi sent out a powerful Genuine Qi, and those women were blown off. He suddenly stood up with hand on the hilt.

Zhang Ruochen walked in with his hands clasped behind the back and laughed, saying “You two really know how to enjoy

yourselves. Do you want to stay in the Five Elements
Primitive World forever?”

Chapter 418 - Go Into Action

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Chang Qiqi looked relieved when he saw Zhang Ruochen. He stabbed the sword back to the ground again and laughed loudly, “Haha! Junior Fellow Apprentice Zhang, you are finally here! The Eldest Brother and I have occupied Fengling City. Although there are still other students in the city, they couldn’t be counted as our opponents at all. Thus, we’re the ruler here in Fengling City.”

He continued, “Our military merits have reached a hundred points, so we’ve passed the third round of assessments. We decided to enjoy ourselves in the remaining twenty or so days. We would never have had such an opportunity back in the Saint Academy. We would be Buddhist lay disciples back there.

“Junior Fellow Apprentice Zhang, come and enjoy life with us. Tell us if you want any type of woman, whether a petite and dainty one, or if you prefer someone who’s thicc. We can surely send her to your bed before it gets dark.”

Chang Qiqi patted his chest and vowed with confidence.

The next moment, as soon as he saw Huang Yanchen come through the door, his excited facial expression crumbled and gave a hollow laugh, “Well ... Commandery Princess Yanchen is here too. What a coincidence!”

Huang Yanchen glanced at the surrounding sexy women with her clear blue eyes. She left a cold “hmp” and said, “Men are really just no good. Once a man has enough strength, he’ll expose all his evil habits.”

Chang Qiqi smiled awkwardly and gestured with his eyes. Then, those sexy women immediately left.

At the same time, Chang Qiqi whispered with sound transmission to Zhang Ruochen, “Junior Fellow Apprentice Zhang, I’m sure I’ll build a city and become a true city governor. By then, I’ll seek countless beauties, and I’ll invite you to my place and be my guest. Since the Senior Sister Apprentice is here, we can only restrain ourselves today to avoid making her unhappy.”

Zhang Ruochen just smiled and didn’t say anything.

Huang Yanchen had profound cultivation, so she was certain that Chang Qiqi was speaking with to Zhang Ruochen through sound transmission. She said coldly, “Senior Fellow Apprentice Chang, what are you saying that you can’t say in front of me?”

Chang Qiqi cracked a laugh and said, “Nothing, nothing, I told Junior Fellow Apprentice Zhang that I’ll thoroughly rectify my errors. I’m determined to strive for martial arts and be an honest person.”

Huang Yanchen stared at Si Xingkong and said, “Eldest Brother, you’ve always been mature and reliable. How can you mess around with Senior Fellow Apprentice Chang? Don’t you know that the Five Elements Primitive is extremely dangerous? Moreover, the Evil Wood Palace is only five hundred miles away from Darksplitting Mountain, so they may invade Fengling City at any time. How can you resist a King of Masters with only your strength?”

Si Xingkong’s long hair was disheveled and he was still tasting wine. He laughed, “Junior Chang and I have completely refined the dragon’s blood, and before we came to the Five Elements Primitive, our Master gave each of us a treasure. So, with our strength, even if we can’t defeat the King of Masters, it won’t be difficult for us to escape.”

The Master Si Xingkong mentioned was the Demi-saint Alan of the Saint Academy.

Si Xingkong had always been a casual person, so he never forced himself to earn military merits by killing people. He would rather drink two more glasses of good wine than kill two more indigenous people.

Huang Yanchen stamped her feet and got infuriated. She said, “You’ve only accumulated a hundred points of military merits. Don’t you think that you can indulge in a life of pleasure and comfort without thinking about making progress? Why don’t you strive for being listed on the Heaven Board?”

Chang Qiqi sighed, “It requires 10,000 points to be ranked on the Heaven Board. It’s impossible to accumulate so many military merits in the Five Elements Primitive World.”

Si Xingkong said, “In fact, Junior Chang and I dominated Fengling City in order to win a reputation. This way, you can easily find the place and meet up with us. Then, we could collaborate to attack and occupy Evil Wood Palace and seize the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood.”

Chang Qiqi nodded eagerly and said, “The Eldest Brother and I have already recruited fifteen talented students. They now completely follow our leadership. Since you’ve arrived, we now have an extremely talented master. Now we can attack the Evil Wooden Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen squinted and said, “Are the fifteen talented students reliable? Why did they choose to follow you?”

Zhang Ruochen was a little puzzled. After all, those students who passed through the first two rounds of the examination must be top geniuses in the Eastern Region.

Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong were not the descendants of Saint Gentry. How could those haughty geniuses be willing to yield to them?

Chang Qiqi laughed, “Although we are talented and strong, as you said, those talented students are still not willing to submit to us.”

“And there’s nothing we can do since we’re the students of Omen Ridge. Moreover, Among Six Young Kings of the new generation of the Eastern Region, one is our Junior Fellow

Apprentice and one is our Junior Sister Apprentice. Therefore, upon hearing our names, they immediately surrendered themselves to us and are willing to be our errand boys. Haha!”

Zhang Ruochen and Luo Shuihan had already been household names in the Eastern Region. They had become countless young warriors’ idols.

Correspondingly, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi’s statuses grew, and with Chang Qiqi’s eloquent and persuasive tongue, a large group of talented students were cajoled to his side.

Since they were able to follow two young kings, they would never need to worry about their future.

Zhang Ruochen finally understood what was going on and laughed, “We’re certainly going to attack the Evil Wood Palace, but before that, there’s still one more thing to do.”

Si Xingkong looked seriously and asked, “What’s the matter?”

“Help you improve your strength,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Chang Qiqi sighed and said, “With the help of our Master, we have completely refined the Dragon’s Blood. We’ve just reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, so it may not be easy to advance our martial cultivation again in the next twenty days.”

Huang Yanchen also nodded. She had reached the peak of the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm for a long time. However, she had not yet reached the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

She seemed to be far away from the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

Zhang Ruochen took out a Black Glazed Crystal weighted five kilogram and said, “What if we had this?”

The three people simultaneously looked at the thing in Zhang Ruochen’s hands.

Although they had never seen the Black Glazed Crystal, they could feel the aura of the most original and pure power of water nature emitted from the spinel.

Chang Qiqi licked his lips and his eyes lit up, saying, “Is this... Is this Black Glazed Crystal, one of the most original Spirit Treasure in the Five Elements Primitive World?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded.

Having received an affirmative reply, Chang Qiqi immediately swooped down on and grabbed the Black Glazed Crystal from Zhang Ruochen’s hands. He carried it in his arms and said with excitement, “Oh, my dear Junior Fellow Apprentice Zhang, where did you find such a big Black Glazed Crystal?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “When I came to the Five Elements Primitive World, I saw a pool, jumped in, and dug out a heap of spinels.”

“What did you say? It’s that simple?”

Chang Qiqi stared at Zhang Ruochen with envy, jealousy, and hatred. he said, “You’re so lucky, Junior Fellow Apprentice Zhang. Why didn’t I find that pool? Surely no one can be as lucky as you!”

Zhang Ruochen said it like it was no big deal. However, Si Xingkong did not think that it was so easy. Where there were treasures, there must be a savage beast. If Chang Qiqi really met the pool and jumped down, he probably wouldn’t even know how he died.

Chang Qiqi held the Black Glazed Crystal for a while. In the end, he sighed and returned it to Zhang Ruochen, saying, “What a precious treasure! I guess that you’ve only dug out few of these. I don’t want it anymore!”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and refused to take back the piece of Black Glazed Crystal. He moved his fingers and took out another two Black Glazed Crystals that also weighted more than five kilogram from the Storage Ring. Then, he threw one to Huang Yanchen and Si Xingkong each.

Chang Qiqi was very surprised. He doubted if they were actually Black Glazed Crystal. How could such treasures be gifted so casually like throwing stones?

Si Xingkong was also shocked after receiving the Black Glazed Crystal. He said, “Junior Fellow Apprentice Zhang,

how many Black Glazed Crystals did you get?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head with a smile and said, “Feel free to refine as many as you can, and it depends on your strength. However, don’t waste it.”

“Anyone who wastes a gram of such a treasure has to be stupid.”

Chang Qiqi sat on the ground, held a Black Glazed Crystal, and immediately began refining.

Huang Yanchen and Si Xingkong also followed closely and began to refine Black Glazed Crystals.

Zhang Ruochen ordered the monster ape to stay in Duke’s Mansion to guard those three.

Zhang Ruochen left the Fengling City and rushed to the Darksplitting Mountain where the Evil Wood Palace was located. It took him half a day to find and seize a master of the Evil Wooden Palace.

The master was a short thin man who looked like fifty or sixty years old. He had almost reached the Initial Stage of the Earth Realm. In the Evil Wood Palace, he could be counted as a moderate master.

Zhang Ruochen pointed his sword at his neck and asked, “What’s your name?”

“Wu Wu ..., Wu Teng, master, I’m Foreign Affairs Presbyter of the Evil Wood Palace ... Are there some misunderstandings?” Master Wu Teng knelt on the ground and shivered with fear.

“There’re no misunderstandings. I’m looking for you.”

Zhang Ruochen took out two elongated wood caskets and threw them to Master Wu Teng. “I want you to send these two caskets to Master Shenhai, the Master of Evil Wood Palace. Can you do that?”

“Ye..yes, I can!”

Master Wu Teng raised his head and carefully asked, “What’s your name, sir? What are these things that you are sending to

the Palace Master?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “The two wood caskets contain the crystal wands of the Master Qingmu and the Master Zuxin. However, they have already been killed by me.”

“What?”

Master Wu Teng was weak and limp with fear. There were only four masters in the Evil Wood Palace, and Zhang Ruochen had already killed two.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Tell Master Shenhai that I’m Zhang Ruochen. Ten days later, I’ll wait for him in the Crescent City. I hope to have a fair fight with him.”

“O ... Okay ...”

Overwhelmed by Zhang Ruochen’s imposing manner, Master Wu Teng immediately lowered his head with his face pressed against the ground.

When he looked up again, Zhang Ruochen had already disappeared.

“Where did he go? Just who in the world is he? Is he even human?”

Master Wu Teng wiped the sweat from his forehead. He kept eyes fixed on the two wood caskets and opened them. Surely, he saw that in there, were the two crystal wands of the Master Qingmu and Master Zuxin. However, the two crystal wands had been broken.

Master Wu Teng immediately closed the two wooden caskets, held them in his arms, and hurried to the Evil Wood Palace.

Chapter 419 - Flounder

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Master Shenhai was raging in the Evil Wood Palace.

The master who was dispatched to investigate about the news came back. Someone discovered more than a hundred bodies of masters from the Evil Wood Palace on the battlefield.

Master Qingmu was also dead.

It did not matter that the other masters were killed. However, how could Master Qingmu die?

There were only four masters in the Evil Wooden Palace. All of them were the backbones of the Palace. When one died, the foundation of the Evil Wooden Palace would be unstable, and the strength would be weakened greatly.

Moreover, they had also lost in touch with Master Zuxin who rushed to rescue. This made Master Shenhai have a bad feeling.

“Damn, who on earth are these people?”

His eyes gleamed with keenness and anger. He slapped the copper pillar in front of him and made a huge dent.

In the palace, those other masters kept silent out of fear. They all lowed their heads and no one dared to make a single noise.

Suddenly, rapid sounds of footsteps was heard from outside the room. A burst of rapid footsteps was heard from outside.

“Palace Master... Palace Master... There’s an emergency...”

With two wood caskets, Master Wu Teng rushed in from the outside, tumbling and scrambling.

“What’s the matter? Why are you so nervous?” Master Shenhai said coldly.

Seeing that Master Shenhai was sitting on the top like Demon Lord, Master Wu Teng was immediately scared and kneeled on the ground. He held the wood caskets in both hands and lifted them forward. He said with a shaking voice, “Your Palace Master, Master Qingmu and Master Zuxin have been killed by Zhang Ruochen and their crystal wands are in the wood caskets.”

“What?”

The blue veins of his face bulged. He swung his arms and a surge of supernatural power poured out to open the lids of the two wood caskets.

Two broken crystal wands fell from the caskets.

They were really the holy wands of Master Qingmu and Master Zuxin.

Two Masters actually died in one day. Master Shenhai flew into a rage. His robust supernatural power was released from his body, almost tearing the entire Evil Wood Palace apart.

“Where’s Zhang Ruochen? I’ll tear him to pieces.”

Master Shenhai shouted madly, forming a hand with great supernatural power, and lifted Master Wu Teng across the air.

When suspended in mid-air, Master Wu Teng felt that his body was pulled by an invisible force like dismemberment by five horses. He panicked and quickly said, “Palace Master, please spare my life... He said... he’ll wait for you in Crescent City to have a fair fight with you ten days later.”

“Chh!”

Master Shenhai twisted his five fingers to mobilize supernatural power. Master Wu Teng’s body was torn into pieces and turned into a blood fog.

“Huaa!”

Master Shenhai rushed out the Evil Wood Palace and proceeded to the Crescent City.

Nie Wenlong immediately rushed forward to stop Master Shenhai and said, "Even if you proceed to the Crescent City now, you'll certainly not find Zhang Ruochen. Since he asks you to fight after ten days, why not wait?"

Master Shenhai snorted and said, "We lost two Masters in succession. How can I let this go? I can't wait for a single moment."

Nie Wenlong shook his head and said, "How can you flounder after two Masters died? If Zhang Ruochen schemes to lure you away from your base, the entire Evil Wood Palace be in danger."

"What do you know? The reason why Zhang Ruochen decides to fight me ten days later is definitely that he doesn't have the confidence to beat me. In these next ten days, he'll surely set an ambush in the Crescent City to attack me. So I must take him down before he's prepared."

Nie Wenlong was speechless and cursed in his heart. If that Zhang guy wasn't prepared, then why would he come to declare war so early?

Nie Wenlong still needed to utilize the Evil Wood Palace to deal with Zhang Ruochen. The deeper the hatred between the Evil Wood Palace and Zhang Ruochen was, the better it would be for him, so he didn't speak out those words.

He said, "Since Palace Master has determined to rush to the Crescent City right now, there must be someone to guard the Evil Wood Palace. I'm willing to stay and help you guard it."

In any case, Nie Wenlong was only an outsider, so Master Shenhai did not trust him.

Therefore, prior to his departure, Master Shenhai invited another Master named Master Masheng, who secluded himself for refining, in order to look over Nie Wenlong.

Seven days later, Master Shenhai returned to the Evil Wood Palace. As Nie Wenlong said, he did not find Zhang Ruochen in the Crescent City.

"Was Evil Wood Palace attacked in the last seven days when I was away?"

Upon his arrival, Master Shenhai immediately asked Nie Wenlong.

He immediately returned for fear that he was lured out and the Evil Wood Palace was attacked.

Nie Wenlong said, "Everything is all right. Though several disciples came to provoke us, they've been killed by me."

On the way to and from the Crescent City, Master Shenhai had calmed down. He was confused, "What on earth is Zhang Ruochen thinking? He has neither attacked the Evil Wood Palace nor set an ambush in the Crescent City. Is he really that confident to fight against me?"

Nie Wenlong was also confused.

In the past, he would definitely not believe that Zhang Ruochen could challenge Master Shenhai.

However, if Zhang Ruochen could kill Master Qingmu and Master Zuxin, he might indeed have reached an incredible realm. Therefore, it was entirely possible for him to fight on even terms with Master Shenhai.

Now, even Nie Wenlong was puzzled and had no idea what Zhang Ruochen's plan was.

"Does he merely want to kill Master Shenhai for the huge military merits that would come from winning the fight?"

Master Shenhai had reached the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. If a warrior of the Heaven Realm could kill him, the warrior could obtain 10,000 points of military merits and be directly listed on the Heaven Board.

Certainly, it was almost impossible for a warrior of the Heaven Realm to kill a master who had reached the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

The Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm was called "Skin Refining to Gold." In other words, the skin was like metal and stone, and no knife and sword could damage it. Moreover, it could stay intact even when standing in the fire.

Only by using Holy Weapons, a warrior of the Heaven Realm could break the defense of a practitioner of the Second Change

in the Fish-dragon Realm.

ALso, even if you had mastered a Holy Weapon, the practitioner of the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm would not just stand still to let you cut him down.

Nie Wenlong said, “Palace Master, you only have three days left until the time appointed by Zhang Ruochen. What’s your plan? Will you go to the Crescent City?”

“Yes. Why not?”

Master Shenhai looked solemn and said, “Zhang Ruochen has killed two Masters of the Evil Wood Palace, if I can’t kill him, I won’t be able to assuage our anger.

“However, if Zhang Ruochen attacks the Evil Wood Palace during this period, what should we do?” Nie Wenlong asked.

Master Shenhai replied, “If he really wants to lure me away, he would have already attacked the Evil Wood Palace in the past few days. Since he didn’t do this, it means that he really wants to fight me straight on.”

Master Shenhai smiled as if he had seen through Zhang Ruochen’s mind. He said, “After killing Master Qingmu and Master Zuxin, he must be full of himself, so he wants to kill me and obtain more military merits. However, he’s afraid of the array of the Evil Wood Palace. Therefore, he doesn’t dare to challenge me in an upright manner. In the end, he can only ask me to fight in the Crescent City.”

“He doesn’t know that there’s an essential gap between the First and the Second changes in the Fish-dragon Realm. Wait and see. Three days later, I will have his head.”

Nie Wenlong frowned slightly and was a bit displeased.

He came to the Five Elements Primitive World to kill Zhang Ruochen.

Now, Zhang Ruochen had not been killed yet. On the other hand, Xu Qing, the successor of Saint Xu Gentry, was already killed by Zhang Ruochen.

If he couldn’t bring Zhang Ruochen’s head back, Demi-saint Sandao would definitely not make things easy for him.

Nie Wenlong said sternly, “In case of an emergency, I’ll go to the Crescent City together with you.”

Master Shenhai gave him a glance and gently nodded, saying, “Okay! Come with me to the Crescent City. There’s a holy array left by the Patriarch of the Evil Wood Palace anyway. No matter how many masters want to break through this mountain, they’re doomed to die.”

Master Shenhai gave him a glance and gently nodded, saying, “Okay! Come with me to the Crescent City. There’s a holy array left by the Patriarch of the Evil Wood Palace anyway. No matter how many masters want to break through this mountain, they’re doomed to die.”

Master Shenhai also had a grudge against Nie Wenlong.

He was satisfied that Nie Wenlong was willing to go with him to the Crescent City.

The Evil Wood Palace was handed over to Master Masheng to defend. Meanwhile, the holy array was initiated to ensure everything would be alright.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen did not go to the Crescent City. He was in the Fengling City only five hundred miles away from the Evil Wood Palace.

In the past few days, he had been perceiving the first three levels of the

Roc Martial Classics

and learning the essence of martial arts.

“Any Martial Arts Cheats can be practiced to the end. Thus, a person can find the true meaning of Laws of Martial Arts only by perceiving hundreds of martial arts and initiating one’s own martial arts.”

Although the Roc Martial Classic was a rare book at King’s Stage, it was only the first three levels. Zhang Ruochen had already absorbed its essence, though he perceived it for about twenty days in the internal space of Time and Space Spinel.

He spent another few days in practicing martial arts to merge the Roc Martial Classics into his own martial arts.

Although he had not made a breakthrough in the realm, his martial arts was more complete.

“Almost ten days had passed in the outside world. It’s now about time to attack the Evil Wood Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and lightly pointed his finger forward and the space in front of him distorted. He took a step forward and left the internal space of Time and Space Spinel.

During this time, Si Xingkong had refined two-catty Black Glazed Spinels. As a result, two years of bitter practice was saved. He had reached the peak of the advanced stage in the Heaven Realm, and he might reach the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm any time.

Chang Qiqi had refined half a kilogram of Black Glazed Spinels. As a result, one year of bitter practice was saved. He also made a great progress in martial cultivation.

Huang Yanchen had broken through to the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm during the period of practice. Therefore, she refined one and half kilogram of Black Glazed Spinels and saved three years of bitter practice. Although she had not practiced into the Treasured Body of Water Spirit, her cultivation was greatly enhanced.

“Why can’t I continue to refine Black Glazed Spinel after I’ve refined half a kilogram of spinels? My body seems to be saturated already.” Chang Qiqi held the rest Black Glazed Spinels and gave a long sigh.

It was sad that a person could not refine the Peerless Spirit Treasure he had.

Zhang Ruochen said with a smile, “When you reach the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm, you can naturally continue to refine Black Glazed Spinel to improve your physical quality and enhance your cultivation.”

Chapter 420 - The Eve of Battle

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Chang Qiqi sighed and said, “Based on my current realm, it would take years for me to break into the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.”

Si Xingkong patted Chang Qiqi’s shoulders with a smile and said, “I think that you’ll be able to break into the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm within just one month.”

“Eldest Brother, can you stop making fun of me? It would be very difficult for me to reach that even if I had two more years.” Chang Qiqi said in frustration.

Huang Yanchen seemed to be neither sad nor happy. She was still as cold as ice, saying, “Black Glazed Spinel is indeed a great treasure. If I can refine half a kilo of spinels, I may be able to practice to the legendary Treasured Body of Water Spirit. If such treasures appear in the Kunlun’s Field, even the Saint Gentries will spend tremendous efforts to seize it.”

If a treasured body emerged, it was a joyful event even for a Saint Gentry.

If ten or even dozens of treasured bodies could be created at the same time, the Saint Gentry would surely be prosperous for an era after they were fully developed.

Zhang Ruochen said, “If you practice hard enough, you’ll surely be able to practice into a Treasured Body of Water Spirit. Of course, we must discuss the plan of attacking the Evil Wood Palace now. If we succeed, we can get the Purple

Cloud-patterned Eaglewood. Perhaps we may still be able to practice into a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit in the future.”

“If we can practice into both the bodies at the same time, isn’t it a Treasured Bodies of Double Spirit?” Chang Qiqi said with excitement.

Huang Yanchen glared at him and said, “Although the Treasured Bodies of Double Spirit are much more powerful than the Treasured Body of Water Spirit, the difficulty of practice is increased multiple times. Even talented people may not be able to practice it successfully.”

The rest of the people nodded.

Si Xingkong was a little worried and said, “Also, there are lots of masters and the array left by the Half-Saint in the palace. It won’t be easy for us to break in.”

Si Xingkong’s spiritual power was also very strong as he had already reached the thirty first level. Therefore, he learned new languages very quickly. He had been communicating with indigenous people in the Five Elements Primitive World.

He also heard that a Half-Saint, who had once been born in the Evil Wood Palace, left the Mountain Protection Array.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and spoke aloud his plan.

Everyone’s eyes lit up after hearing it.

“That is to say, at this current moment, Master Shenhai should have rushed to the New Crescent City, and he isn’t in the Evil Wood Palace. Now, it’s indeed the best time to attack the Evil Wood Palace. Maybe we can find many good treasures.”

Chang Qiqi licked his lips and was itching to make a move.

Si Xingkong said, “Even if you lured Master Shenhai away, there’s still a holy array in the Evil Wood Palace. If you forced an attack, I’m afraid we would endure heavy losses.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “It’s not difficult to break the holy array. I’ll deal with it. You guys just have to wait for my signal. As soon as the signal comes, you should immediately enter the Evil Wood Palace. You can take away not only the

military merits, but also even the treasures in the Evil Wood Palace.”

After Zhang Ruochen’s departure, Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong immediately went to gather the students of the Fengling City.

Having heard that Zhang Ruochen would personally attack against the Evil Wood Palace, those students were all excited and enthusiastic. Their hearts were burning as they itched to exercise their skills.

Zhang Ruochen was one of the Six Great Kings of the new generation, known as the “Descendants of Buddhist Emperor”, so he would not do anything he’s not sure of.

Those who followed a king of the new generation would be surely able to take a share of the profits.

Not only were there those fifteen students who had previously gathered by Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong, more people joined the team after hearing the news. The team was growing bigger and stronger.

When they arrived at the Darkspilting Mountain where the Evil Wood Palace was located, the number of the students in the troop led by Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi had reached more than forty. Each of them was a master of the Heaven Realm.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the shoulder of the monster ape and held a crystal wand. He wore a black cloak with a hood extending from his shoulders to his head. His face was covered and only a yellow-brown old chin could be seen.

He even changed his aura to be chilly in order to better mimic Master Longze.

Master Masheng had once personally traveled to the Demonic Ape Ridge, hoping to win over Master Longze to be the visiting presbyter of the Evil Wood Palace.

At that time, Master Longze refused!

Now, Zhang Ruochen intended to pretend as Master Longze to seek refuge in the Evil Wood Palace. After he entered the gate,

the first thing he needed to do was to destroy the holy array.

If the holy array was broken, it would technically mean that the Evil Wood Palace was already half destroyed.

Meanwhile, he must also make sure whether Master Shenhai had really left the Evil Wood Palace or not.

Only if Master Shenhai was not there, would he be able to launch an attack against the Evil Wood Palace. Otherwise, he could only back off and change the plan.

At night, the air became extremely cold in the Darksplitting Mountain.

After Master Shenhai and Nie Wenlong left, the Evil Wood Palace was heavily guarded. Under the leadership of Master Masheng, the holy array arranged by the Patriarch was initiated, and the entire Darkspitting Mountain was enveloped in the array.

“Chh!”

A black eagle flapped its wings and flew across the sky. Suddenly, it seemed to crash on an invisible barrier.

The light of the array exploded and hit the black eagle, turning it into flying ash.

It looked like that a savage bird accidentally hit the holy array and lost its life.

Zhang Ruochen looked towards the direction in which the light of the array just flashed. He narrowed his eyes and said to himself, “It’s indeed an array arranged by a Half-Saint. Even a powerhouse of the Sixth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm would be doomed to die if caught by it.”

Afterward, he drove other several savage birds to hit the array in the mountain in order to test the strength distribution of the array and search for its weak points.

After nine attempts, he finally nodded. He had found the Array Eye. As long as it was destroyed, the holy array would also shatter.

Of course, he must first enter the holy array to destroy the Array Eye.

“It’s time to go!”

After a long while, Zhang Ruochen rode the monster ape to the mountain gate of the Evil Wood Palace.

When the masters who guarded the mountain gate saw that a ferocious monster ape coming over, all of them were scared and retreated.

Among them, a bolder master scolded, saying, “Who are you? Here’s the Evil Wood Palace. If... If you dare to break through the mountain, you will die in the holy array.”

Zhang Ruochen pulled down his hood and covered his face completely. He held a crystal stave and pointed it toward the gate.

“Swish!”

The Black Glazed Crystal inlaid in the top of the crystal stave generated the supernatural power of water nature. The force materialized into an ice spike and flew out.

Suddenly, the ice spike collided with the holy array and stopped in the void space.

With a bang, the ice spike broke down and turned into wisps of mists.

Zhang Ruochen imitated Master Longze’s voice and laughed raucously, “You’ve actually initiated the holy array. Did the Evil Wood Palace really get into such deep trouble?”

Those masters were anxious and doubtful. Someone had already rushed to report to Master Masheng.

There was a stir in the Evil Wood Palace.

The masters of the palace rushed out one after another with holy staves in their hands. They cast hostile eyes on Zhang Ruochen and the monster ape in the distance.

“Who on earth are you?”

A great master, who had reached the Completion of Heaven Realm, asked. When he saw that Zhang Ruochen did not answer him, his eyes became stern and he was going to rush out of the holy array to fight Zhang Ruochen.

“Stop.”

Master Masheng descended from the sky and stopped the great master. Then, he looked at Zhang Ruochen in the distance. He tentatively asked, “Is this Brother Longze?”

Master Masheng personally visited Master Longze in the Demonic Ape Ridge, so he was quite familiar with Master Longze’s aura.

Moreover, the monster ape in front of him seemed very powerful. It seemed to have the power to cut the mountain and split the earth. There was only one monster ape that had such cultivation in the Five Elements Continent.

Who could sit on its shoulders other than Master Longze?

In fact, masters in the Five Elements Continent only knew that there was a terrifying monster ape in Demonic Ape Ridge, but they did not know that Master Longze was his servant. Instead, many people thought that the monster ape was of Master Longze’s war beast.

Even Master Masheng thought so.

Hearing Master Masheng’s words, all the masters of the Evil Wood Palace were shocked.

“What? Is he Master Longze, the owner of Demonic Ape Ridge?”

“It’s said that he has profound cultivation and he ranks only second to Master.”

“Don’t you know? Master Longze broke through the limit of mortals fifty years ago. He’s expected to have already reached the realm of the King of Masters, but no one in the the outside world know of this.”

...

All the masters of the Evil Wood Palace reacted with a mixture of awe and fear. It was said that he was an eccentric person who had done many evils and killed many people.

Who wouldn't be afraid of such a person?

Zhang Ruochen had already disguised himself before he came to the Evil Wood Palace. His skin and body shape all changed, and he seemed to be extremely skinny. He was indeed very similar to Master Longze in appearance.

It was definitely not easy to cheat people like Master Masheng. It was important to utilize the monster ape's momentum. If a person overwhelmed his rivals, the rivals could be paralyzed to some extent.

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen firmly believed that the Evil Wood Palace would be looking to work with powerhouses like Master Longze given its current situation.

After all, the Evil Wood Palace was at its weakest time after losing two masters. It was nothing else but timely assistance to them that Master Longze came to seek refuge with them.

Zhang Ruochen gave a hollow laugh and said, "Brother Masheng, it's been a long time since we saw each other in the Demonic Ape Ridge. Recently, I've finally broken through the limits of the mortals and reached the realm of the King of the Master, so I plan to walk around. I wonder if there's any room for me here."

Master Masheng was very happy and quickly said, "Brother Longze, you more than welcome here."

Master Masheng had no doubt about Zhang Ruochen. Now, the Five Elements Primitive World was attacked by the outer demons. Even the Holy Lands of five masters struggled to protect themselves. Longze could only survive by depending on the Evil Wood Palace.

Also, the Evil Wood Palace now suffered from internal and external problems, and it was short of masters. It was the perfect time to get help from powerhouses like Longze.

Chapter 421 - Attacking the Evil Wood Palace

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen croaked and laughed, saying, “That’s good to hear. Brother Masheng, hurry up and open the holy array.”

Master Masheng glanced at “Longze” in the distance and hesitated. He had a bad feeling and said, “Palace Master ordered us not to open the holy array before he comes back. I’m afraid that you need to wait outside for a few more days...”

Zhang Ruochen’s mood changed, and he emitted a current of icing air. He pretended to be angry and snorted, saying, “Brother Masheng, You dare question me? Do you really think that I can only rely on the Evil Wooden Palace? In this case, I’ll leave and seek refuge with the Temple of Holy Water Hall.”

“Brother Longze, wait a minute.”

Master Masheng frowned and hesitated. He said to himself, “I can’t let him go. He and the monster ape will be a great help to our palace.”

“I’m only being suspicious because we recently lost so many masters.”

After giving it some more thought, Mater Masheng eventually ordered, “Open up the Holy Array. Welcome Mater Masheng into the Evil Wood Palace with our best hospitality.”

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen who was covered under the black hood showed a satisfied smile.

Master Masheng had no choice, so he had to make this decision since two masters in the Evil Wood Palace had died.

Both Longze and the monster ape were top powerhouses. If they could join the Evil Wood Palace, they could make up for the vacancy left by Master Qingmu and Master Zuxin.

“Rumble!”

The holy array began to shut down, and the Darksplitting Mountain shook violently.

After a long while, the mountains gradually became calm again.

“Welcome Master Longze.”

All the masters expect Master Masheng got down on one knee. They all held a crystal wand with one hand while pressing the left chest with the other hand to salute Zhang Ruochen.

The monster ape walked into the gate of Evil Wooden Palace with its sturdy legs.

“Brother Longze, we welcome you to join us as a member of the Evil Wooden Palace.” Master Masheng said with a smile.

“Hoho!”

Zhang Ruochen smiled evilly.

Suddenly, Zhang Rouchen’s hood was lifted by a gust of cold wind and his young face was showed.

When he saw that face, Monster Masheng was stunned for a moment.

In that moment, the Violet Thunder Sword flew out from the Storage Ring on Zhang Ruochen’s finger with a swish. It pierced through Master Masheng’s chest with a lightning tail.

“Hiss!”

A bowl-sized hole appeared on Master Masheng’s chest, and the internal organs were crushed by sword breath. He opened his eyes widely and uttered his last words, “Who ... are... you...”

Afterward, he fell flat backward with a thump.

And a king of masters died.

The Violet Thunder Sword drew a beautiful arc in midair and flew back to his hands.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the Array Eye, took the combat sword in his hand, and leaped towards the sky. He mobilized his Genuine Qi across his body and injected it into the blade. The inscription in the sword emerged and turned into dozens of thick purple lightning like lightning dragons flying around the Violet Thunder Sword.

“Break!”

Zhang Ruochen waved his sword with all his energy to hit the array eye.

“Bang!”

Several long cracks were cut into the ground by sword breath, and the most important inscriptions of the holy array were cut off.

Meanwhile, a strong counter force broke out from the holy array, and an inscription flew from the underground. By condensing the Spiritual Qi in heaven and earth, the inscription turned into a green long spear and shot Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen immediately mobilized the power of the Dragon Pearl and formed a golden barrier around himself.

“Pow!”

In an instant, the long cyan spear pierced through Zhang Ruochen’s Celestial Bodyshield and hit the defensive light screen of Dragon Pearl.

The golden light screen kept shaking as if it could not block off the long cyan spear.

“It’s so strong. This should be the residual force left by the Half-Saint who set up the array.”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression changed. He knew that he could not bear the force, so he immediately displayed the Space

Moving and teleported thirty meters away.

As the Space Moving was displayed, the long cyan spear pierce through the defensive light screen of Dragon Pearl, but only to hit Zhang Ruochen's shadow and flew away.

The spear struck a huge palace in the distance. With its powerful force, the palace collapsed into ruins and a pit appeared on the ground.

Its destructive power was so strong that it left lingering fear in the people around.

“Fortunately, I’ve mastered the power of space. Otherwise, even if I destroy the Holy Guard, I can’t escape death.” Zhang Ruochen exhaled a long breath.

Obviously, the Patriarch of the Evil Wood Palace had set up traps when he arranged the Holy Array. Anyone destroyed the holy array would be killed by that inscription.

Since the holy array had been broken, Zhang Rouchen could now send the signal to attack the Evil Wooden Palace.

“Swoosh!”

Zhang Ruochen condensed Genuine Qi and pointed his finger to the sky.

In a flash, a green light column flew out from his fingertips and went straight into the sky.

At the foot of the mountain, Si Xingkong saw the green light column rising towards the sky. His face lit up with joy and raised his arm in a call for action. “Zhang Ruochen has broken the holy array. It’s time to attack the Evil Wooden Palace and kill those filthy indigens.”

More than forty students displayed their bodily movement at the same time. Their speed had approached the extreme. In a flash, they reached the gate of the Evil Wooden Palace and fought against the masters of the Evil Wooden Palace.

After giving the signal, Zhang Ruochen immediately rushed to the top of the mountain. With a Skyeye in glabella, he began to look for the Purple Cloud-patterned eaglewood.

“The Purple Cloud-patterned eaglewoods are the greatest treasure of the Evil Wood palace. Even Master Shenhai, the Palace Master of the Evil Wood Palace, would not bring them along with him. They must have been stored somewhere in the Evil Wooden Palace.”

With a Skyeeye, he could see mineral veins about three hundred meters deep in the bottom. It was easy for him to find Purple Cloud-patterned eaglewood.

Soon, Zhang Ruochen discovered an underground palace in the Evil Wood Palace. And then, he found the entrance, broke the array, and approached the gate of the underground palace.

“It should be here!” Zhang Ruochen walked to the stone gate. He stood there and held his sword in front of him.

“Awoo!”

A savage beast’s howling sounded.

A green Double Winged Python lied on the outside of the underground palace woke up. It had a huge scaly body and a lion-like head above its body. An icy and bloody aura emitted from its body.

Lion-liked Python from Hell was a savage beast in the lower grade of the fifth level. Its power was equivalent to a powerhouse of the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. It was the Mythical Beast of Mountain Guardian of the Evil Wood Palace.

It showed its fangs in his mouth and exhaled a puff of poisonous fog to attack Zhang Ruochen.

A foul wind came and drove him away from the ground. However, his cultivation was profound, so he still looked very relaxed. He displayed one movement of the Space Moving and escaped the attack.

The beast launched an attack again.

“Roar!”

The monster ape rushed in from the outside and punched its head. It flew out and hit against the stone gate of the underground palace.

The entire underground palace shook.

The monster ape had reached the peak of the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, and it was only a step away from the Second Change of the fish-dragon. Moreover, it had also practiced the Treasured Body of Water Spirit. Thus, in terms of strength, the monster ape was stronger than the Lion-liked Python from Hell.

During the battle between the monster ape and the Lion-liked Python from Hell, Zhang Ruochen opened a “Space Crack” to break the guardian array and stone gate of the underground palace at the same time.

Below the stone gate appeared a crack of three meters high and one meter wide, as if it was a small door.

Zhang Ruochen moved his body, passed through the crack, and rushed into the underground palace.

As soon as he entered the palace, he was greeted with a tsunami of the intense scent of spiritual Qi of wood nature running over him. His pores breathed greedily as if he had reached the Innate Embryonic Breath of the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Of course, it was just an illusion. Based on his current realm, there was still a long way to achieve the Innate Embryonic Breath.

However, he had previously refined a large number of Black Glazed Spinels, so his physical quality was closed to that of the Treasured Body of Water Spirit.

In five elements, water and wood complement each other.

Therefore, the Spiritual Qi of wood nature would automatically flow into his body as if he had realized the “Innate Embryonic Breath”.

On the stone walls of the palace, there were more than one hundred wooden plaids. Some of the plaids contained precious crystal wands, some of which contained Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewoods.

He opened all the plaids and found that forty five of them were filled with Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewoods, some of which were larger and weighed about five kilogram; some were smaller and only a hundred grams.

All Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewoods together weighed up to about a hundred and twenty kilogram.

“The Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood can not only be used to practice the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit, but also can be used to refine the pill and forge weapons. Even half a kilogram of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood can be sold at an extremely high price in the Kunlun’s Field.”

Zhang Ruochen was overjoyed and put all forty five plaids in the Storage Ring with no doubt.

As for the crystal wands, he had no interest for them and so did not even bat an eye.

When Zhang Ruochen walked out of the underground palace, the monster ape had already blown off the two-winged Lion Python’s head. The monster ape swallowed the python and began to refine.

The monster ape stood motionless.

Black magic light emerged from its body and formed a group of cloud and mist. As time went on, its aura grew stronger and stronger.

“Eh! Does it want to refine the two-winged Lion Python to break through into the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm?”

The monster ape had already been infinitely closed to the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. If the monster ape refined the two-winged Lion Python and absorbed its essence and spiritual blood, it would be highly likely for the monster ape break through the realm with one stroke.

Originally, he intended to leave the Evil Wood Palace as soon as he obtain the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood and avoid confrontation with Master Shenhai.

After all, he was still inferior to Master Shenhai in strength.

But if the monster ape could break through to the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, its strength would surely be increased, and it might be able to contend with Master Shenhai.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes revealed a look of contemplation. He said under the breath, "In that case, it'll only just break through the realm. But it will still not be able to contend with those masters who possess profound supernatural power."

"But... if I give some Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewoods to the monster ape for refining, its strength will surely be enhanced rapidly. Even if it can't practice the Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits, it can definitely put up a good fight with Master Shenhai."

Zhang Ruochen slightly nodded as the idea came to mind.

Chapter 422 - Fighting Alone

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Under the attack of forty-six students, the Evil Wood Palace, one of the five masters' Holy Places, disappeared overnight. The indigenous masters in the palace were either dead or heavily injured.

This war allowed the majority of students to accumulate over a hundred military points.

Of course, there were also two students who were seriously injured and died under the counterattack of the indigenous master. Their hopes and dreams would forever remain in the Evil Wood Palace.

In the Battlefield of Primitive World, casualties were inevitable.

If it wasn't for Zhang Ruchen who broke the holy array and killed the three Master of the Evil Wood Palace, with only the power of the forty-six students, they would've been completely annihilated.

It was a very low death rate where only two genius students had fallen.

After the large battle, the Evil Wood Palace was completely destroyed. Even Huang Yanchen and Si Xingkong who had high cultivation suffered some minor injuries.

Although there were many injured students, they also got a acquired a of treasures. The treasures of the Evil Wood Palace, which had been accumulated for thousands of years, were seized by the students. Everyone had a huge harvest.

Among them, Chang Qiqi even found a Half-Saint stave that the students tried to fight each other for. Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the underground palace in time to quiet down the students who were going to snatch it by force.

After all, those students cared more about their personal interests. Treasures like the Half-Saint were enough for them to snatch desperately.

However, since Zhang Ruochen came forward, even if they wanted to get the Half -Saint stave , they would have to back off.

Who dared to provoke the king of the new generation?

“This stave is made out of Purple Cloud Earwood, and there is also supernatural power of Half-Saint left in the stave. Before using the stave, if you infuse it with Genuine Qi, it will have great power. Although it would not as powerful as a Holy Weapon, it is comparable to an Genuine Martial Arms of eleventh-level .”

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head and said. Then he returned the Half-Saint stave to Chang Qiqi.

That stave was most likely an item of the Patriarch of the Evil Wood Palace.

However, because a long time had passed, the Saint Power in the stave was lost. Otherwise, it was definitely a treasure close to the Holy Weapon.

“Close to the Genuine Martial Arms of eleventh level? I’m going to make a fortune!”

Chang Qiqi hugged the stave tightly with excitement as if he was holding his own lifeblood.

It is important to know that Zhang Ruochen spent three hundred and seventy pieces of Spiritual Crystal to purchase a Violet Thunder Sword which was Genuine Martial Arms of tenth level.

If the power of this Half-Saint stave was comparable to the Genuine Martial Arms of eleventh level, how much would it be worth?

At least, with Zhang Lingchen's current stash of Spiritual Crystals, he couldn't afford a Genuine Martial Arts of eleventh level.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen had more precious things than the Genuine Martial Arts of eleventh level, such as the Golden Ganoderma, Black Glazed Spinel, and the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood. Just selling one of them would make him rich overnight.

Si Xingkong also received some precious treasures, but he was neither happy nor sad. He looked rather dignified and said: "The most powerful person in the Evil Wood Palace is the Master Shenhai. Once he finds out, he will surely return with his fastest speed. With the cultivation of Master Shenhai, he can kill all of us himself. Zhang Ruochen, we need to leave now!"

Huang Yanchen said: "Can't we deal with the Master Shenhai if all of us came together to use the Combined Attack?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, "It will be very difficult! The cultivation of Master Shenhai should be the Second Change of the Dragons and Fishes —Skin Refining to Gold. Its own defensive power is terrifyingly strong, and it's like a Practice to golden body that couldn't be broken. Even if the Combined Attack can defeat him, he can simply just evade it."

"Furthermore, the Combined Attack consumes a lot of Genuine Qi and cannot be sustained at all. Once the Combined Attack was weakened, then we could be defeated by him and all die here."

Although Zhang Ruochen could pose a certain threat to the Master Shenhai, and he could even work with the monster ape, he had to think about the worst scenario.

Si Xingkong nodded and said: "Also, I suspect that Master Shenhai may have practiced the Treasured Body of Wood. In that case, we would have no chance."

Zhang Ruochen said: "Elder brother, you lead the students here out first. I'll stay here and hold him off."

“Just you? No, I will help you. I have the Holy Sword, and maybe I can break the defensive deity of the Master Shenhai.” Huang Yanchen said with her beautiful eyes like two blue cold stars contains a firm will.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said: “I’ll have to borrow that Holy Sword for the time being. However, you have to leave. Even if I am not the opponent of the Master Shenhai, I’m sure that I will be able to escape.”

Huang Yanchen finally agreed as she removed the White Jade Hairpin from her head, and gave it to Zhang Ruochen.

The Holy Sword was precious enough to make a Half-Saint fight for it, but she did not hesitate to lend it to Zhang Ruochen. There was no trace of suspicion in her heart.

Huang Yanchen and Si Xingkong left with the crowd. Zhang Ruochen was left all alone in the Darksplitting Mountain.

As a Holy Land for the Five Masters, the Evil Wood Palace was once full of many master. Every year, countless people came to study and learn. Now all the life and progress in the palace had been destroyed, and it was extremely lonely.

Zhang Ruochen walked in the mountains and unknowingly walked to the position of Array Eye of holy array.

The Array Eye was torn by Sword Breath and there was a giant sword crack of more than twenty meters on the ground that cut off the four main Inscription of Array of the Holy Array.

Zhang Ruochen sighed: “If Blackie were here, with its knowledge in array formations, it would be possible to restore four Inscription of Array and run the holy array again. With the power of the Holy Array, it would be easy to deal with Master Shenhai.”

Since Blackie was not there, he could only do it himself.

Zhang Ruochen began to recall some of the array books that he had seen before and tried to repair the four Inscription of Array of the holy array.

Although Zhang Ruochen did not study the Inscription of Array, he was a master of Spiritual Power. In terms of inscription, he was also considered to have certain achievements.

As soon as he touched the Holy Array, Zhang Ruochen discovered that the Half-Saint man who arranged the array did not have a clever way to burn the incscription. His spiritual power should not have reached the fortieth level.

The main reason that the power of the Holy Array was so powerful was because the Holy Power in the Half-Saint system had played a key role.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was not an Array Master, so it was still very difficult to repair the etched pattern. After three consecutive attempts, he failed. Instead, the three sacred lines were completely destroyed.

Hard work payed off. Zhang Ruochen finally succeeded in repairing the fourth Inscription of Array of the fourth.

Zhang Ruochen stood up and wiped the sweat off his forehead. He smiled and said: "I've finally repaired a holy array pattern, and it should allow one corner of the Saint Array to work."

Zhang Ruochen pressed his palm at the position of the Array Eye and and injected Genuine Qi into it.

One corner of the array showed the Inscription of Array and it resumed operation, covering only the hillside about a tenth of the size of the entire array.

Moreover, the power of this corner holy array had fallen a lot.

"It's probably only a tenth of the power of the holy array. It should be enough to kill the Master Shenhai. The key is now to lure the Master Shenhai into that corner of the holy array ."

Zhang Ruozhen held his chin and looked thoughtful.

"Ow."

Suddenly, there was a long and wheezing noise from underground.

The monster ape broke through the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. It passed through the stone layer, broke through the earth, flew over across the sky, and landed on the ground, creating a huge pit.

After it broke through the Realm, the aura of monster ape had changed dramatically, and he was even a meter taller than before. Each hair on the ape's body was like a needle forged out of steel.

It showed off its strength. It lifted a hard stone that weighed a few ton from the ground, opened his big mouth with its sharp teeth, and shattered the boulder before swallowing it as if it was a piece of tofu.

Even stones could be digested, how powerful is its body now?

“Amazing.”

Zhang Ruochen beckoned to the monster ape.

“Boom!”

The monster ape immediately leaped and landed in front of Zhang Ruochen. He bent his back and saluted Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the monster ape up close and nodded. From the Storage Ring, he took out a piece of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood weighted five kilogram and threw it to the monster ape.

The monster ape caught the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood in his mouth, swallowed it, and began to be refined.

Zhang Ruochen said: “I don't expect you to practice into a Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits. However, the more powerful you are, the more help you will be to me.”

The monster ape was motionless and began to refine the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood.

Every kilo of refining is equivalent to the achievement of one year's practice. The ape's strength could be enhanced by a great deal after this.

It could be said that the power of monster ape was increasing rapidly every moment.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the edge of a cliff in the Darksplitting Mountain and looked at the red sun rising on the sky. He said to himself, "Master Shenhai should be back soon!"

...

At this time, Master Shenhai and the Nie Wenlong were indeed on the way back to the Evil Wood Palace. They were all great masters, and their top speed was twice the speed of sound.

Even though Nie Wenlong did not reach the Fish-dragon Realm, he was highly talented. The strength alone was enough to compete with the top 1,000 masters of the "Heaven Board" rankings.

"That bastard, Zhang Ruozhen dares to play around with me. If I see him, I will make him pay for what he has done." The old face of the Master Shenhai was distorted and his eyes were full of fierce lights."

Nie Wenlong said: "If his actions are slower, maybe we can meet him when we rush back to the Evil Wood Palace."

"What did you say? With that guy's strength, even if he dare to attack the Evil Wood Palace, he can't even pass the holy array. The Evil Wood Palace has the Master Masheng. It should be absolutely safe."

In fact, Master Shenhai was also very worried, but now he could only think positively. After all, there was the defense of the holy array, Zhang Ruochen could not attack even if he had superhuman powers.

Nie Wenlong frowned and said: "I hope so."

After half an hour, the Master Shenhai and Nie Wenlong finally reached the foot of the Darksplitting Mountain. With a glance at the top of the mountain, their hearts sank to the bottom of the valley.

The entire Evil Wood Palace, the millennium foundation, had been turned into ruins. The palace was still in flames, and rays of black smoke permeated the air, filling it with a sultry taste.

Chapter 423 - Hundred Toxins Palm

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Zhang Ruochen, I will kill you.”

Seeing the burning wreckage in front of him, Master Shenhai shuddered from rage and roared loudly.

The power in his body, spewed out like a hurricane, blowing up the sand in the Darksplitting Mountain. The tree branches shook, and the leaves flew, making whistling sounds.

Zhang Ruochen calmly stood on the edge of the cliff, with his hands behind his back, and stared at the two people under the mountains far away. He replied in a subtle way, “If you can, then come.”

The seemingly calm voice, being pushed by the Genuine Qi, delivered to the ears of Master Shenhai and Nie Wenlong like layers of waves.

“What a prideful junior!”

The anger rose from the heart of Master Shenhai and his face turned red as if he was going to explode. He couldn't even wait one more second to charge in the Evil Wood Palace and kill Zhang Ruochen with his own hands.

Nie Wenlong felt that something was wrong and said, “Master Shenhai, you are practicing supernatural power, and you are better at attacking from range. If you get baited by Zhang Ruochen and fought him in close quarters, I'm afraid that you would be in a disadvantage.”

“What do you mean?” Master Shenhai raised his eyebrows.

Nie Wenlong said, "I feel that Zhang Ruochen is eccentric. It seems that he deliberately tries to lure us into the Darksplitting Mountain. He probably has arranged some traps to deal with us. If both of us are get trapped, he will win."

"So, let me deal with Zhang Ruochen. You stay outside the mountain. Be alert to see what kind of tricks he will play. If I can't kill him, it will not be too late for you to help."

Master Shenhai gradually calmed down, thinking that the arrangement of Nie Wenlong is much safer. He nodded his head and said, "Well, I will do as you said."

In fact, only a small part of the reason why Nie Wenlong agreed to the plan was because he felt that Zhang Ruochen was unusual and was afraid that both of them would jump into the trap of and be annihilated.

The other important reason was that he wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen himself and take credits alone. Furthermore, he wanted to get Zhang Ruochen's treasures.

Nie Wenlong understood Zhang Ruochen's abilities better than anyone else.

If he was careful and avoided tricks by Zhang Ruochen, he was sure that he could kill Zhang Ruochen.

In the first round of the examination in the Saint Academy, Zhang Ruochen was only slightly more powerful than Xu Qing. He broke the realm during the fight and thus defeated the descendants of the four Saint powerful families.

Nie Wenlong had been practicing in Saint Academy for ten years, his martial cultivation had already reached the limit of the Heaven Realm, and he was much more powerful than those descendant of the Saint families.

Killing Zhang Ruochen would be all too easy.

In his view, Zhang Ruochen was far from being a worthy opponent.

"With his ability, how could Zhang Ruochen kill the two masters".

“Those two idiots must’ve gotten tricked by Zhang Ruochen and died.”

“Or maybe Zhang Ruochen organized many students for the Combined Attack and killed the two masters. But regardless, Zhang Ruochen must have had an incredible trump card. I should be careful to not fall to his tricks.”

Thinking so in his heart, Nie Wenlong walked toward the Darksplitting Mountain step by step.

Meanwhile, he maximized his power of sight, hearing, and smelling to find the trump card of Zhang Ruochen for an advance preparation.

It was worth noting that Nie Wenlong was very cautious, but he did not know that when he took the first step, he had already entered Zhang Ruochen’s Space Domain. It would be strange if he could find the difference.

Zhang Ruochen frowned slightly.

Originally, he was planning to lure Nie Wenlong and Master Shenhai in that corner of the holy array and kill them both with the holy array.

Unexpectedly, they were cautious enough to only send Nie Wenlong up the Darksplitting Mountain.

Being able to cultivate into this kind of realm, they were indeed slippery, and it was difficult to plot against them.

Nie Wenlong seemed to walk slowly, but in fact, he had displayed a clever body movement. In a few moments, he had already climbed more than a thousand meters high.

Standing on the opposite side of Zhang Ruochen, Nie Wenlong stood straight and said, “Zhang Ruochen, do you still remember me?”

Zhang Ruochen heard about Nie Wenlong’s news from Xu Qing, and he also saw him at the second round of Saint Academy’s examination. How could he not recognize him?

“Nie Wenlong, as one of the first ten thousand masters in Heaven Board, you had accumulated a hundred and eighty thousand military merits, many indigenous masters had been

killed by you, how can I forget such a powerful warrior like you?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Nie Wenlong smiled and said, “If you can kill me, although you can’t get into the Heaven Board, but you will still gain a big reputation.”

Zhang Ruochen responded, “Do you think that I can’t kill you?”

Nie Wenlong also looked carefree, and with a faint smile, he said, “Although you are called the king of the new generation, I am not so weak. You cannot exceed me in three years.”

Three years.

With this expectation, Nie Wenlong thought he was already overestimating Zhang Ruochen.

After all, he would also make progress at the same time. Within three years, he would break through the Fish-dragon Realm. It was impossible that Zhang Ruochen could exceed him in three years.

Nie Wenlong added, “It is a pity that you won’t even get the three years you need to catch up with me. Maybe you don’t know that I’ve practiced the Treasured Body of Wood and Spirit, even if a master in the top thousand of the Heaven Board may not be my opponent. Fish-dragon Realm is already within my reach, and within a year, I will surely break through the realm.”

Zhang Ruochen was silent for a moment and said, “You sure are confident. We’ll see who the last one laughing is.”

Nie Wenlong smiled and said, “I know that you must have a trump card in your hand. Unfortunately, I am not Master Qingmu or Master Zuxin. You can’t trick me.”

He added, “Actually, death is not your only option. There is still a way to go. I will let you go as long as you give me the sarira.”

On behalf of the Buddha emperor’s heritage, the sarira was something that Nie Wenlong desperately wanted.

With the sarira, Nie Wenlong wouldn't need to rely on the family of Saint Xu and could become successful by himself.

It was precisely the reason why Nie Wenlong was eager to get sarira. When he was sent to the Five Elements of Primitive World to kill Zhang Ruochen, he agreed without hesitation.

Nie Wenlong said, "Anyway, even if you don't surrender the sarira to me, after I killed you, the sarira will still fall into my hands. I give you three breaths to consider. Which path will you take?"

Zhang Ruochen smiled and stared at Nie Wenlong as if he was looking at an idiot. He said, "Do you believe that I can beat you within three breaths?"

With anger in Nie Wenlong's eyes, he said coldly, "Only by meeting death will your arrogance fall."

"Hundred Toxins Palm."

"Swoosh!"

Nie Wenlong, with both his legs thrust against the ground, flew out and reached twice as fast as the speed of sound.

Genuine Qi in his body swiftly ran to the palm and slapped it out.

The palm became colorful. In the pores, a highly corrosive mist was emitted and hit Zhang Ruochen's chest.

Zhang Ruochen's arms spread out like a big bird flapping his wings, and he got knocked backwards. He used the celestial bodyshield to constantly defuse the power of Nie Wenlong's palm.

Hundred Toxins Palm was a inferior-class martial of ghost level. To successfully practice the palm, the body must had taken hundreds of refined poison.

Every time a poison was added, the power of your palm would increase.

If thousands of highly toxic poisons were refined into the body, the Thousand Toxins Palm will be practiced and the

technique will reach the martial technique of Mid-class ghost level.

Correspondingly, Ten Thousands Toxins Palm would reach the superior class.

When the palm technique was practiced, even if you couldn't destroy a city with palm power, you could rely on the poisonous gas contained in your palm to kill all lives in a city.

Nie Wenlong had refined 173 types of highly toxic poisons into the body, so the palm strength could let the surrounding vegetation wither with astonishing speed.

Every step he walked left a black and corrosive footprint on the ground, giving the earth a buzzing sound.

Zhang Ruochen had a dragon pearl and was not afraid of his Hundred Toxins Palm.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Master Shenhai in the distant and made up his mind that he should remove Nie Wenlong as quickly as he could. Then he would slowly deal with the final boss.

“BAM!”

On his head, a light column rushed out, and the martial soul was released.

The martial soul, hanging on Zhang Ruochen's head, quickly maneuvered the spiritual Qi in the sky and the earth.

Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi rushed toward Zhang Ruochen, forming a huge whirlpool, before being sucked into the sacred mark above his eyebrows.

Nie Wenlong's face suddenly changed and screamed, “How can your martial soul be so powerful?”

Although Nie Wenlong didn't release his martial soul, he could feel that Zhang Ruochen's Martial soul made huge power and pressure that almost forced out his martial soul.

It was not the martial soul that a warrior in the Heaven Realm should have.

Of course, Nie Wenlong could also release his martial soul, and maneuver the Spiritual Qi to fight Zhang Ruochen.

But by doing so, he would lose even faster.

With abundant fighting experience, Nie Wenlong was not flurried. He ran his genuine Qi immediately, protected his martial soul, and retreated.

He immediately turned his body, thrusting his legs on the ground, jumped of the cliff and rushed down the mountain.

“Is it too late to escape?”

Following him, Zhang Ruochen jumped down the cliff and performed his Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm to activate the power of the dragon pearl.

With a sound of swoosh, a layer of dragon scale exposed, and two big golden dragon wings rushed out from his back.

Zhang Ruochen’s speed became faster when the wings fanned. His palm pushed down when he was right behind Nie Wenlong.

“Divine Dragon’s Steal.”

Tens of lightings rushed from Zhang Ruochen’s palm and flew in all the directions. A dragon shadow vaguely appeared in the lightings.

With the martial soul, how powerful was Zhang Ruochen’s palm.

The scene in front of Nie Wenlong disappeared completely on the impact of the palm power. Only a golden dragon claw of hundreds meters wide pushed from the above like a Five-finger Mountain.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen didn’t perform the hundreds-meter dragon claw, but the momentum of the palm gave a false impression to Nie Wenlong.

Chapter 424 - A Hard Battle

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

In spite of his fear, Nie Wenlong bit the bullet and mobilized his Genuine Qi. He displayed the Hundred Toxins Palm again.

“Boom!”

Zhang Ruochen broke the Hundred Toxins Palm with one palm.

“Poof!”

Nie Wenlong spat out a mouthful of blood.

He fell to the ground.

With a bang, he dropped to the bottom of the 100-meter cliff, forming a human-shaped pit. His body was covered by mudstone; no one knew whether he was alive or not.

“Swoosh!”

Zhang Ruochen lowered to the ground and walked towards the large hole.

Without the protection of a Celestial Bodyshield, even a warrior at the Completion of the Heaven Realm would die after a 100-meter drop.

However, Nie Wenlong had experienced numerous life-or-death battles in the Battlefield of the Primitive World. Most of the time, he managed to kill stronger enemies in unfavorable situations.

In terms of reaction speed, many warriors at the same Realm were incomparable to him.

Just as he was about to touch down, he had injected Genuine Qi into his amulet treasure, to ward off the impact of the fall.

Nie Wenlong remained where he had fallen, not moving, waiting for opportunity to strike.

When Zhang Ruochen approached, he would kill him.

What he didn't know was that Zhang Ruochen had seen through his scheme with his strong spiritual power.

Zhang Ruochen walked beside the pit. His face expressed that he was defenseless, and the corners of his mouth were slightly upturned.

“Swoosh!”

Nie Wenlong suddenly charged out from the ground. Holding a black poison needle, he stabbed into Zhang Ruochen's eyebrows.

“Go to hell!” he roared.

The black poison needle was made from hundreds of highly toxic poisons. He had refined this original treasure through the practice of A Hundred Toxins Palm.

If the needle pierced the skin, the poison would enter into the bloodstream. Even superiors at the First Change of the Fish-dragon Realm would fail to escape from death.

Only “Skin Refining to Gold” cultivators at the Second Change of the Fish-dragon Realm could resist the attack of a poison needle.

Nie Wenlong seemed to act quickly, but Zhang Ruochen reacted even faster. He was ready.

Zhang Ruochen struck Nie Wenlong in the chest, slamming his ribs.

His lungs and heart turned into blood mud. Blood began to seep through his clothes.

“How... How... could it... possible...”

Nie Wenlong was trembling from head to toe, his eyes open wide in shock. He had never thought that he would be killed by a junior.

Zhang Ruochen walked towards him leisurely. “You haven’t practiced the Treasure Body of Wood Spirit to completion. If it was perfect it, it couldn’t be broken by the palm power I just exerted.”

Zhang Ruochen squatted down and took out Nie Wenlong’s black poison needle. He observed it carefully, nodding his head. “This should be effective enough to defeat superiors at the First Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. It’s really a treasure.”

He put the needle away, figuring that even if it was useless to him, he could sell it and get a good price.

“Awful.”

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen’s pupils shrank. He quickly turned and activated the Dragon Pearl’s defensive force, forming a golden defensive cover.

“Whew!”

A mass of purple supernatural power condensed into a spear was flying towards him from far away. It hit his golden defensive cover.

The golden defensive cover generated a circle of ripples and flew away. It hit the cliff.

“Boom!”

A large number of boulders collapsed, burying Zhang Ruochen underneath.

Master Shenhai flew to the top of a pine tree, as if walking through the clouds. He gazed out over the cliff. He did not get close but rather stayed in the distance.

“Was he killed in one blow?”

Master Shenhai had wanted to rescue Nie Wenlong. However, he had been defeated too quickly.

Master Shenhai was now aware of Zhang Rouchen’s powerful strength. He no longer looked down upon him. He did not get close; he planned to attack from a distance.

“Boom!”

The scattered stones were broken into fine powders.

Zhang Ruochen walked out from the dust, unscathed, just a little embarrassed.

He glared at Master Shenhai in the distance. “Your cultivation is much stronger than that of the other three masters from the Evil Wood Palace.”

“Humph! Zhang Ruochen, you destroyed the Evil Wood Palace millennium foundation and killed my disciples. I’ll smash you to pieces!” Master Shenhai shouted.

“I have nothing to say. Let’s see your true power.”

Zhang Ruochen took out the Violet Thunder Sword. He moved his feet to the left and right separately, lifted his arms, and placed the sword horizontally, forming an opening posture.

Master Shenhai shook his head. In a cynical tone he said, “Your sword can’t hurt me, Zhang Ruochen.”

“Don’t be so sure.”

Zhang Ruochen displayed the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon and rushed out.

“King of Treemen.”

Master Shenhai mobilized his supernatural power to the Bone Stave. As he waved his arms, wisps of cyan Spiritual Qi of wood nature gathered together. It formed a ball of light, then condensed into vines, leaves, branches, and finally a 30-meter-high Treeman. It launched its attack.

The Treeman King’s power was comparable to that of cultivators at the Second Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. Just one swipe forced Zhang Ruochen to retreat.

Even if he mobilized the Spiritual Qi of Heaven and Earth with his Martial Soul, his power was still inferior.

“Ten-thousand-feet Prairie Fire.”

Zhang Ruochen released his Genuine Qi, triggering a vision of heaven and earth. The Spiritual Qi gathered within the 3300-meter surrounding area and formed into a large sea of raging fire.

Zhang Ruochen put his hands together, mobilizing the flame into a blazing python. It wound its way towards the huge Treeman.

But the Treeman appeared not to fear the flame at all. It moved forward and punched Zhang Ruochen in the head again.

Master Shenhai laughed. “The Treeman King is made from the original power of wood nature. A common flame can do nothing to it.”

“Even if you had a cultivation at the Third Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, you couldn’t defeat it. Unless you had Source of Spiritual Fire from the Temple of Holy Fire and refined it.”

“Zhang Ruochen, you can’t even reach my sleeves. How can you expect to fight with me?”

Zhang Ruochen remained silent. He thrust his feet against the ground and bounced up above of the Treeman’s head. He infused Genuine Qi into the Violet Thunder Sword and swung it.

“WOOSH!”

Dozens of vines protruded from the Treeman. They wrapped around his arm.

Zhang Ruochen had not finished his sword move. He felt a great gust of power and was thrown back.

BANG! He fell to the ground more than 30 meters away. He slipped back another 30 meters from the impact.

The treeman raised his hands to attack Zhang Ruochen again before he gave a sigh of relief.

Zhang Ruochen hit the ground with his left hand. He turned over and flew up, allowing him to escape the attack.

“Boom!”

The Treeman thudded to the ground, leaving two giant holes. The rock was crushed into powder.

Treeman? No, an absolute iron giant.

“Master Shenhai, do you really think I can’t hurt you just because the Treeman is blocking me?” Zhang Ruochen asked, dodging the Treeman’s attack.

Zhang Ruochen drew out a White Jade Hairpin. He injected Genuine Qi into it and the Jade Hairpin immediately turned into a white Holy Sword.

“Soul-breaking Windwhisper.”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized all his Genuine Qi. He slashed and chopped at the Treeman. The Treeman was hacked into two pieces. Its upper body flew back.

The Treeman was reduced to wisps of fog.

...

Master Shenhai stared at the scene before him in disbelief.

“Sword Defending Technique!”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t give Master Shenhai an opportunity to react. Holding the Holy Sword in one hand, and the Violet Thunder Sword in the other, he stabbed Master Shenhai from a distance by wielding Sword Defending Technique.

“Swoosh!”

The Violet Thunder Sword gave off a dazzling light as it sped toward Master Shenhai at a speed faster than sound.

Master Shenhai waved the Bone Stave to exert supernatural power, stopping the sword.

The Violet Thunder Sword flew back quickly, whamming, cutting, slicing and chopping; it kept Master Shenhai busy.

Before Master Shenhai could stand steady, Zhang Ruochen had reached him with the Holy Sword in hand. He slashed at him with a long Sword Breath.

Master Shenhai made a quick evasion.

He managed to avoid the Holy Sword, but not the Violet Thunder Sword.

“Crash!”

The Violet Thunder Sword pierced his robe and stabbed him in the back with a crash.

Master Shenhai had not only finished practicing the Treasure Body of Wood Spirit, he had also reached Skin Refining to Gold. Even the Violet Thunder Sword, a tenth level Genuine Martial Arms couldn't break through his defense.

Master Shenhai snorted derisively. He wielded his Bone Stave to hit Zhang Ruochen's right shoulder.

Zhang Ruochen waved his Holy Sword to meet it.

“Boom!”

Zhang Ruochen was repelled again. His arm that held the Holy Sword was spilling a stream of blood.

The Dragon Scales on his arm had totally cracked, scarlet blood and flesh came out.

Master Shenhai snorted. “Even if you can boast the same power as cultivators of the Fish-dragon Realm, you're still a mortal.”

Master Shenhai had often talked with Nie Wenlong about Martial Arts. He knew that he was in the Fish-dragon Realm.

He also knew a warrior from Kunlun's Field who could practice his soul into a Martial Soul.

Zhang Ruochen had a stronger Martial Soul, however, Master Shenhai hadn't fought with Zhang Ruochen in that way. Instead, he had kept his Martial Soul inside his body and exercised supernatural power to protect it.

So it was far beyond the range of possibility for Zhang Ruochen to kill Master Shenhai using Martial Soul.

Chapter 425 - Loss at Both Sides

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen stared at the Bone Stave in Master Shenhai's hand. With a tone of doubt, he asked, "Is this a Half-Saint staff too? How can there be two Half-Saint staves in the Evil Wood Palace?"

The stave had collided hard with the Holy Sword, but it was not damaged. This meant that the power contained in the stave was comparable with that of the Half-Saint stave.

"The Patriarch of the Evil Wooden Palace originally left two Half-Saint staves. One of them was personally carved by the Patriarch with Purple Cloud-patterned Wood, and it was injected with Saint Power. It was also carved with elaborate and complicated inscriptions."

"The other was refined from the Patriarch's backbone. Afterward, it was developed by several Evil Wood Palace Masters, so its power is stronger than the first one. Of course, it is the one in my hand."

Master Shenhai held the Bone Stave in his hands.

Suddenly, the smile in his eyes disappeared and they grew cold. He took a step forward without warning and attacked Zhang Ruochen again.

Master Shenhai practiced supernatural power. He had also practiced "Skin Refining to Gold" at the Second Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. He even had a Treasure Body of Wood.

He was extremely powerful.

He also had a Half-Saint stave. Naturally, he was not afraid to fight with Zhang Ruochen.

“Whoosh!”

He only swung the Half-Saint stave a bit, yet the surrounding Spiritual Qi of Heaven and Earth was stirred up like a hurricane. Huge rocks were strewn up.

Zhang Ruochen immediately displayed a body movement and raced to the top of the mountain. He planned to lead Master Shenhai to the holy array in the corner.

“Are you trying to run away?”

Master Shenhai sneered. With a murderous look, he chased after him without thinking.

It had to be said that Master Shenhai was indeed much faster than Zhang Ruochen.

In an instant, he arrived behind Zhang Ruochen. He jumped up and got closer to him. He waved the Half-Saint stave.

Zhang Ruochen did not have to look back. He already felt the Destruction Power behind him.

When Master Shenhai saw that Zhang Ruochen did not stop to resist his attack, he smiled in his heart. He assumed he could strike Zhang Ruochen dead with the Half-Saint stave and quickly end the battle.

“Boom!”

The ground shook.

The monster ape charged out from the ground and punched Master Shenhai in the chest.

Zhang Ruochen and the monster ape had used this trick before to kill Master Zuxin.

It had worked with Master Zuxin.

Master Shenhai was startled.

However, he responded very quickly. He immediately changed the direction of the Half-Saint stave and pressed down. All its force was directed at the monster ape.

“Bang!”

The Half-Saint Stave collided with the monster ape’s fist. It was forced to back off more than a dozen steps. It even broke three fingers.

Master Shenhai had a deeper cultivation than the monster ape. In addition, he had a Half-Saint Stave. Naturally it was easier to thwart it off.

“Haha! Zhang Ruochen, this beast is your trump card? How ridiculous you are to plot against me! I have used the sneak attack for over a hundred years. You are too innocent!”

Master Shenhai was fierce, and he was also very shrewd. He had miscalculated Zhang Ruochen once, he would not let this happen a second time.

“Awoo!”

The monster ape roared furiously. It charged forward and attacked again.

Its body emitted a black magic light that was full of destructive power.

“You’re courting death.”

Master Shenhai’s eyes were cold and sharp. He injected all his supernatural power into the Half-Saint Stave.

On the surface of the stave, a white illusory image emerged. It was 33 meters long and very thick. He waved the stave at the monster ape and hit its chest.

This time, the monster ape was forced back 333 meters. Its huge body crushed a large section of ancient trees with a thud.

Zhang Ruochen raced forward. He looked back, and his pupils shrank. “This old guy is really horrible. He will probably reach the Third Change in the Fish-dragon Realm soon.”

Breathing heavily, Zhang Ruochen finally reached the center of the holy array.

Master Shenhai followed him and chased after him, “You want to deal with me with a holy array? My understanding of holy arrays is ten times better than yours. When I reached the

Darksplitting Mountain, I already found that the holy array was not completely destroyed.” Master Shenhai spoke harshly.

Master Shenhai saw through Zhang Ruochen and split down the Half-Saint Stave.

A powerful supernatural power surged above the stave and turned into a torrent of supernatural power. It acted like a stream about to crush the Darksplitting Mountain.

Zhang Ruochen knew that he could not resist this strike. He immediately mobilized the Power of Space, displayed Space Moving, and disappeared.

“Boom!”

Master Shenhai’s stave struck against the Array Eye and made a loud noise.

The holy array was completely destroyed. The ground for 33 meters was also torn apart.

Zhang Ruochen displayed Space Moving and appeared behind Master Shenhai without warning. He held the sword in both hands. He straightened it and held it like a meteor. Then he stabbed at Master Shenhai’s chest.

“CHH!”

The Holy Sword broke through Master Shenhai’s defense and pierced into his flesh. Blood gushed from his body like water from a pipe.

The sword tip penetrated deeper into his body inch by inch...

Master Shenhai bit his teeth together and clenched his hands tightly. His abdomen showed a radiant glow.

The next moment, a strong power of wood nature emerged from his body. It struck against the Holy Sword and repelled Zhang Ruochen.

They both stepped back at the same time.

“What is that power?”

Zhang Ruochen braced his body with the sword. He felt like his bones were shaking. His arms and legs were weak, and he

could not exert an ounce of strength.

If not for the Dragon Pearl, hundreds of his bones might have been crushed into powder.

Master Shenhai was also uncomfortable. His back had a deep gash from the Holy Sword.

A force of Sword Breath carrying Saint Power moved through his body, destroying his Blood Meridian, bones, and the five internal organs. He could only use supernatural power to suppress it.

“I shouldn’t really fight at close quarters with Zhang Ruochen. It’s too easy for him to defeat me. What kind of movement did he just use that he can appear behind me without warning?”

The two men faced each other. Neither one attacked.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Master Shenhai. “What kind of power did you just use? With your cultivation, you can’t have such a strong supernatural power.”

Master Shenhai did not answer and asked, “What body movement did you just use?”

Zhang Ruochen did not answer either. He smiled. He took a healing pill and started to run his Genuine Qi to cure the wound.

Master Shenhai did not launch an attack. He mobilized supernatural power and tried to dissolve the Sword Breath from his body.

Zhang Ruochen displayed Skyeye and watched as Master Shenhai ran supernatural power. He saw a mass of blue brilliance suspending around Master Shenhai’s abdomen.

The strong power of wood nature had erupted from the same mass of blue brilliance.

“What is that?”

As he pondered, his Qi pool suddenly sent a violent fluctuation.

A picture suspended in the center of his Qi pool and emitted circles of light waves.

It was the Yin Yang Wooden Graph.

The scroll gradually opened, displaying a magnificent world.

In the scroll, the Sacred Prime Tree, began to breathe like a cultivator, as if it was alive.

The power of wood nature entered Zhang Ruochen's body and was instantly absorbed by the Sacred Prime Tree.

“How could this be? Does that mass of blue brilliance inside Master Shenhai have some relation to the Sacred Prime Tree? Why else would the Yin Yang Wooden Graph show such a strange change?”

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Yin Yang Wooden Graph was a treasure of time and space. It could take in the Martial Soul of warriors and savage beasts. However, living creatures were exempt.

Except Blackie.

Blackie had been sealed inside the Yin Yang Wooden Graph for a hundred thousand years.

Seeing changes in the Yin Yang Wooden Graph, Zhang Ruochen was immediately delighted.

The internal space of the Time and Space Spinel was becoming smaller and smaller. Zhang Ruochen's estimated, it would support him for one more year, then it would exhaust all its energy and disappear.

With the Time and Space Spinel, Zhang Ruochen had three times more time than he had in the outside world.

It was because of this that Zhang Ruochen had been able to catch up with other top geniuses and even Chi Yao.

Once the Time and Space Spinel disappeared, Zhang Ruochen would have to search for a new treasure of time and space.

Originally, Zhang Ruochen had wanted to get the Holy Wheel Seal. Unfortunately, the masters in the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain had been too difficult to deal with. Based on his current strength, he could not obtain the Holy Wheel Seal.

If he could open the World Space of the Yin Yang Wooden Graph, it would definitely be beneficial. It would be enough to replace the Time and Space Spinel.

The Yin Yang Wooden Graph was definitely more precious than the Time and Space Spinel, and it would help Zhang Ruochen's practice more.

“Anyway, I have to get the treasure inside Master Shenhai.”

Zhang Ruotian sat down on the ground. Numerous thoughts flashed through his mind. He ignored his injuries, mobilized his Spiritual Power, and called for a thunderbolt as thick as a bowl to attack Master Shenhai.

“I have to kill him while he is hurt.”

At the same time, the monster ape charged forward again and attacked Master Shenhai.

The monster ape was very strong. Although it had been severely hurt by Master Shenhai, it was still quite fierce and tough. It forced Master Shenhai to fight back without a chance to escape.

“Abhorrent! What is Zhang Ruochen's background? Not only can he mobilize the power of fire, he can also mobilize the power of thunderbolt.” Master Shenhai suppressed his injury and fought back.

In a sense, masters of Spiritual Power in Kunlun's Field were somewhat similar to those in the Five Elements Primitive World. Of course, there were also many differences.

All three thousand Great Ways led to the same destination.

“WHOOSH!”

Zhang Ruochen used Spiritual Power to control the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. He transformed it into the power of a thunderbolt that turned into a beam of lightning and struck Master Shenhai.

Chapter 426 - The Qi of Origin

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Under constant barrage from Zhang Ruochen and the monster ape, Master Shenhai's injury began to worsen. His reaction time was gradually getting slower.

"I won't be able to take it for long if the attack continues. I can't believe that somebody like Zhang Ruochen is so difficult to deal with. It's no surprise that Master Qingmu and Master Zuxin have fallen under his hand."

With a stern look, Master Shenhai thought quickly and came up with a plan. While resisting the attacks of the monster ape and the thunderbolts, he rushed toward Zhang Ruochen.

If he could kill just Zhang Ruochen, the crisis would be resolved.

When only three steps were left between them, Zhang Ruochen still remained seated with his legs crossed, apparently without any intention of standing up.

"Go to hell."

Master Shenhai whirled his Half-Saint Staff, mustered all his strength, and drove it down towards Zhang Ruochen's head.

This was the much-awaited opportunity.

Zhang Ruochen reached out his right hand quickly and stretched a finger toward Master Shenhai. He said, "Space Vortex."

The space in front of Master Shenhai opened and turned into a chaotic malestrom, which swallowed first the Half-Saint Staff

in his hands, and then ripped his head from his shoulders.

At such close range, Master Shenhai did not stand a chance.

The Space Crack shut, and everything calmed down. Only a headless body remained, which soon toppled backward.

The monster ape howled and rushed toward Master Shenhai's body, wanting to smash it into pieces.

“Stop,” ordered Zhang Ruochen.

He stood up.

Just then, a green haze of strong wood nature exuded from Master Shenhai's belly.

The plants around the haze grew at a surprising speed. Shoots sprouted quickly to waist height.

“This is... is this Qi of Origin of the Five Elements Primitive World?”

Zhang Ruochen was a knowledgeable person who had read countless books, which enabled to generate this speculation.

Every world has its own Qi of Origin.

The Inferior, Medium, and Superior Primitive Worlds, and even the Kunlun's Field all had their own Qi of Origin.

The bigger and more stable the world was, the stronger its Qi of Origin.

When it became powerful enough to produce spiritual intelligence and turned into the “Spirit of the World,” it, in turn, could affect everything in that world.

As for the mortals, Qi of Origin is the Creator, and the Heavenly Way. It was blessings, causality, fate, and unseen morality.

Every different Qi of Origin determined the rules of the world.

The Qi of Origin in the Five Elements Primitive World was agglomerated by five powers: gold, wood, water, fire, and earth.

The five Spirit Treasures of the Five Elements Primitive World were the Golden Ganoderma Lucidum, the Black Glazed Spinel, the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, the Source of Spiritual Fire, the Bloody Saint-cultivating Soil. They came into being by the absorption of the five kinds of Qi of Origin.

Master Shenhai possessed the Wood Spirit's Qi of Origin of the Five Elements Primitive World, which was one of the five fortunes of the Five Elements Primitive World.

After a few tests, Zhang Ruochen determined that the green haze was part of Qi of Origin of the Five Elements Primitive World.

“I suppose that Master Shenhai had just obtained it and had not completely tamed the Wood Spirit. Otherwise, he would have used the power of the Five Elements Primitive World and killed me easily.”

Master Shenhai was really unfortunate. Had Kunlun's Saint of the Five Elements Primitive World not found him, and Zhang Ruochen not killed him, he would have gained the advantage of Qi of Origin and become a Half-Saint, and thus, a legend of the Five Elements Primitive World.

If so, he would have been the “Son of Origin” of the Five Elements Primitive World and the “God-Chosen Emperor,” which would have allowed him to command all the living creatures in the Five Elements Primitive World.

Of course, it was too late to say these things now.

“Since it is the Qi of Origin of the Five Elements Primitive World, once I refine it, I can improve my Martial Soul enough to achieve the Half-Saint level.”

Zhang Ruochen could not conceal his excitement and walked carefully toward the green haze. He opened his hands and activated his Genuine Qi, preparing himself to capture the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit.

“Swoosh!”

The Wood Spirit trembled violently and shot a brilliant green bolt toward Zhang Ruochen.

It just looked like a beam of light, but to Zhang Ruochen, it was like the whole world was crashing down on him to crush his martial soul.

Zhang Ruochen's head was in dire pain. His eyes turned pitch black. It was the kind of pain which destroyed someone's will to live.

The Qi of Origin was not always kind toward human beings in its own world, let alone towards an outsider like Zhang Ruochen.

It felt that Zhang Ruochen wanted to suppress it. Sensing his animosity, it launched a counter attack.

Even though it was from Inferior Primitive World, Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation was not strong enough to tame it.

When Zhang Ruochen's martial soul had nearly been smashed by the Wood Spirit, the Yin Yang Wooden Map suddenly flew out of Zhang Ruochen's eyebrows and started to suppress the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit.

The Wood Spirit seemed to be astonished. It rushed below the earth and intended to flee.

“Swoosh!”

The Yin Yang Wooden Map emitted a glaring light which looked like a dimensional gateway. It suppressed the Wood Spirit and kept it within itself.

Subsequently, the Yin Yang Wooden Map flew toward Zhang Ruochen, ascending in front of his sight.

Zhang Ruochen reached out and took the Yin Yang Wooden Map into his hand.

“It has the ability to seal the Wood Spirit's Qi of Origin of the Five Elements Primitive World into it. This scroll is definitely something!”

Zhang Ruochen was not happy, but he remained dignified. He placed the scroll on the ground, spread it out, and observed carefully.

The scroll was painted magnificently with the Catalogue of the Reckless Wasteland. The scroll was painted with a lofty mountain, a treacherous ancient river, and a steep cliff. An ancient tree towered in the middle of the painting.

According to Blackie, the tree in the middle was the Sacred Prime Tree.

Each line on the scroll was an inscription, including the Inscriptions of Ice, Power, Space, and so on. The scroll had countless of them.

After the Yin Yang Wooden Map had absorbed the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit, it appeared calm, just like an ordinary painted scroll.

“How is this possible? The scroll remains unchanged after absorbing the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned. He could not understand. He pressed his palm to the surface of the scroll and infused his Genuine Qi into it.

The scroll slowly absorbed Genuine Qi.

The Sacred Prime Tree in the scroll seemed to come alive, and its leaves swayed and rustled gently. A few leaves even appeared to emerge from the scroll.

A brief moment passed, but it was like a few months had passed for Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen immediately withdrew his palm and gasped. He was sweaty. The Genuine Qi in his Qi Pool had all been consumed.

He felt weak. Zhang Ruochen’s sight went dark and he almost passed out.

Zhang Ruochen immediately meditated on the “Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Empyrean.” After about half an hour, he finally recovered one tenth of his Genuine Qi and eased his spirit. Then he opened his eyes.

“You’re finally awake!”

Chang Qiqi's face loomed large as she took a close look at Zhang Ruochen. She was relieved when she saw Zhang Ruochen open his eyes. She was excited and smiling.

Huang Yanchen rushed up from afar. She glared at him with her beautiful eyes, and with an unpleasant tone she said, "Zhang Ruochen, what are you pondering and why have you sat motionless for more than ten days?"

"More than ten days?"

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the Yin Yang Wooden Map on the ground and looked puzzled.

How could it have been more than ten days?

He clearly remembered just a brief moment passing, or maybe a few months had passed already...

To him it was just a brief moment, yet the time passed very slowly. It had definitely not been ten days.

How strange!

Maybe he had unconsciously entered the internal space of the Yin Yang Wooden Map.

Zhang Ruochen's mind was in turmoil. He was unsure what he had gone through. If Blackie was there, maybe his uncertainty could be answered.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen humphed. He was surprised to discover that his spiritual power had improved massively. He had broken through to the 41st level.

After spiritual power reached the fortieth level, each level became ten times more difficult to reach. Every level improved was certainly a decisive leap.

Once a warrior's spiritual power reached the forty-fifth level, he could be called the "Half-Saint of Spiritual Power." By using Spiritual Powers, one could compete with the Half-Saint, or even kill him.

An improvement from the fortieth level to the forty-first level was considerable progress.

“The increase of my spiritual power is definitely related to the Universal Holy Wood.”

Zhang Ruochen was excited and if his Genuine Qi had recovered, he would certainly infuse it into the Yin Yang Wooden Map, allowing him to return to the mysterious state he was just in.

Controlling the emotions in his heart, Zhang Ruochen collected the Yin Yang Wooden Map and looked around at the three people who was standing next to him. He asked, “When did all of you come here?”

Huang Yanchen said, “My eldest brother, Elder Brother Chang and I returned to Fengling City. We waited for a day, yet you did not appear. We were worried that you had encountered a tragedy, so we came back to Darksplitting Mountain.”

Si Xingkong said, “We have stayed here for more than ten days. The third round of the test is just one month away, and many students have gone to the entrance of the Primitive World. Since you are wide awake, I’ll just signal the warship to come here and take us to the Primitive World’s entrance. Then, we can return to Myriad Chaos Mountain.”

Chapter 427 - Return to East Region Saint City

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Si Xingkong took out a half-meter long metal cylinder and instilled it with Genuine Qi.

A few bright inscriptions emerged on the surface of the metal cylinder and rushed toward its bottom.

“Swoosh!”

A beam of white light flashed out of the metal cylinder, ascended from the ground, then rushed straight into the clouds.

Typically, once a warrior sent a signal, the Ministry of War ships would arrive in an hour to pick him or her up and go to the Battlefield of the Primitive World.

Zhang Ruochen sneakily put the Yin Yang Wooden Map into the Qi Sea between his eyes.

Although Zhang Ruochen believed in Huang Yanchen, Si Xingkong, and Chang Qiqi, he still had to be careful. Some huge secrets should be kept to oneself.

Once exposed, it would be treacherous toward Zhang Ruochen and the people who had been informed about it.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and released his spiritual power. He clearly felt that the Spiritual Qi between heaven and earth was weakening.

The whole Five Elements Primitive world seemed to be gradually disappearing.

“The Yin Yang Wooden Map has absorbed the Wood Spirit’s Qi of Origin of the Five Elements Primitive World. I am afraid that in a hundred years, the Five Elements Primitive World will become a dead world.”

The loss of the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit would not lead to the immediate disappearance of the Five Elements Primitive World. A long process would eventually lead to its extinction.

First, the flowers and trees would wither and vanish completely.

Then, the environment would spoil, causing the human beings and savage beasts to starve until they were completely extinct.

In the end, the Five Elements Primitive World would become completely desolate. Unless perhaps some creatures not reliant on the Qi of Origin of the Wood Nature survived, such as the creatures of rock, metal, water, and fire.

Zhang Ruochen obviously did not want to see such a situation happen, since it involved the living creatures of the whole world. Maybe he would not kill them, yet he would still be the cause of their deaths.

“The Saints of Kunlun’s Field will certainly perceive the anomalies of the Five Elements Primitive World. With the strong cultivation of the Saints, they should be able to forcefully change the Qi of Origin so that the creatures of the Five Elements Primitive World can continue to survive.”

The first Central Empire was only trying to rule the Five Elements Primitive World, not ruin it. So they would surely find ways to make up for the lack of the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit.

Moreover, after many years, the Five Elements Primitive World would produce a new Qi of Origin of Wood Spirit by itself.

After all, the Five Elements were complementary to each other, existing in a large cycle.

However, it took at least hundreds of thousands of years, if not millions, to cultivate the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit depending on the natural rules. By the time this could happen,

the living creatures of the Five Elements Primitive World would be extinct.

Only the Saints were capable of using their great powers to speed up the production of Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit so that the Spiritual Qi of the Five Elements Primitive World would not erode.

“Nie Wenlong, a master on the

Heaven

Board

of The Saint Academy, actually appeared in Five Elements Primitive World. It must be something coming up from Saint Xu Gentry. I must inform the Saint Academy of this matter so that they will look into it,” Huang Yanchen said with a cold voice.

Huang Yanchen had frozen Nie Wenlong’s body in thick ice as evidence to bring back to the Saint Academy to identify the mastermind supporting him.

Everyone knew that Nie Wenlong’s visit to the Five Elements Primitive World was to murder Zhang Ruochen.

However, Zhang Ruochen was far stronger than he had imagined. Therefore, Zhang Ruochen slew him.

Only a Half-Saint could send a master on the

Heaven Board

to the Five Elements Primitive World.

It gave everybody a chill to think that a Half-Saint from the Saint Academy actually wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen.

Si Xingkong said seriously, “Maybe it is really Saint Xu Gentry who ordered Nie Wenlong to assassinate Zhang Ruochen, but surely they will have prepared for the worst. Therefore, investigating this matter might be of no avail.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “This matter involves the powerful Saint families, which means all of you better not get involved in it. Besides, even if I took Nie Wenlong’s body to

the Saint Academy, nothing could be done to Saint Xu Gentry. We might even arouse suspicion.”

“Bang!”

Zhang Ruochen walked toward Nie Wenlong’s body. He smashed the frozen body with his palm, crushing it into fine powder.

Huang Yanchen had intended to stop him, but it was too late.

Zhang Ruochen did not want Huang Yanchen involved in this matter. She may have had great influence behind her, giving her no reason to fear the Saint Xu Gentry, yet Zhang Ruochen was worried that the Saint Xu Gentry would take her down stealthily. If that happened, they would be caught off guard, which would certainly be nothing but bad for her.

Zhang Ruochen decided to deal with the Saint Xu Gentry patiently.

After about fifteen minutes, a huge metal warship, more than 130 meters long, flew down from the sky and stopped above everyone’s head.

Demi-Saint Lingshu, dressed in red clothes and carrying a Holy Sword, flew down from the top of the warship and smiled. “Zhang Ruchen, congratulations. You became a warrior on the

Heaven Board

after the first time you entered the Battlefield of the Primitive World. You also possessed the highest military merits in the third round of the assessment. I definitely did not judge you wrongly.”

By killing Master Shenhai, Zhang Ruochen would receive 10,000 military merits, which was sufficient to vault him onto the Heaven Board.

“I seek for your audience, Half-Saint.”

Huang Yanchen, Si Xingkong, and Chang Qiqi all respectfully paid homage to the Demi-Saint Lingshu to show their respect.

Zhang Ruochen held his fists in both hands and he saluted Demi-Saint Lingshu. He said, “Entering the Heaven Board

is nothing, the road ahead is still a rather far journey.”

The warriors of the Heaven Realm must compete in the Battlefield of Primitive World for a few years, or even decades, to accumulate 10,000 military merits and be on the Heaven Board.

Zhang Ruochen only needed one month.

However, Zhang Ruochen’s goal was to accumulate 30,000,000 military merits to pursue the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm.

10,000 was just a baby step for him.

Demi-Saint Lingshu said, “Stop being humble. Everybody knows that you are nothing less than extraordinary and that your potential is astonishing. You even managed to destroy the Evil Wood Palace. Your achievement is something that the other students could not do. Of course, in this batch of students, besides you, another person actually accumulated 10,000 military merits and entered the Heaven Board.”

Zhang Ruochen asked with curiosity, “Who?”

Demi-Saint Lingshu said, “She is also a student of Omen Ridge, named Duanmu Xingling.”

“It’s her.”

Although Zhang Ruochen’s face was rather surprised, in fact, he was not surprised at all.

Zhang Ruochen, Duanmu Xingling, Luo Shuihan were all the Six Great Kings of the new generation.

Zhang Ruochen definitely had his trump card, which was destroying a Monk of the Fish-Dragon Realm. But Duanmu Xingling and Luo Shuihan definitely had the same trump card as well.

The difference was that Luo Shuihan’s character was gentle, quiet, and ethereal. She did not like killing, and she would

certainly not perform genocide on indigenous creatures. She would stop after accumulating enough military merits.

On top of that, the other person who had the ability to accumulate 10,000 points military merits was Duanmu Xingling.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Your Excellency, I have received a savage beast in the Five Elements Primitive World, and I would like to bring it back Kunlun's Field..."

Demi-Saint Lingshu looked at the monster ape and said, "It's just a trivial matter. Let me bring it back to the Saint Academy for you. Also, you don't need to address me as 'Your Excellency' or 'Half-Saint' anymore, as someone might think that I was your senior sister apprentice upon returning to the Saint Academy. From today onwards, we are on the same boat."

Zhang Ruochen forced a smile. He did not want to worship Elder Xuanji as his master, but since Demi-Saint Lingshu actually came out with this statement, it meant that Elder Xuanji regarded him highly.

If he continued to refuse, he would be too defiant.

Of course, to worship Elder Xuanji as a master was also a good thing. For Zhang Ruochen, the benefits outweighed the disadvantages.

Led by Demi-Saint Lingshu, everyone got onto the warship and set sail to the Primitive World of the Five Elements.

They waited for another day to depart for the Primitive World.

The students who came to the appraisal were taken over one after another. Then the students took a warship and returned to Myriad Chaos Mountain through the Primitive World.

More than 35,000 students went to the Five Elements Primitive World for the third round assessment, but only around 30,000 students actually made it back. The remaining 5000 talented students had lost their lives in the assessment.

Most of them had been eaten by the savage beasts.

In the Five Elements Primitive World, the savage beasts were much stronger than humans.

The humans only occupied a small territory. Unable to compete with the savage beasts, they only survived in the shadows and crevices.

The third round of assessment only had 14,378 people. They accumulated hundreds of military merits and became Saints of the Saint Academy.

The others were eliminated.

After a brief wait at the Myriad Chaos Mountain, everybody returned to the East Region Saint City and went back to the Saint Academy.

All the students who had become Saints were overjoyed. After they had received certificates and robes, they went in groups to celebrate.

Being a Saint was an incomparable glory, and the future was much assured.

Those students who did not enter the Saint Academy were rather sad, but they were not discouraged.

Since they failed to make it into the Saint Academy, they could just apply for other colleges and Martial Clubs, or even the Ministry of War.

The Seventh District, had more than just a Saint Academy. It had many colleges, such as:

The “Royal Academy,” which was established by the first central imperial court. Although it had a rather shorter history than the Saint Academy, they still had Half-Saints and Saints as instructors. In some aspects, it even surpassed the Saint Academy.

Moreover, students of the Royal Academy also had the opportunity to enter the imperial court in the future, to seal the official crown and become a vassal.

Many genius descendants from the Chens of the East Region Saint Mansion practiced in the Royal Academy. They were

preparing themselves to be part of the imperial court in the future.

In addition, the Great Saint powerful families also set up Martial Clubs in Seventh District to recruit elites from around the world.

Although these Martial Clubs were not quite as good as the Saint Academy and Royal Academy, they were also good choices for training.

Zhang Ruochen did not participate in Huang Yanchen's celebration banquet. He took the Saint's robe and certificate, along with his monster ape, left the Saint Academy, and returned to the Courier Station of the Martial Market.

Zhang Ruochen spoke with his mother briefly and then entered the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel. He continued to study the Yin Yang Wooden Map.

He needed to study the secrets of Yin Yang Wooden Map, as it would provide great help to his practice.

Chapter 428 - The Return of Blackie

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

In the Saint Academy was a deep abode of fairies and immortals.

Demi-Saint Sandao was very angry. He looked ferocious and yelled, "Crap, it's all crap! A so-called master of the Heaven Board is no match against Nie Wenlong. Nie Wenlong's family must die!"

Demi-Saint Sandao had expended a lot of effort to send Nie Wenlong to the Five Elements Primitive World just to eliminate Zhang Ruochen.

He had not expected Zhang Ruochen to make it to the Saint Academy when Nie Wenlong and the outstanding genius from the Saint Xu Gentry, Xu Qing, failed to make it back.

All of them should have died in the Five Elements Primitive World.

It could be said that throw the helve after the hatchet.

Demi-Saint Sandao's great anger was accompanied by powerful energy waves which whistled around the abode of fairies and immortals.

Xu Hai knelt with both hands on the ground. He said coldly, "Elder, Nie Wenlong and Xu Qing must have been killed by Zhang Ruochen."

"Could Zhang Ruochen, a nobody, kill a master of the Heaven Board?" Sandao asked disdainfully, his eyes still full of hostility.

Xu Hai answered, “You forgot something, sir. Zhang Ruochen is the Buddha Emperor’s descendant. Therefore, he surely has some out-of-this-world treasure. Earlier, I saw him accompanied by a savage beast when he returned to the Saint Academy. The cultivation of savage beasts is of the Second Change in the Fish-Dragon Realm. If Zhang Ruochen does not have some crazy treasure with him, how can he have tamed such a strong savage beast?” #

“Moreover, it is said that Zhang Ruochen has accumulated over 10,000 military merit, earning his way onto the Heaven Board.”

“Is that so?”

Demi-Saint Sandao calmed down gradually. With an ever-changing look in his eyes, he said, “Zhang Ruochen is merely a youngster, yet he possesses such amazing powers. If we let him continue to develop, he will definitely be disastrous to our Saint Xu Gentry.”

Xu Hai said, “Let me deal with him.”

Sandao shook his head and said, “Let him be, for the time being. I heard that the second headmaster is pretty fond of him and wants to take him as his disciple. If we attack him in the Seventh District, we will definitely alert the second headmaster.”

“So we’ll just let him go?” Xu Hai asked unhappily.

Sandao smiled and said, “The time will come. Since Zhang Ruochen is already on the

Heaven

Board

, he will certainly practice his way up to the Heaven Realm of the Ultimate Realm. Therefore, he will surely set sail to the Battlefield of Primitive World. And then, that will be our opportunity to deal with him. Right?”

Xu Hai nodded. Suddenly, he thought of something. He immediately said, “I want to inform you about another major event.”

“What is it?”

Xu Hai said, “According to the talented students of the Saint Xu Gentry, the Five Elements Primitive World is a treasure world with five kinds of Spirit Treasure. They are the Golden Ganoderma Lucidum, the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, the Black Glazed Spinel, the Source of Spiritual Fire, and the Nourishing Blood Soil. As long as you can get any of these treasures, you can create as many treasured bodies as you like.”

After listening to the news, Sandao was shocked and surprised. He said, “There are actually such precious Spirit Treasures in the Inferior Primitive World. If we are able to obtain the management rights of the Five Elements Primitive World, we could definitely produce more incredible masters and regain our previous glory.”

Xu Hai said, “I also think so. No matter what, the management rights of the Five Elements Primitive World must be in the hands of the Saint Xu Gentry.”

Not only did Xu Hai want the five Spirit Treasures to improve his physical quality, but Demi-saint Sandao also wanted them to refine the five Spirit Treasures to cultivate into a treasured body.

In that case, his strength would improve to a whole new level.

Sandao’s facial expression kept on changing. He then took out a jade box from his sleeve. He threw it to Xu Hai.

Xu Hai stretched out his hand, and the jade box fluttered into it.

Sandao said, “There’s a Sword Heart Pill in the box. After taking it, your sword technique will improve a lot, which might even allow you to achieve the Realm of Heart Integrated into Sword.”

Xu Hai stared at the box with excitement. He knelt down again and said, “Thank you, sir. If I can break through to the Heart Integrated into Sword, the first thing I’ll do is eliminate Saint Xu Gentry’s biggest enemy—Zhang Ruochen.”

Demi-saint Sandao said, “You may go now!”

Xu Hai left the abode of fairies and immortals.

Sandao frowned and said to himself, "The Five Elements Primitive World contains the five Spirited Treasures. By now, the Great Saints from each powerful family have probably been informed about them. I must be prepared so that the Five Elements Primitive World will not fall into someone else's hands."

Zhang Ruochen had been in the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel for 3 days .

After numerous attempts, the Yin Yang Wooden Map remained motionless and unchanged, no longer exuding the mysterious feeling.

"How could this be? Maybe the Yin Yang Wooden Map needs to absorb the Wood Spirit's Qi of Origin to reawaken it."

Zhang Ruochen took a long breath and took a look at Yin Yang Wooden Map. He smiled in helplessness.

While he was preparing to keep the Yin Yang Wooden Map in his Qi Pool, a Black Cat mark flashed suddenly on the scroll.

"Hey! How could Blackie come to the East Region Saint City?"

The map could sense Blackie's existence only when he was very close to it.

Obviously, Blackie had come to the Seventh District.

The fat cat had taken Han Xue away, and there had been no news since then. Who could ever have thought that he would find his way to the East Region Saint City?

"Since Blackie is here, he might be able to answer my uncertainties," Zhang Ruochen said.

At this moment, a three-meter tall black cat was walking lazily down a bustling street in the Seventh District.

The pads on his feet enabled him to walk smoothly and silently.

A girl of about four or five year sat on his back. She wore a pristine white robe, and she had long green hair. Her skin was

fair and crystal clear, and it gave off a jade glitter.

Her eyes were bright and clear, the lashes long and curled, showing that she was full of Spiritual Qi.

They were a strange duo, and walking down the middle of the street naturally made them the center of everyone's attention.

“What are you looking at? Believe it or not, I'll eat you alive!”

Blackie exposed his teeth and widened his two round eyes. He tried to be fierce by roaring at the people around them.

But Blackie was too fat to be fearsome, even though his face was very fierce. So, he did not scare the people around them.

“It's a talking black cat,” someone said and laughed.

A white-bearded priest stood by the road. His eyes were filled with amazement. He said, “The little girl sitting on the cat's back must certainly be somebody. She is still little, yet her martial cultivation has reached the Completion of the Black Realm. She is probably the disciple of one of the powerful Saint families.”

“How can she be so powerful at such a tender age? Even if she had begun to practice in her mother's womb, it would still be impossible for her to achieve such a high Martial Arts level.”

“Needless to say, even if she were one of the Six Great Kings of the new generation, achieving the Completion of the Black Realm by the age of four is definitely not possible.”

The old priest smiled and said, “This is more than just a black cat. It is not an ordinary savage beast. I can't figure out what it is, even with my current cultivation.”

The people burst out in laughter. They did not believe a single word of the old priest's. In their eyes, he was just an old maniac.

Completing the Yellow Realm by the age of four or five is a remarkable achievement, let alone completing the Black Realm!

“How dare you doubt his words! He is Saint Zi Xiao from the Yin Yang Sect.” An elder of the Fish-Dragon Realm knelt and

paid respect to the old priest with a bow.

“What? It turned out to be the famous Saint Zi Xiao.”

The people on the street knelt down to pay their respect to Saint Zi Xiao.

A Saint was an emperor of Martial Arts.

Commoners had to kneel to pay respect when they met an emperor.

Therefore, warriors also had to kneel down to pay the greatest respect when they met a Saint.

Saint Zi Xiao smiled. He walked toward Blackie and Han Xue. With a gentle tone, he asked, “Little lady, would you like to be my disciple and come with me to the Yin Yang Sect for future practice?”

He wanted a disciple?

The warriors were envious after hearing this. If someone became a disciple of the Saint, his future in the Eastern Region would definitely be promising.

Han Xue shook her head. She answered in a clear voice, “I already have a master, sir!”

Saint Zi Xiao was unmoved, and he remain smiling. He said, “It doesn’t matter if you already have a master or not, you still can be my disciple. I’ll pass on to you every unique technique I know.”

Han Xue remained unmoved.

Saint Zi Xiao would not take “no” for an answer. He continued, “So what is your name? Who is your master? I can pay him a visit to talk about this matter. You need to know that the Yin Yang Sect is a first-class county, which is also famous in Kunlun’s Field...”

Blackie pushed past Saint Zi Xiao. He spoke fiercely, “Old man, you better leave, or else I’ll eat you alive!”

Blackie glared menacingly at Saint Zi Xiao in warning. Then, he walked away with Han Xue.

Saint Zi Xiao smiled ruefully. He shook his head and sighed deeply. “Who knows who her master is? Such a precious jade, born with so many abilities and extraordinary talent. If she’s trained in a proper manner, she could be the next Thousand-Bone Empress. Regrettably, I missed her.”

Saint Zi Xiao knew that there must be an outstanding big shot behind Han Xie. Or else she would not have achieved the Completion of the Black Realm so young.

Saint Zi Xiao was in a good mood. He could not force her, so he left immediately.

Everyone was surprised that the Saint’s offer was rejected. He was even pushed, abused, and threatened by the girl’s strange mount.

“Where did she come from?”

Blackie and Han Xue came to the doorway of the Nanting Courier Station. He glanced into it and said, “I can feel the Yin Yang Wooden Map’s aura. Zhang Ruochen must be in there.”

Han Xue’s eyes glowed brighter. She looked carefully into the Courier Station. Her small white hands grasped her sleeves. Her little heart was excited.

“Swish!”

A figure flashed.

Zhang Ruochen, dressed in a Golden Saint Robe, appeared at the stone stairs outside the Courier Station. He smiled and said, “Finally you are back, Blackie and Han Xue! Oh!”

Zhang Ruochen’s sight focused on Han Xue. His eyes revealed a hint of surprise.

This young girl’s martial cultivation had actually reached the Completion of the Black Realm. Her skills were developing at a faster than Zhang Ruochen’s when he was at that level.

Where had she and Blackie actually gone?

Chapter 429 - Holy Meteorite Sutra

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Master!”

Han Xue was very delighted to see Zhang Ruochen.

She leaped up from Blackie’s back with dexterous body movement and threw herself into Zhang Ruochen’s arms like a pure fairy.

In just one year, the little girl who looked sickly and impoverished had changed dramatically.

It was as if she absorbed some kind of treasure. Every inch of her skin shone like white snow and sent out a slight fragrance.

Zhang Ruochen brought Blackie and Han Xue into the Courier Station of Martial Market and settled them down into his room.

“Blackie, where have you been with Han Xue during the past year? And how could Han Xue reach The Completion of Black Realm in such a short time?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Blackie shrunk his body to the size of a fist, lying on the jade stone table, and said, “Don’t you know that she has the Thousand-bones Physical Quality? Of course I took her to the Holy Meteorite Shrine to worship the Thousand Bones Empress.”

Thousand Bones Empress was one of the strongest in Kunlun’s Field in the entire history, who was as famous as Saint Monk Xumi.

In her era, invincible was her middle name, and no one could withstand even one of her moves. It is said that she could slaughter Gods at the peak of her life.

However, she disappeared in Kunlun's Field after slaughtering the God. No one knew where she had gone.

Han Xue had 1,008 bones, which was similar to the physical quality of Thousand Bones Empress.

This kind of physical quality could only be found once in a hundred thousand years.

It was for this reason that Blackie took her to the Holy Meteorite Shrine.

Zhang Ruochen said surprisedly, "You actually went to Holy Meteorite Shrine?"

Holy Meteorite Shrine was one of the forbidden areas in Kunlun's Field where an ancient race, the Holy Meteorite People, lived.

The humans and savage beasts of Kunlun's Field would surely die once they enter the Holy Meteorite Shrine.

"Thousand Bones Empress was one of the Holy Meteorite People. Since Han Xue has Thousand-bones physical quality, certainly I should take her to the Holy Meteorite Shrine and help her complete a special sacrificial ceremony to unlock the Sacred Mark," Blackie said while rolling his eyes.

"Moreover, only by worshipping the Thousand Bones Empress can she get the blessings of the Thousand Bones Empress. And so she will embark on the path of an Empress in the future under the shelter of Thousand Bones Empress."

"Worship the Thousand Bones Empress? Has she already died?" Zhang Ruochen asked skeptically.

"A human is still mortal, even if their cultivation is very high," Blackie sighed.

"Zhang Ruochen, do you know what kind of exercises Han Xue practices? It's the Holy Meteorite Sutra, the unique technique of Thousand Bones Empress. Do you know it? Of

course you don't, and surely you won't know how to teach her, so let her be my disciple!"

"Will you teach her the Holy Meteorite Sutra?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Of course."

"I once dominated Kunlun's Field. I was knowledgeable and omniscient. Even the Holy Meteorite Sutra, I have read it once," Blackie said proudly.

Han Xue laughed, "Blackie is bragging again. The Holy Meteorite Sutra flew from the underground by itself when we worshipped the Thousand Bones Empress. If Master wants to see, I can take it out for you right now."

A white light spot emerged from Han Xue's glabella and turned into a Sacred Mark. Then a mysterious white Holy Book flew out of her Qi lake.

The white Holy Book was made of an unknown material that was neither gold nor jade, neither stone nor wood. The book was about a foot long and two fingers thick with tadpole script on the cover. Even Zhang Ruochen who has powerful spiritual power couldn't read it easily.

Zhang Ruochen just glanced at the Holy Meteorite Sutra and returned it. "When I hit the Sacred Realm of Half-Saint in the future, I'll probably borrow it, but now its not the time. So quickly put it away and never let the others see it," Zhang Ruochen patted on Han Xue's head and laughed.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen wanted to read the unique technique of Thousand Bones Empress and perceive the Martial Arts quintessence in that.

However, with his current cultivation, it was not suitable for him to perceive the Holy Meteorite Sutra.

The Holy Meteorite Sutra was mysterious and magical, and it was no less inferior than the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Emphyrean. If Zhang Ruochen couldn't help but fall into a state of deep perceiving, his practicing of Scripture of Emperor Ming's Emphyrean will certainly be affected.

After all, the Holy Meteorite Sutra was extremely valuable for any warrior. Once you took a look, you would surely fall into a cultivation mania.

Zhang Ruochen was also unsure whether he could still keep being logical after reading the Holy Meteorite Sutra.

Han Xue stared at Zhang Ruochen, while blinking her eyes.

She really wanted to share the Holy Meteorite Sutra with Zhang Ruochen.

Her small hand held the Holy Meteorite Sutra, and she didn't know what to do with the book.

“Oh!”

A bloody shadowy figure like ghost flew from the distance at an extremely fast speed.

She flew over from Han Xue's side and snatched the Holy Meteorite Sutra with a foul wind when Zhang Ruochen and Blackie was not paying attention.

“Zhang Ruochen, if you don't want it, let me take it for you.”

Blood Spirit Queen flashed her body once more and landed on the top of the roof twelve feet away.

She wore a blood red robe with her hair full of blood, and her graceful body was wrapped in a cloud of blood mist.

“Blood Spirit Queen, how did you find this place?” Zhang Ruochen resigned.

“Of course I followed you to the East Region Saint City. I had intended to find an opportunity to drain your blood, but I didn't expect to get the Holy Meteorite Sutra. In this case, then I let you live for a few more days,” Blood Spirit Queen sneered.

Blood Spirit Queen held that white Holy Book with one hand, and the other hand clasped behind her back, smiling triumphantly.

The huge harvest made it worth it to follow Zhang Ruochen from Omen Ridge to East Region Saint City.

With the Holy Meteorite Sutra, she would have a greater chance of attaining the Sacred Realm of Half-Saint, and even reaching a higher achievement.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Violet Thunder Sword. His eyes were extremely cold and sharp. "I advise you to immediately return the Holy Meteorite Sutra. Otherwise, today will be your funeral." He warned.

Blood Spirit Queen disdainfully sneered, saying, "Zhang Ruochen, perhaps you overestimate yourself. Last time, you were able to suck away part of my Half Saint's Light only because I did not take precautions. Do you think I would give you a second chance to do so?"

If Blood Spirit Queen had taken something else, Zhang Ruochen might have had just tolerated it.

But Blood Spirit Queen took away the Han Xue's practice skill book, so even if the strength of Zhang Ruochen was much weaker compared to Xueling Wang's, Zhang Ruochen would fight with his all against the Blood Spirit Queen to get back the Holy Meteorite Sutra.

"There is no time for you to talk nonsense. I will leave now and go back to perceive the Holy Meteorite Sutra. Zhang Ruochen, you can't stop me. Ha Ha!"

Blood Spirit Queen gave a loud laugh, turned around, and prepared to leave.

"Swoosh!"

Suddenly, a beam of sword light carrying the power of the thunderbolt approached and stopped right in front of her glabella instantly.

"What happened? Who is it?"

Blood Spirit Queen fixed her eyes and found that Zhang Ruochen was the one who wielded that sword.

In such a close distance, the tip of the sword would reach her head in the blink of an eye, so it was too late for her to release her Celestial Bodyshield.

"How could it be?"

“When did he show up behind her? Was he that strong?”

She didn't know that what Zhang Ruochen has just displayed is the Space Moving which had already surpassed normal warriors' speed. He teleported behind her by only thinking it.

Zhang Ruochen knew very well that he wouldn't get many opportunity like this to kill her or give her fatal wounds if they were to fight openly. He would not have another opportunity if he failed to kill her after this attack.

...

Chapter 430 - Battle with the Blood Spirit Queen

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Blood Spirit Queen had already merged with one third of the Half-Saint's Light, strengthening her martial soul more than ever.

Her martial soul was already the strongest of the Half-Saints.

Also, when she came to the East Region Saint City, she had absorbed a lot of blood from many Martial Arts masters. Her current strength was equal to that of the Monk of the Seventh Change in the Fish-Dragon Realm.

Although Zhang Ruochen was fast, her reactions were much faster. She backed off and turned into a series of shadows, narrowly evading the strikes.

“Swish!”

Zhang Ruochen used the Space Moving technique once again, appearing behind the Blood Spirit Queen. He struck down with his sword.

The Blood Spirit Queen was agile enough to evade the strike once again. It was as if she had eyes in the back.

“Swish!”

“Swish!”

...

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Ruochen used 18 Space Moves, appearing in 18 different positions and attacking with 18 murderous strikes.

The Blood Spirit Queen also changed her position 18 times, dodging Zhang Ruochen's attacks every time.

"She is so fast! Even with the extreme speed of Space Moving, I can't do her any harm!" Zhang Ruochen was astonished.

Although he could move quickly, Zhang Ruochen needed a little time to draw his sword.

The Blood Spirit Queen used the pause to anticipate Zhang Ruochen's strikes. Therefore, she could avoid every one of them.

Finally, the Blood Spirit Queen calmed down. She stopped moving and put up the Celestial Bodyshield.

"Boom!"

Her Celestial Bodyshield let out a blood-red Qi Wave. The blast struck out like a tsunami in all directions, forming a ball about 30 meters across.

The cultivation of the Monk in the Sixth Change of Fish-Dragon Realm was extremely fearsome. Even her protective Celestial Bodyshield was overwhelming Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen immediately retreated by moving through space to about 30 meters away from the unyielding Qi.

After getting on his feet, a column of light above Zhang Ruochen's head condensed into a Martial Soul. He then began to mobilize the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi.

He was prepared to use the power of his Martial Soul to continue battling against the Blood Spirit Queen.

"Zhang Ruochen, it turns out that you are using space power. It seems that you have some secret powers!"

The Blood Spirit Queen had a partial memory of a Half-Saint, therefore she could judge the fluctuation of space.

Moreover, only the legendary Space Moving technique could allow a warrior to move so quickly. It had almost caught her off guard.

Although Zhang Ruochen could move very fast, he could harm the Blood Spirit Queen while her Celestial Bodyshield

was active.

After all, Zhang Ruochen's cultivation was only in the Heaven Realm. It was impossible for him to break the defence of a Monk of the Sixth Change in the Fish-Dragon Realm.

In addition, the Blood Spirit Queen had the Half-Saint's Light to protect herself. Only a Half-Saint could overcome her defense.

Zhang Ruochen's expression remained unchanged. He continued to control his Martial Soul.

As Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul continued to mobilize the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi, the aura in his body increased continuously, surpassing mortal limits.

The Blood Spirit Queen was surprised. She said, "You previously took away only 1% of the Half-Saint's Light, yet it actually made your Martial Soul so powerful."

Zhang Ruochen said coldly, "Since I could take away 1% of the Half-Saint's Light, the remaining 99% of it should not be a problem. Since you are digging your own grave, I'll grant your death wish. I can use your Half-Saint's Light to help me to get into the Medium State of the Heaven Realm."

In the Five Elements Primitive World, Zhang Ruochen had successfully refined the Black-Glazed Crystal. He used it to achieve the peak of the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

If Zhang Ruochen could absorb more Half-Saint's Light, he could use the energy to break through to another realm.

"How dare you! Your Martial Soul may be stronger compared to the others, but your Martial Soul is just a feeble one compared to mine. I just need to stretch a finger to kill you."

Zhang Ruochen was firm. He said, "I don't think so."

The Blood Spirit Queen snorted derisively. She said, "I was about to let you live a few more days, but since you want to fight me so badly, I'll just kill you now."

The Blood Spirit Queen had fused with the Golden Cloud Half-Saint's Light. Zhang Ruochen had refined the holy blood

of the Golden Cloud Half-Saint, and so he was a bane to the Blood Spirit Queen.

Only killing Zhang Ruochen would ease the Blood Spirit Queen's worries.

Zhang Ruochen's Martial Spirit ascended above his head. He employed a Spirit Summon technique to take away the Half-Saint's Light from the Blood Spirit Queen.

"Boom!"

The Blood Spirit Queen's mind was roaring. Her Qi Pool was surging out of control, as if it was about to rush out of her forehead.

"Whoosh... "

Zhang Ruochen opened a Space Vortex and tore the Celestial Bodyshield of Blood Spirit Queen. He appeared in front of her and pointed his finger between her eyes.

"Zhang Ruochen, are you still trying to use the Spirit Summon technique to take away my Half-Saint's Light?"

The Blood Spirit Queen had already planned a defense against the Spirit Summon technique. She was calm. She opened her bloody red lips and spat out a three inch Blood Sword. The sword flew straight through Zhang Ruochen's Celestial Bodyshield and struck him in the heart.

The Dragon Pearl in his heart blocked the Blood Sword with a gold brilliance.

Although the Dragon Pearl had protected his heart, it could not protect the blood vessels in his body.

Most of Zhang Ruochen's blood vessels broke. He had heavy internal bleeding, and he spat out loads of blood.

Blackie yelled, "Zhang Ruochen, use the Yin Yang Wooden Map to suppress her!"

"Will it work?"

Although Zhang Ruochen was quite puzzled, he still withdrew the Yin Yang Wooden Map from between his eyes and struck at the Blood Spirit Queen.

“She is just a Blood Spirit that is controlled by the Half-Saint’s Light. The Yin Yang Wooden Map may not be able to suppress human beings, but it can overcome evil.”

Blackie suddenly jumped into the Yin Yang Wooden Map.

A few spiral waves were emitted from the surface of the scroll. Then, Blackie disappeared.

“Whoosh!”

Under Blackie’s control, a blinding light came from the Yin Yang Wooden Map, flew around the Blood Spirit Queen, and bound her.

Blackie’s voice could be heard from the Yin Yang Wooden Graph. He said excitedly, “Great! The Yin Yang Wooden Map absorbed so much of the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit. At first I thought our effort would ended in vain, but now, I am full of confidence.”

The Blood Spirit Queen looked worried. She could feel a limitless power over her head striking down at her. The power focused on her body, suppressing her and rendering her motionless.

“Zhang Ruochen, use the Soul Summon technique to absorb the Half Saint’s Light from her body,” Blackie said.

There was no need for Blackie to give the order. Zhang Ruochen had already moved to the front of Blood Spirit Queen. He reached out his forefinger to strike her between the eyes.

Swish!

The Half-Saint’s Light from the Blood Spirit Queen’s forehead poured out wildly. The light went through Zhang Ruochen’s forefinger and into his forehead.

The Half-Saint’s Light gathered between Zhang Ruochen’s eyes and turned into a white ball of light.

Chapter 431 - Capture the Half-Saint's Light

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Half-Saint's Light contained tremendous energy. Each ray of light was like a hot magmatic river. It emerged from the glabella of Blood Spirit Queen and entered into Zhang Ruochen's Qi Sea.

The vital essence in Zhang Ruochen's Qi Sea was violently boiling. And the power from the Half-Saint's Light could likely melt his body.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen reached the Ultimate Realm three times, which caused the Chord of Gods three times.

Therefore, his Qi Sea, which was guarded by the power of the gods, could accommodate the power of the Half-Saint's Light.

As Blood Spirit Queen shouted, the surface of her skin quickly squirmed and a red, bloody meridian emerged.

There were two blue bulges growing in her forehead, and in her mouth, two long fangs were exposed. The previously beautiful face instantly became very ferocious, like an ugly evil monster.

A bloody gas that was spat out of her mouth corroded all the surrounding buildings.

At the same time, her power increased greatly, and she brandished a pair of blood-red claws and hit the Yin Yang Wooden Graph above her head.

“Pow!”

The Yin Yang Wooden Graph shook violently and tilted to the left, as if it would fly out.

“Wow, her Spiritual Blood is so exuberant that the Yin Yang Wooden Graph can’t control her.” The voice of Blackie appeared to be anxious as it spread out from the Yin Yang Wooden Graph.

“Boom!”

The sound of a loud noise continued to ring out.

Blood Spirit Queen shot out a total of 37 handprints and finally sent out the Yin Yang Wooden Graph.

Afterward, she patted one of her palms and Spiritual Blood flowed out from it. It was like a bloody wave of water and it produced a bang.

In the center of the water, a huge five-meter handprint was faintly visible.

As she broke away from the Yin Yang Wooden Graph, the power of Blood Spirit Queen completely erupted, even Zhang Ruochen could not withstand a palm that she shot out.

Seeing the flying handprint, Zhang Ruochen immediately used his Space Moving and disappeared. He appeared on top of Blood Spirit Queen’s head and stroked his fingers to utilize space power.

“Ch-ch!”

As his finger stroked, space was torn, as if a piece of paper was being cut by a blade, and a long crack appeared above Blood Spirit Queen.

Blood Spirit Queen perceived the danger and immediately used her bodily movement to rush to the left to escape the Space Crack.

Zhang Ruochen seemed to have guessed that she would dodge to the left, so he utilized Space Moving once again and appeared behind her in a single step.

He displayed the Space Crack and cut the right arm of Blood Spirit Queen.

“Crack!”

Blood Spirit Queen’s arm was cut off by a 15-meter-long Space Crack, and it flew up and was thrown far away.

Blood dripped down.

There was a white brilliance coming from the hand of that severed arm, which was the

Holy Meteorite Sutra

.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the severed arm and retrieved the

Holy Meteorite Sutra

. He threw it to Han Xue, then attacked Blood Spirit Queen again.

“Blood Spirit Queen, the Half-Saint’s Light in your body has all been sucked out by me. You have lost the protection of the Half-Saint’s Light. Now is your time to die,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Blood was constantly gushing out of Blood Spirit Queen’s wrist. Her face was rather awkward and cold as she said, “If not for the suppression of that picture scroll making me lose power, how could you hurt me?”

Just now, Zhang Ruochen was able to cut off Blood Spirit Queen’s arm, and not just because of the mysticism of Space Moving. There was a more important reason that Blood Spirit Queen was indeed brutally defeated by the Yin Yang Wooden Graph.

Otherwise, the Heaven Realm warrior would not have been able to hurt the superior in the Sixth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

At this point, the war between them finally frightened Lei Jing in Courier Station of the Martial Market.

“What an evil thing to dare to make turmoil in Courier Station of the Martial Market.”

Lei Jing's eyes widened while shouting. He flew out of a courtyard in Courier Station, displaying a paw print and striking in the void space.

“Bang!”

The empty void space was attacked by Lei Jing, where a blood-red array light screen immediately emerged.

At the top of the light screen, a fist-sized blood bead floated.

Looking at the blood bead from below, it could be clearly seen that there was an inscription, which was an array bead on the surface of the blood bead.

Blood Spirit Queen had set that array bead in the sky above the courtyard where Zhang Ruochen lived. Therefore, the superiors in Courier Station of the Martial Market did not discover the fluctuations of the fighting inside.

Lei Jing was the first to notice it because of his powerful cultivation.

“Bam!”

Lei Jing simply waved his hand and struck, tearing the bloody light screen. He rushed in and fell at Zhang Ruochen's side.

Just before Lei Jing appeared, Blood Spirit Queen had already flown out of Courier Station of the Martial Market and disappeared without a trace.

Lei Jing chased after her. However, he did not catch up with Blood Spirit Queen and soon returned. He wondered, “It was the aura of the Blood-sucking Monster in Omen Ridge. How could she pursue you to East Region Saint City?”

“She must have followed and tracked us here,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Lei Jing saw Zhang Ruochen's pale face and the blood in the corner of his mouth. He immediately walked over and seized Zhang Ruochen's wrist to check the condition of his injury.

“The blood vessels in your body have broken. You're just entirely depending on the Divine Dragon Strength of the

Dragon Pearl. If you don't heal your wounds, I'm afraid that it will affect your Martial Arts practice in the future."

Lei Jing gave him a stern look and berated him. "Cure the injury immediately. If you have incurable injuries, you'll regret it for your entire life."

Previously, Zhang Ruochen was only thinking that he had to leave Blood Spirit Queen behind to help Han Xue recapture the

Holy Meteorite Sutra

. Therefore, even if he suffered severe internal injuries, he would still try to persist.

But when Blood Spirit Queen fled, Zhang Ruochen discovered that he was really hurt.

He immediately took some of a healing Pill and sat down cross-legged to operate the fourth exercises of the

Scripture of Emperor Ming's Empyrean

.
Blue Genuine Qi quickly revolved in his Meridians, flowed out of his Qi Sea, passed through his five internal organs, and formed a large circle of vital energy that flowed through his body.

Every place that the Genuine Qi flowed through, along with the broken blood vessels, was automatically renewed.

At the same time, the Half-Saint's Light in his Qi Sea also turned into a thin line of light that followed the Blue Genuine Qi and entered his body's 36 Meridians.

As the blood vessels continued connecting, a small part of the Half-Saint's Light merged into the blood, but most of the Half-Saint's Light was absorbed by Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul.

Blood Spirit Queen had only merged one-third of the Half-Saint's Light, the remaining two-thirds were absorbed into the Qi Sea by Zhang Ruochen and turned into a ball of light that was suspended in the center of the Qi Sea.

Originally, Zhang Ruochen only refined 1% of the Half-Saint's Light. As a result, his strength of the Martial Soul reached the Monk Level of the Fourth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Thus, it could be seen that two-thirds of the Half-Saint's Light contained such a huge amount of energy.

If it was fully refined, the strength of Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul could definitely reach the Monk Level in the Ninth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

After spending a full day and night, Zhang Ruochen's injury stabilized.

The main blood vessels in his body were almost completely renewed, and the injury was restored to 40%.

As long as he did not have a match with anyone within the next three days, the injury would be fully restored.

Lei Jing had been standing next to him, watching out for Blood Spirit Queen.

After seeing Zhang Ruochen get up, he breathed a sigh of relief and asked with concern, "Zhang Ruochen, how do you feel?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said with a smile, "Thank you, master. I have the protection of the Dragon Pearl. Even if it's a serious injury, I also can get through it."

Lei Jing's eyes were cold as he said, "The Blood-sucking Monster is definitely trying to seize your Dragon Pearl. Therefore, she chased you from Omen Ridge to East Region Saint City. The next time you encounter her, you must be careful."

Lei Jing did not know the real reason why Blood Spirit Queen wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen. He only thought that Blood Spirit Queen wanted to snatch his Dragon Pearl.

Zhang Ruochen did not want to make too many explanations on this matter. He followed the meaning of Lei Jing and said, "So many people want to capture my Dragon Pearl, not only Blood Spirit Queen."

Lei Jing nodded his head and said, “Yeah, you have shown the Divine Dragon Transformation on the Stairway to Heaven. You have already revealed the secret of the Dragon Pearl and can’t continue to cover it up. In the future, I’m afraid that more powerful people will come to confront you.

“In the Seventh District, there are many Saints and Half-Saints, so it’s still relatively safe. But once you’re out of the Seventh District, or out of East Region Saint City, it’s a real danger.”

Blood Spirit Queen had dared to shoot Zhang Ruochen in Courier Station of the Martial Market in the Seventh District. She had to have strictly arranged it in advance.

This time, she could not succeed. In the future, she would never have a chance.

Saint Academy and Royal Academy were in the Seventh District. There was also a Martial Club opened by each Saint’s powerful family. So many strong people were gathered there.

For evil warriors, the Seventh District was a forbidden place. Once they entered, they would certainly be killed.

Even the Saint Xu Gentry—they also did not dare to hurt Zhang Ruochen in the Seventh District, even though they hated him.

“Master, I am very clear about the current situation. For the time being, I will stay in East Region Saint City and impact the Medium State of the Heaven Realm and try my best to improve my strength. Only when I break through the realm will I consider going to the Battlefield of the Primitive World,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“That’s fine.”

Lei Jing said, “I’ve recently been in a critical breakthrough period. I’m afraid that I will be secluding myself for refining for a period of time and won’t have much energy to help you.”

Zhang Ruochen did not care whether or not he would get Lei Jing’s help but instead showed his happiness. “Will master open up the Blunt Holy Meridian to break through to the Eighth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm?”

The Fish-dragon Realm Monk had to open up five holy Meridians in the body. This was the last one.

To open up the Blunt Holy Meridian, the Monk would be able to open up five holy Meridians and form a whole body cycle, and the cultivation would reach a new level.

Lei Jing nodded his head gently and sighed. “Every change in the Fish-dragon Realm is a step. You get closer to a Half-Saint when you cross a step. In fact, I’m not quite sure. I just came to East Region Saint City to buy some precious Spiritual Doses and Pills to try it once.”

“Oh! Thank you for your

Blood and God Classics.

Otherwise, I absolutely couldn’t reach the Peak of the Seventh Change of the Fish-dragon Realm so quickly.”

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment and said, “I can help you.”

After that, Zhang Ruochen took out a huge Black Glazed Spinel, which weighed about 6 kilograms, and handed it to Lei Jing.

Chapter 432 - The Medium State of the Heaven Realm

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Lei Jing did not hold out much hope for the Eighth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Even those Half-Saint families who could reach the Seventh Change in the Fish-dragon Realm could be regarded as rare. To reach the Eighth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm was even more difficult.

It was the first time that he tried to practice the Eighth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. According to his estimation, there was only a maximum of a 20% chance that he could succeed.

However, when he saw the black spinel that Zhang Ruochen had taken out, his eyes were wide open and his lips quivered as he said, "How strong the Spiritual Qi of water nature is. Is this a Spirit Treasure of Origin of water nature?"

"Yes. This is a Spirit Treasure of Origin of water nature, the Black Glazed Spinel. Please accept it, my dear Master, because this is a little token of my regards as a disciple," said Zhang Ruochen.

It was enough for Lei Jing to practice the Treasured Body of the Water Spirit with so much Spirit Treasure of Origin of water nature, saving him 10 years of penance.

Not to even mention the Eighth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, the Blunt Holy Meridian, but he could even have the opportunity to reach the Ninth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, the Glazed Treasured Body, within 10 years.

Half-Saint was expected.

Lei Jing also admired the things that the Half-Saints regarded as treasures.

With his own disciple, no formalities were needed. Lei Jing did not make any pretense as he took the Black Glazed Spinel and turned away. He secluded himself for refining and began to strike for the Eighth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to give Lei Jing the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, but when he saw Lei Jing leaving, he put it away, thinking that he might give it to him later.

The relationship between Zhang Ruochen and Lei Jing was not so much like a teacher and a student as it was a teacher and a friend.

“First, heal the injury and then strike for the Medium State of the Heaven Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen told Blackie and asked him to help teach the monster ape and Greedy Rabbit Guoguo, hoping they could achieve a higher level.

Later, he returned to the room and entered the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel and began to practice.

After six days, not only had Zhang Ruochen’s injury healed, but he also absorbed the Half-Saint’s Light from the Qi Sea.

After absorbing the Half-Saint’s Light, Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul had reached the Fifth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Moreover, his cultivation had also grown, infinitely approaching the Medium State of the Heaven Realm.

Over the next six days, Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul constantly absorbed the Half-Saint’s Light. With the help of that energy, he finally succeeded to the Medium State of the Heaven Realm.

In the moment of breaking through the realm, Zhang Ruochen took out over 1,000 Spiritual Spinels and sucked Spiritual Qi into his body, causing the Vital Essence in the Qi Sea to become stronger.

At this time, Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul had approached the Sixth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

However, the rate of absorbing the Half-Saint's Light became slower and slower. It seemed that it had been suppressed by some kind of power and had reached a critical point.

“It should be that the Martial Soul is too strong while the realm of Martial Arts is too low. I have reached the strongest state of the realm of the Martial Soul. Only when the realm breaks out again can the Martial Soul continue to absorb the Half-Saint's Light.”

Zhang Ruochen's problems were similar to those of Blood Spirit Queen.

Blood Spirit Queen could not completely absorb the Half-Saint's Light because her body was not strong enough.

She could only continue to suck blood and strengthen her body, so that she could continue to blend the Half-Saint's Light.

Even so, her ability to improve her strength was still alarmingly fast.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was not discouraged at all. For the Medium State of the Heaven Realm, he could lift up the Martial Soul to the same level as that of the Sixth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. It was even more unlikely that other warriors in the Medium State of the Heaven Realm could exceed this limit.

In the same realm, his Martial Soul was the strongest.

“To take advantage of the power of the Martial Soul, I should be able to face up to a Monk who is in the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen was able to kill Master Shenhai in the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm in the Five Elements Primitive World because he had the Holy Sword and joined forces with the monster ape. Finally, he used space forces to kill him.

Now, even if Zhang Ruchen did not use the Holy Sword and space forces, he would surely be a match for Master Shenhai.

“Since I have reached the Medium State of the Heaven Realm, I can also continue to refine the Black Glazed Spinel and strive to the Treasured Body of the Water Spirit in one stroke. As long as I succeed, my strength will certainly be able to go further.”

To cultivate to the Treasured Body of the Water Spirit, one needed to absorb 5 kilograms of Black Glazed Spinel.

Zhang Ruochen had absorbed 3.25 kilograms.

Zhang Ruochen took out a piece of Black Glazed Spinel that weighed about 500 grams and placed it between his hands, mobilizing his Genuine Qi and transporting it to the Meridians of his hands and spewing it out of his palm.

“Snap!”

At the clash of Genuine Qi, the Black Glazed Spinel broke into a grain of powder.

The Genuine Qi was like bubbles, wrapping around the powder of the Black Glazed Spinel and flowing back into the pores and into the body’s Meridians.

Following the Genuine Qi’s flow, the Black Glazed Spinel melted into Zhang Ruochen’s bones, blood, muscles, and internal organs, and continued to improve Zhang Ruochen’s physical quality.

In a flash, the Black Glazed Spinel was completely absorbed.

Every 500 grams of refining was equivalent to the achievement of one year’s practice.

Zhang Ruochen felt that his cultivation had grown a lot, and the Vital Essence in the Qi Sea had become more profound.

“Go on.”

And then, Zhang Ruochen once again refined 1 kilogram of Black Glazed Spinel, finally, closing in on the limits of the body.

“I have absorbed more than 4.75 kilograms of Black Glazed Spinel, but I have not yet been able to cultivate to the Treasured Body of the Water Spirit.”

Zhang Ruochen could clearly perceive the Spiritual Qi of water nature. He could even see that a small droplet of water had leaped into the air.

However, the Spiritual Qi of water nature was not controlled by him at all and did not actively fly to him.

Thus, it was evident that he had not really cultivated himself into the Treasured Body of the Water Spirit.

“Continue to refine.”

This time, Zhang Ruochen took out a Black Glazed Spinel that was the size of a pigeon egg, about 100 grams.

Just as the Black Glazed Spinel was being absorbed into his body, Zhang Ruochen felt abnormally uncomfortable as the body almost reached saturation—even if it absorbed 50 grams, it would suffer tremendous pain.

“Is it necessary to wait until I reach the Final State of the Heaven Realm in order to cultivate the Treasured Body of the Water Spirit? No, I must succeed. In the Medium State of the Heaven Realm, I will practice cultivation into a Treasured Body of the Water Spirit.”

Zhang Ruochen clenched his teeth and drove his Genuine Qi.

There were drops of sweat on his body and his clothes were completely soaked.

After spending an entire half day, he finally absorbed the 100 grams of Black Glazed Spinel, but he still did not cultivate himself into a Treasured Body of the Water Spirit.

At this point, Zhang Ruochen had refined 4.85 kilograms of Black Glazed Spinel.

No one knew how much Black Glazed Spinel needed to be refined in order to cultivate into a Treasured Body of the Water Spirit. Zhang Ruochen could only estimate roughly 5 kilograms. It might be 4.9 kilograms, or it might be 5.1 kilograms.

It seemed that it was only a small difference, but it was most important.

Many people might not cultivate into a Treasured Body of the Water Spirit in their lifetime just because of 50 grams.

Zhang Ruochen did not give up and he once again took out a 100 grams of Black Glazed Spinel and continued to refine it.

“Bam!”

Just as he began absorbing, Zhang Ruochen felt a great pain. It came from the depths of his bone marrow, spreading out from his internal organs and coming out from his mind.

His body seemed like it was being broken by the power of the Black Glazed Spinel, and his blood was constantly pouring out. His bones, which sounded “squeaky”, might have been crushed at any time.

But at the same time, the Power of Origin of the Black Glazed Spinel slowly blended into the body of Zhang Ruochen.

Only by experiencing the toughest hardships can one rise above the ordinary.

Even though his skin was cracked and his blood stained his body, Zhang Ruochen still did not give up and still insisted. If you don't push yourself to the limit, how can you know that you can't do it?

Chapter 433 - Blackie's Impartation

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Ordinary people could not endure such tearing pain.

Zhang Ruochen's body was constantly shattered and blood poured out of every inch of his skin. At this moment, he looked ferocious and terrifying, like a Blood Devil sitting with his legs crossed.

Half a day passed.

The blood on his body solidified and formed a layer of red brown blood scab.

“SNAP!”

Suddenly, the blood scab on his shoulders cracked with a breaking sound.

Subsequently, the number of cracks gradually increased and spread out in all directions like spider webs.

Every crack gave off an intense black light. Suddenly, a roar sounded and the blood scab that covered Zhang Ruochen's body flew out like the broken shards of a vase.

Zhang Ruochen sat with his legs crossed on the ground with all his pores opened. The Spiritual Qi of water nature was absorbed into his body and turned into Vital Essence.

He did not take deliberately absorb the Spiritual Qi of the water nature. Instead, it flew into his body automatically.

After refining nine catties and nine taels of Black Glazed Spinel, Zhang Ruochen finally succeeded in practicing the Treasured

Body of Water Spirit.

Zhang Ruochen stepped out of the internal space of Time and Space Spinel and stood under the golden eaves. As he lifted his arms, water droplets were immediately condensed in the air.

The water droplets constantly merged and finally formed a stream. The stream suspended in mid air, five meters high from the ground. It flowed slowly with a crash.

“Hit!”

Zhang Ruochen sharpened his eyes and swang his arm.

The stream seemed to sense his power and immediately condensed into thirteen crystal clear ice spikes. And then, they flew out to hit a seven meter high rock.

Like piercing through tofu, the ice spikes flew in silence and left thirteen holes in the rock.

“Rumors has it that if one succeeds in practicing the Treasured Body of Water Spirit, he can freeze a lake just by pointing his finger. Also, he can instantly melt an iceberg and turn it into a raging torrent.”

Zhang Ruochen was quite satisfied with his Treasured Body of Water Spirit.

He could fly in the sky by manipulating the Spiritual Qi of water nature.

However, his current realm was too low and his vital essence was not strong. Therefore, he only could fly for only a short distances at low speed.

Therefore, compared with the Spiritual Qi of the water nature, it would be better to use the force of Dragon Pearl to form a pair of dragon wings.

“Refining three catties and four taels of Black Glazed Spinel is equivalent to my cultivation for three and a half years. As a result, my cultivation has enhanced a lot. Now, I may be at the Mid Stage of the Medium State in the Heaven Realm.

Zhang Ruochen was not in a hurry to continue refining Golden Ganoderma Lucidum and Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, so he stepped to the courtyard.

It might not be good to blindly seclude oneself for refining. Going out for a walk frequently might be more enlightening and allowed chances for reflections.

At a distance, he had heard Blackie's voice.

The sun was high in the sky and shined brightly. The sun gently glistened through the leaves and casted all sorts of strange shadows on the ground.

Blackie sat with his legs crossed on a tall white stone table and raised his head with a proud look, saying in a clear and loud voice, "You must know that the practice of savage beasts is very different from that of human beings. Human practice requires not only the Sacred Mark but also exercises and rare books. Moreover, they must practice Heart State and Martial Soul."

"Those who use swords should practice the realm of sword technique."

"Those who practice palm should practice the realm of palm technique."

"Those who use knives should practice the realm of knife technique."

"However, the way savage beasts practice is very simple. It can be summed up in one word — eating."

"The more they ate, the faster their strength can grow. The better the quality of food that they eat, the stronger their physique will become."

Guoguo sat on the left side underneath the Blackie. It suddenly laughed out loud and showed its two white rabbit teeth and said, "I'm the best at eating! I can eat a whole elephant for one meal. Unexpectedly, only I have mastered the practicing knack for savage beasts."

Blackie glared at Guoguo and hummed, "What are you laughing at? I haven't finished my words."

As soon as Blackie gave it a look, Guoguo immediately ceased to laugh. It covered its mouth with two claws and did not dare to laugh anymore.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and nodded when he saw the scene in the distance.

Blackie indeed had its individual way of doing things. Within a few days, it made Guoguo and the monster ape submissive. They obediently sat underneath it and listened to it teaching Martial Arts.

Blackie rested its chin on its claws and said, “Eating is just the most basic practice for savage beasts. The savage beast who only knows how to eat will never be anything more than a savage beast.”

“If you want to advance into a higher level of savage beast, or even to become a dragon or a saint, you have to practice skills and Heart State, absorb Spiritual Qi between heaven and earth and the essence of the sun and the moon, and seek for the holy way like human beings.”

“Of course, if you are the immediate descendants of the mythical beasts, such as Divine Dragon, Phoenix, Kylin, Jingwei, and so on, you can also become the most powerful creatures between heaven and earth with eating only. Unfortunately, you guys aren’t.”

Blackie stared at Guoguo and the monster ape and laughed grimly, saying, “Since you’re not the immediate descendants of the mythical beasts, you’d better follow me to practice. If you listens to me, you’ll surely have a great future.”

“Back in the old days, even if True Dragon and Phoenix were eager to be my disciples. However, I was too busy to give them any advice at that time.”

Even True Dragon and Phoenix were eager to become its teacher?

Guoguo and the monster ape were simple-minded. Upon hearing this, they became excited and immediately kneeled on the ground. They begged Blackie to be their teacher.

Blackie hesitated for a while, then he finally granted their request.

“I don’t take apprentices easily ... Well, both of you are lucky today. Since you’ve apprenticed to me, you must follow my orders in the future. If you disobey, I’ll eat you alive.”

Blackie lifted up its two claws behind its back. It looked like an exemplary teacher and said slowly, “Guoguo, you’ve swallowed Demon’s Heart, so I’ll impart you the Sky Swallowing Knack, the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon’s supreme exercises. If you succeed in practice, you may be able to get rid of Greedy Rabbit’s savage beast body and turn into a Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.”

After that, Blackie extended a paw and pointed Guoguo’s glabella to impart it with the practice skills of the Sky Swallowing Knack.

However, it was uncertain that whether it could turn into a dragon after practicing the

Sky Swallowing Knack

.

Blackie looked at the monster ape, saying profoundly, “You’ve refined Black Glazed Spinel and practiced Treasured Body of Water Spirit. Therefore, you will be likely to refine others of the Five Elements Spirit Treasure and strive for Treasured Bodies of the Double Spirits, even Treasured Body of Three Spirits. As your master, I have great expectations of you.”

The monster ape growled and immediately kowtowed to Blackie.

“All right! I have the Elder Devil’s Ten Skies, a volume of the Archean Giant Spiritual Monster Ape’s handed-down secret scroll. If you can practice to the Seventh Heaven, you’ll succeed in practicing the body of Giant Spiritual Monster Ape. When you stand up, you’ll look like a huge mountain as tall as four thousand meters. By then, you can go anywhere and do anything.”

After that, Blackie imparted the monster ape the exercises of the

Elder Devil's Ten Skies.

It was also unknown that whether the Elder Devil's Ten Skies was as miraculous as Blackie said it was. It would be known only after the monster ape practiced it.

Anyhow, the monster ape believed firmly that Blackie was its teacher.

Blackie stared at Zhang Ruochen and laughed, saying, "Zhang Ruo Chen, you've also practiced Treasured Body of Water Spirit. If you worship me as your teacher, I'll also impart you a volume of Supreme Martial Arts."

Chapter 434 - The Secret of the Yin Yang Wooden Graph

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“If you can come up with a book of practice skills that exceeds the

Holy Meteorite Sutra,

I certainly can accept it with pleasure.”

Zhang Ruochen strolled over there with ease.

Blackie, of course, could not get any rare book of exercises better than the

Holy Meteorite Sutra

and he would no longer continue to talk about taking Zhang Ruochen as a disciple. He said coldly, “You’ve come to me, is something wrong?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said directly, “I would like to ask you something about the ‘Yin Yang Wooden Graph’.”

As expected, Blackie left with Zhang Ruochen, and only Guoguo and the monster ape remained in the courtyard, perceiving the practice skills that they just obtained.

Entering the room, Zhang Ruochen activated an array inscription and then a white light screen emerged that covered the room immediately.

What he would talk about with Blackie was very important to him. Of course, he had to be careful to keep from being heard.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “You should already know that the Yin Yang Wooden Graph has absorbed a lot of the Qi of Origin of

the Wood Spirit. I just want to know why. Why does the Shenkun Shenmu figure absorb the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit?”

Blackie turned his eyes and slowly said, “Do you really want to know the answer? Hey! It’s no harm to tell you. Did you see the Sacred Prime Tree on the scroll?”

“Of course I saw it!”

Blackie said, “The Sacred Prime Tree will grow in the inner world of the scroll.”

“How could that be?” Zhang Ruochen did not believe it.

Blackie sternly said, “I was painted on the scroll, and my true body was sealed in the inner world of the scroll. The Sacred Prime Tree was also drawn on the scroll, why can’t it grow in its inner world?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “In the legend, the Sacred Prime Tree was cut off by a murderer in the Medieval Ancient Times.”

“Yes.”

Blackie nodded and said again, “However, Saint Monk Xumi dug up the roots of the Sacred Prime Tree and then transplanted them into the inner world of the scroll. With his great power, the roots of the tree were revived. After millions of years, the roots of the tree grew and new seedlings emerged. It has become a towering tree.

“Of course, the new seedling can’t be compared with the former Sacred Prime Tree. It should be noted that the former one was born in the Archean Era, and it is the oldest living creature in Kunlun’s Field.”

Zhang Ruochen discovered that something was wrong—he always felt that Blackie’s words were far from the truth. Then he asked, “Are you sure that the Sacred Prime Tree has really grown for a million years? Couldn’t Saint Monk Xumi be someone from 100,000 years ago?”

Blackie opened both eyes wide and said, “Do you think I’m bragging again? Zhang Ruochen, I’m telling you that since we’ve known each other, I’ve never bragged about anything.

“The truth is that the inner world of the Yin Yang Wooden Graph was originally a space-time treasure that was designed by Saint Monk Xumi to allow the Sacred Prime Tree to recover its vitality as soon as possible. Therefore, as one day passes in the external world, 10 pass in the inner world of the Yin Yang Wooden Graph. So with 100,000 years in the external world, the inner world has naturally had a million years.”

Zhang Ruochen came to realize and he said, “I see.”

Blackie continued, “However, the inner world of the Yin Yang Wooden Graph is not stable enough. Only some Martial Souls and beast souls can be placed in it. A person who enters it will only be at a dead end.

“Only by waiting for the new seedling of the Sacred Prime Tree to grow to a certain degree can it become the root of the world, so that the world will be completely stabilized and turned into a Fascinating World.

“Then you can open up the picture world of the Yin Yang Wooden Graph and enter into it and practice.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “To what extent does the Sacred Prime Tree grow to support the Fascinating World in the inner world of the Yin Yang Wooden Graph?”

Blackie said, “In the Five Elements Primitive World, the Sacred Prime Tree absorbed a large amount of Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit, recovered some of the vitality, and grew a lot. If it can absorb 10 times the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit in the Five Elements Primitive World, then the Sacred Prime Tree should be able to prop up that Fascinating World.

“Of course, if the Sacred Prime Tree is allowed to grow independently and is given another million years, it can hold up that world.”

“A million years? I can’t wait that long.”

Zhang Ruochen slightly frowned and said, “It’s not too difficult to have 30 times more of the Qi of Origin of the Wood Spirit in the Five Elements Primitive World. As long as I can find an Inferior Primitive World with strong Qi of Origin

of the Wood Spirit and absorb it, then it's estimated that it will be accomplished."

Zhang Ruchen did not consider collecting the Qi of Origin in the Medium Level of the Primitive World at all because he was aware that there were many superiors and masters as numerous as clouds. He could not handle that now.

Moreover, once the Qi of Origin in the Primitive World felt the hostility of Zhang Ruchen, it would imperceptibly change the rules of the world and allow the superiors in the world to stop Zhang Ruchen and kill him, thus protecting itself.

Of course, those superiors did not know that they were driven by the Qi of Origin. To them, it would seem like a coincidence that they would be able to kill Zhang Ruchen.

In fact, the Qi of Origin was actually the world's heavenly way and destiny. It could only invisibly change people and things in the world, and could not directly give orders.

Blackie asked, "When are you going to leave?"

Zhang Ruchen said, "Wait a few days! It will be safer in the Battlefield of the Primitive Word if my cultivation is improved. And I still have some things unfinished."

"Good! You continue to deal with your affairs, and I will continue to teach the two guys, trying to cultivate them. In the future, they should be able to help me."

Blackie flew out and turned into a dark shadow and then disappeared in the room.

"His strength has really improved, it's not lower than mine," said Zhang Ruchen as he stared at Blackie.

Blackie's power had always been there, but it had been sealed in the Yin Yang Wooden Graph and could not be put to good use.

Zhang Ruchen had already identified himself with the Yin Yang Wooden Graph by blood. As long as his cultivation improved, he would be able to unlock more seals. Blackie's strength would also increase.

Therefore, Blackie's strength was almost the same as Zhang Ruochen's.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood and had a look. And then he entered into the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel.

He was ready to absorb the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood and practice the Treasured Body of the Wood Spirit.

Among the five elements, water and wood were the same nature.

Since he practiced the Treasured Body of the Water Spirit and the second treasured body, it would certainly be easier to choose the Treasured Body of the Wood Spirit.

...

When Zhang Ruochen began refining the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, a distinguished guest came to the Sword Sanctum in East Region Saint City.

This person from the Central Region was a divine ancestor in Ming Hall, flying on auspicious clouds and arriving there.

She was in full palace costume, with a graceful figure, a very beautiful face, and long eyebrows. Her red lips like cinnabar and delicate skin like water made it seem like she was a fairy.

It was a pity that such a beautiful and young fairy had long gray hair.

Her pair of beautiful eyes seemed to be full of vicissitudes and infinite wisdom, as if she had gone through countless joys and sorrows in life.

The owner of the Sword Sanctum, Jade Saint, came out to meet her in person and was very respectful to her, as if she was her junior.

Chapter 435 - Divine Ancestor of Ming Hall

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Sword Sanctum, Jade Saint Divine Mountain—

The white-haired woman, who was seated in the most central seat above the Holy Temple, took up the position of the master and had a powerful and mighty power.

And the owner of the Sword Sanctum, Jade Saint, stood instead.

“Lu Huaiyu, is your news really true? Where is he?” said the white-haired woman.

This woman had actually dared to say the name of a saint, she really was exceptional.

Jade Saint was not displeased at all, saying, “How could a junior dare to deceive a divine ancestor? This man is now in East Region Saint City. Not long ago, he passed the assessment of Saint Academy. I believe that in the near future, he will enter school and officially become a Saint of Saint Academy.”

“Is he really called Zhang Ruochen?”

In the calm eyes of the white-haired woman, there was a bit of an unclear expression that seemed to care about this matter.

Jade Saint said, “Yes. In fact, he is famous in the Eastern Region. He is one of the Six Young Kings of the new generation in the Eastern Region because he inherited Buddhist Emperor. Divine ancestor, do you want to meet him now?”

“Meet him?”

The white-haired woman meditated for a long time, as she seemed to be remembering something. After a long while, she said, “Please wait!”

When she was informed of Zhang Ruo Chen’s news, she really desperately wanted to see him. However, when she actually arrived in the Eastern Region, she was still somewhat guilty.

If it was him, it was naturally a great, happy event.

But, if it was not him?

The white-haired woman sat there, motionless, like a statue of a goddess.

Jade Saint waited at her side, looking patient.

Without knowing how long had passed, she seemed to be thinking clearly. The shadow of that person in her mind faded as she asked, “Where is the Life Sword? Was the repair completed?”

“It is also at the Divine Altar, the grandfather personally repaired it, but...” Jade Saint said.

The two eyebrows of the white-haired woman lifted slightly and she said, “But what?”

Jade Saint sighed and said, “After all, the Life Sword has been broken and it is not an easy task to repair it. It requires a lot of precious materials for forging. Several kinds of materials cannot be found, even in the Holy Land.”

The white-haired woman said, “Tell me what is lacking to repair the Life Sword, and I will certainly be able to help you find it. This sword is crucial and must be repaired successfully.”

Jade Saint nodded and smiled. “If the divine ancestor can help grandfather, it will not be difficult to repair the sword.”

“This is Lu Yuanzhi’s meaning?” the white-haired woman said.

“Grandfather is dead, after all. Now, there is only one Divine Soul left. Even though it is through the power of the Divine

Altar, it is always unable to do as well as we would wish.”

The white-haired woman said, “Well! I haven’t seen Lu Yuanshi for a long time, just go to see him.”

She had made up her mind to complete the restoration of the Holy Sword and then meet Zhang Ruochen, confirming whether he was the same person from 800 years ago, the one who made her dream for 800 years.

Because 800 years seemed to be very long, and very short as well.

As long as one closed their eyes, what they once had experienced would be still vivid in their mind and never fade due to the passage of time, but instead, would make them feel more painful.

“My cousin, to get revenge for you has always been the biggest driving force of my practice. When I recall the scene of you dying under Chi Yao’s sword, I get very sad. After 800 years, did you really come back?”

In the corner of the white-haired woman’s eyes hung two lines of tears, and her heart was very remorseful.

If she had been a little faster, she could have stopped Chi Yao and rescued him that year.

Unfortunately, it was worse.

In the end, she could only watch Zhang Ruochen fall into a pool of blood, dying, and eventually became a cold corpse. Chi Yao carried a bloody sword and went away.

At that time, she was no match for Chi Yao and could not even catch up with her.

Since then, she had practiced hard to become strong. She only wanted to get revenge for Zhang Ruochen, which lasted 800 years.

800 years later, she still was unable to kill Chi Yao. Her hatred, jealousy, and deep thoughts were deeper in her heart.

“If people die, they can’t regenerate. Why should we mention the past again?”

With a long sigh, the white-haired woman stood up and walked out of the Holy Temple. Under the guidance of Jade Saint, she walked toward the Divine Altar.

...

Zhang Ruochen spent half a month in the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel, refining over 1.6 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, and finally, his body reached saturation.

“Practicing the Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits is really much more difficult than practicing a single treasure body. It takes half a month, but it can only be refined into 1.6 kilograms.”

As the body was saturated, it could continue to refine the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood until it broke out of the realm.

Of course, refining 1.6 kilograms of the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood was comparable to Zhang Ruochen practicing for three years. The cultivation was once again promoted to reach the peak of the Medium State of the Heaven Realm.

“There is still half a month before Saint Academy starts. Before that, I have to buy a mansion in East Region Saint City to house my mother.”

Although Zhang Ruochen could live in Saint Academy, Concubine Lin, Blackie, Han Xue, Kong Xuan, and the monster ape only lived outside.

The management of East Region Saint City was quite strict. All foreign workers had to apply for a temporary residence certificate or they would be expelled.

Zhang Ruochen, like the students who came to East Region Saint City, only had a three-month validity period for temporary residence certificates.

And once they expired, they had to leave.

Only by buying a mansion in East Region Saint City could one obtain permanent residency.

Of course, the residences in East Region Saint City were all incredibly expensive, especially in the Seventh District, even the worst one cost 10 million Spiritual Spinel.

Such a large amount was enough to make the superiors in the Fish-dragon Realm flinch.

As far as the warriors in the Heaven Realm were concerned, being able to have a million Spiritual Spinel was already quite rich.

There were only just over two million Spiritual Spinel in Zhang Ruochen's body, so trying to get 10 million Spiritual Spinel was not an easy task.

“Are you going to sell the Spatial Ring?”

When this idea just emerged, Zhang Ruochen immediately shook his head.

Now, the only person who knew that Zhang Ruochen could control space was Blood Spirit Queen. As long as Zhang Ruochen did not sell the Spatial Ring, even if Blood Spirit Queen told others that Zhang Ruochen could control space, no one would believe her.

Once he went to sell the Spatial Ring, Blood Spirit Queen would surely spread some rumors. By then, it was estimated that even the imperial court of the First Central Empire would be alarmed and be quite unfavorable toward Zhang Ruochen.

Thinking of this gave Zhang Ruochen a big headache.

Blood Spirit Queen was like an irritant stuck to his throat. If he did not kill her, she would pierce Zhang Ruochen's throat at any time, leaving Zhang Ruochen unrepentant.

“Now that the Spatial Ring cannot be sold, then sell the Black Glazed Spinel. For such a Spirit Treasure, as long as it is taken out, those Saints of the powerful families will certainly pay a high price to buy it.

“Of course, it can't be sold to the enemy. It can be sold to Saint Luo Gentry and the East Region Saint Mansions. The Black Glazed Spinel can be used not only to practice the

Treasured Body of the Water Spirit, but it's also a treasure of forging. The Sword Sanctum should also be used.”

With that being the case, he went to the Sword Sanctum and asked them if they finished repairing the Life Sword.

Chapter 436 - The Second Coming to the Sword Sanctum

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

After the decision was made, Zhang Ruochen set off immediately and hurried to the Sword Sanctum.

The Sword Sanctum, which was also located in Jinhong Mainland of the East Region Saint City, was far away from the Seventh District. However, at his current speed, it would only take him half a day to reach the Sword Sanctum.

All eighteen sacred mountains were steep, with many sheer precipices and overhanging rocks. There were also many secret mansions in the valleys.

He stood at the foot of the mountain and looked at the Holy Land.

As a fairy hideaway, the mountain was surrounded by white clouds and was full of the Spiritual Qi.

It was not the first time he went to the Sword Sanctum. Those gatekeeping disciples had received the instruction earlier that Zhang Ruochen should be treated as a distinguished guest.

“Childe Zhang, please wait here for a moment. I’m going to report to the Foreign Affairs Presbyter in the Holy Land.” A disciple in a dazzling black robe rushed to the top of the Sacred Mountain after a Fist-palm salute to Zhang Ruochen.

A moment later, a young girl’s laughter rang out. The laughter became clearer and clearer.

Lu Xuan walked on her toes as if she was riding the wind. She quickly appeared and called from the distance. “Zhang Ruochen, you’ve finally come to the Sword Sanctum. My brother has already waited for you for many days.”

As Lu Xuan approached, and a faint fragrant breeze blew past.

Afterward, Lu Fantian fell from the sky to the ground with a boom. He straightly stood in front of Zhang Ruochen. His eyes were full of arrogance and enmity.

He held a long sword inlaid with the Gold Wire Inscription. The sword was four feet long and had a wide and thick blade. Even if there was no injection of Genuine Qi, the sword would still radiate dazzling golden light. Actually, it was a combat sword at the eleventh level of Genuine Martial Arms.

“Zhang Ruochen, draw your sword!”

Lu Fantian held the hilt and turned the sword in the opposite direction. Then, the sword tip hit the ground with a loud sound.

He already displayed an opening move called “Falling to the Ground and Rooting.”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit surprised and curiously asked, “Brother Lu, did I offend you before?”

Lu Fantian remained silent.

Lu Xuan stood by and rolled her beautiful eyes. She said with a smile, “My brother isn’t convinced, so he wants to challenge you again.”

Zhang Ruochen was even more puzzled and said, “Isn’t convinced about what?”

Lu Xuan looked weird and sighed, “Saint Lady, his goddess, rated you as one of the Six Great Kings of the new generation. He, with the name ‘World-shaking Bully’, has beaten all the invincible persons of the Eastern Region. But he was ignored by Saint Lady and failed to be ranked in the list of the new kings, so he was certainly jealous and not convinced. Thus, he would like to challenge you to prove his strength.”

Lu Fantian glared at Lu Xuan and felt even more upset.

Lu Xuan was his sister, but she always talked him down and spoke for others. What kind of a sister was that?

As if absorbed in thought, Zhang Ruochen said, “Why do you want to challenge me? Why don’t you challenge Bu Qianfan and Di Yi?”

Lu Xuan laughed again and said, “My brother has already been to the Camp of the Ministry of War. He has fought with Bu Qianfan once. They battled for the whole day. Eventually, they tied with each other.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “In that case, Brother Lu’s strength is indeed extraordinary, and you’re comparable to the king of the new generation. Saint Lady probably had no idea of your real strength, so she failed to rank you on the list.”

Lu Fantian’s expression was slightly unnatural after hearing that.

“Haha!”

Lu Xuan had a hearty laugh and said, “Zhang Ruochen, you don’t know that my brother had reached the Medium State of the Heaven Realm at that time, but Qianfan had just broken through the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. I’m ashamed of him for ending in a draw.”

Lu Fantian scolded, “What do you know? Bu Qianfan has reached the Ultimate Realm of the Yellow Realm, so he is one realm higher than the average person. Therefore, our battle can only be regarded as a confrontation of the same realm.”

“Duh!”

Lu Xuan was not afraid of Lu Fantian, and continued, “The reason why Bu Qianfan can practice to the Ultimate Realm of the Yellow Realm, is because he has high talent and strong willpower, and also he’s able to endure hardships and not be afraid of pain. In short, it’s a reward for his effort.”

“Brother, don’t blame me for laughing at you. The gap between you and Bu Qianfan is really big. At least, you haven’t been able to practice to the Ultimate Realm.”

Lu Fantian squeezed his fingers with a popping sound. He swallowed down his rage and said, "Do you think that it's easy to practice to the Ultimate Realm? Also, I am only a step away from reaching the Ultimate Realm in the Yellow Realm, the Black Realm, and the Earth Realm."

"A step is still a step," Lu Xuan said.

Lu Fantian said, "I've already broken into the Final State of the Heaven Realm. If I fight again, I can defeat the Bu Qianfan within ten moves."

Lu Xuan said, "When you are making progress, so would others. As far as I know, a while ago, all saint gentries were fighting for the management of the Five Elements Primitive World. Eventually, Saint Bu Gentry won the battle and became the owner of the Five Elements Primitive World."

"It's said that Saint Bu Gentry has obtained several Five Elements Spirit Treasures in the Five Elements Primitive World. If Bu Qianfan has refined the Spirit Treasure of Origin, his martial cultivation must have enhanced a lot, and maybe he has already refined into a certain kind of treasured body."

Zhang Ruochen really could not stand their bickering and said, "Brother Lu and Miss Lu, I'm in a hurry to meet the Foreign Affairs Presbyter in the Sword Sanctum. I'm afraid I must go now."

"Swish!"

Lu Fantian moved and stood in front of Zhang Ruochen again, saying, "Zhang Ruochen, you have to fight me today. Don't imagine that you can make excuses to leave."

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, "Do we really have to?"

"Of course," Lu Fantian said.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment and said, "In that case, I'll fight you. But now it's not the time. I must be able to decide when and where the battle take place."

Lu Fantian said without hesitation, "Sure, it's up to you."

Zhang Ruochen replied, "Three days later, we'll have a just and fair fight in front of all warriors at the Heavenly Ring of

the Martial Market Bank in the Seventh District.”

Lu Fantian finally understood Zhang Ruochen’s intentions and said with a smile, “When I haven’t broken through the Final State of the Heaven Realm, I’m ranked around 300,000th on the Heaven Board, and I have accumulated 74,800 points of the military merits. If you can defeat me at the Heavenly Ring, you will be able to replace my ranking and obtained the same military merits of 74,800 points. Is this what you plan to do?”

“Yes.”

Zhang Ruochen said calmly, “If there’s no benefit, why should I waste my energy to fight you?”

Lu Fantian said, “Ok! I’m really looking forward to defeating you on the Heavenly Ring. It’s a deal!”

Killing the enemy and accumulating military merits was not the only way to be ranked on the Heaven Board.

If a warrior in the Heaven Realm could win battles in a row in the Martial Market Bank, he would be able to obtain a value of 10,000 points of military merits and be ranked on the Heaven Board.

Of course, the lower ranked warriors in the Heaven Board could also challenge the higher ranking warriors on the Heavenly Ring. As long as they win, their rankings and military merits would then be swapped.

Chapter 437 - Body of the Sacred Tree

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Lu Fantian turned around and was about to leave. After three days of preparation, he would have a decisive battle with Zhang Ruochen in the Heavenly Ring.

This war was still very stressful for him.

After all, in the Martial World, the evaluation of Zhang Ruochen was even above Bu Qianfan.

“Wait!”

Zhang Ruochen took a six-inch casket from his palm and handed it to Lu Fantian. Then he said, “There is a Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood weighing 5.5 kilograms in this casket. It’s a gift to you, brother Lu.”

“A Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood.”

Lu Fantian’s eyes became bright as he stared at the casket and swung his sleeve, displaying the trick of telekinesis. With one blast of Genuine Qi rushing out, he rolled the casket into his hands.

The Eastern Region recently had been agog with rumors about the five Spirit Treasures in the Five Elements Primitive World.

Lu Fantian certainly had heard of the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, which was the Spirit Treasure of Origin of the Wood Spirit. If it was refined, it could save a warrior 10 years of penance. There would even be the opportunity for the warriors to practice the Treasured Body of the Wood Spirit.

Therefore, there were countless warriors drooling with envy over the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood.

Zhang Ruochen had gotten more than 100 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood when he destroyed the Evil Wood Palace. However, it was not all the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood in the Five Elements Primitive World. In the Five Elements Primitive World, other human forces and beast races had a small amount of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood.

Even the underground of the Five Elements Primitive World was still buried with a large number of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, which had not yet been excavated.

Therefore, in the third round of assessments, it was not only Zhang Ruochen who had gotten five Spirit Treasures. Some other talented students had also gotten five Spirit Treasures, but they did not get as much as Zhang Ruochen.

Recently, because of the five Spirit Treasures of the Five Elements Primitive World, there had been more than a dozen bloody cases in the Eastern Region. Among them, there were even Half-Saints participating in the fighting.

In the Martial Market of East Region Saint City, 50 grams of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood had been raised to the price of 60,000 Spiritual Spinels. But there was still a price without a market.

Lu Fantian was a natural Body of the Sacred Tree. He could absorb the light of the sun and moon, saturate the Spiritual Qi of heaven and earth, and transform it into his own energy.

So from the time of infancy, Lu Fantian had not eaten any food.

In ancient times, the warriors who possessed the Body of the Sacred Tree were able to obtain shelter from the Sacred Prime Tree. At the moment of their birth, they were brought into the Sacred Tree Sect and became the heirs of the Sect Master of the Sacred Tree Sect.

Certainly, after the Sacred Prime Tree was cut off, the Sacred Tree Sect also disappeared.

If the Sacred Prime Tree had not been cut off, the warriors who possessed the Body of the Sacred Tree could absorb the power of the Sacred Prime Tree. They had greater potential than the Saintly Beings.

Since the Sacred Prime Tree had already disappeared from the world, then the Body of the Sacred Tree was no longer as strong as before, and even weaker than the Saintly Beings.

The Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood had infinite magical effects on the warriors with a Body of the Sacred Tree. Once they were refined, they could practice a stronger physical quality than the Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits, which was enough to compete with the Treasured Body of Three Spirits.

Lu Fantian opened the casket and saw the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood inside it. He appeared rather calm as he looked at Zhang Ruochen and said, “Zhang Ruochen, are you sure you want to give me the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and answered, “Yes.”

Lu Fantian was the descendant of Zhang Ruochen’s sixth elder brother, Lu Yuanzhi. Since his Body of the Sacred Tree needed the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, why couldn’t Zhang Ruochen give it to him?

Lu Fantian stared at Zhang Ruochen for some time and said, “Okay! I’ve decided to make friends with you!”

Lu Fantian was very clear that the reason why Zhang Ruochen had set the time for the battle to three days was that it gave him three days to refine the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood.

“In three days, if I have refined the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, do you still have a chance to win?” Lu Fantian returned tit for tat.

“Since I’ve dared to give the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood to you, I naturally have an absolute certainty.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled with his hands behind his back, followed a disciple of the Sword Sanctum, and went toward

the direction of an ancient building on the mountainside of Sacred Mountain.

“Wow! He is so handsome! Brother, you are really far worse than Zhang Ruochen.”

Holding her hands in front of her chest like someone with an obsessive crush, Lu Xuan looked at the back of Zhang Ruochen with a pair of round eyes that kept shining.

Lu Fantian did not feel even the slightest anger, saying, “That man is just so brilliant that it is worth it to make friends with him.”

...

The foreign affairs presbyter of the Sword Sanctum, Lu Youcai, was in charge of all the outward property of the Sword Sanctum, including the purchase of forging materials, mine management, personnel mobilization, and so on.

Therefore, Lu Youcai’s privilege was quite large, and the job was very profitable. Moreover, he himself was also a superior, and his cultivation had reached the Fourth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, establishing the holy Meridian.

At this moment, Lu Youcai sat opposite Zhang Ruochen. He was round in shape and round-faced. He looked to be about 50 years old. It was certain that his true age was much more than that.

Lu Youcai was eloquent and he had heard that this young king had received the reception of his ancestor.

Therefore, although he represented the Sword Sanctum, he did not show the slightest pride and was always smiling with a very kind demeanor.

“Mr. Zhang visits the Sword Sanctum in person. I wonder if there is anything I can do to help,” said Lu Youcai with a smile.

Zhang Ruochen took a sip of tea and said, “I have something to sell to the Sword Sanctum, but I don’t know if predecessor wants to buy it.”

Lu Youcai moved his eyes, and although a smile still hung on his face, his mind was somewhat thinking otherwise.

What kind of place was the Sword Sanctum? As long as he wanted something, he could certainly get it. He would not need to buy anything from a young junior.

Lu Youcai was indeed an eloquent person, but sitting in his own place, he could not change his bad habit, and that was so arrogant.

Even though he did not show that arrogance, his mind was quite arrogant.

Therefore, he could not help ignoring Zhang Ruochen slightly.

Lu Youcai licked his lips and tactfully said, "If Mr. Zhang really has any great treasures, you could place them in the Auction House and sell the treasures by auction to maximize their value."

The reason why Zhang Ruochen did not bring the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood and Black Glazed Spinel to the Auction House to sell is that he did not want to be a cheap outsider and would like to sell them to some familiar big forces, even if he took a slight loss.

Zhang Ruochen did not expect that the foreign affairs presbyter of the Sword Sanctum would decline directly without even asking him what he wanted to sell. Should Zhang Ruochen continue to put his hot face on the cold butt of others?

"Well! In that case, I will go elsewhere and take a look. If it can't be sold, it won't be too late for me to go to the Auction House."

Zhang Ruochen stood up and was ready to leave.

"Bam!"

At that moment, a white light spot appeared in the center of the room, emitting a glaring light.

That spot of light grew bigger and became an illusory image of Jade Saint.

It was the Sacred Thought of a Saint.

“I greet our ancestor.”

Lu Youcai immediately kneeled on the ground and bowed to the Sacred Thought.

His mind was fidgeting and he did not know what was going on. After all, the ancestor’s Sacred Thought rarely appeared. And once there, it was certainly something that was very important.

The Sacred Thought of that Jade Saint said, “Lu Youcai, within three days, buy 50 kilograms of Black Glazed Spinel with all financial resources. I have great use for them.”

Having said this, the Sacred Thought disappeared.

“50 kilograms... of Black Glazed Spinel...”

Lu Youcai constantly wiped the sweat from his forehead and secretly groaned in his heart.

Now, it was difficult to buy even 50 grams of Black Glazed Crystal, to say nothing of 50 kilograms.

“Isn’t this going to kill me?”

However, the ancestor had spoken in person, which was equivalent to an imperial edict. If he could not complete the task, even if his ancestor did not punish him, other people who looked at the position of the foreign affairs presbyter in the Sword Sanctum would certainly trouble him.

At that time, his position of foreign affairs presbyter would certainly be unstable.

Chapter 438 - 360 Million

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Lu Youcai was rather anxious. fifty kilograms of Black Glazed Spinel was really too much. That amount was impossible for him to collect within three days.

What should he do?

Lu Youcai frowned, and let out a long sigh. He struck out two Signal Flares immediately, with one flying to Martial Market Bank and another flying to Saint Bu Gentry.

“I hope I can buy the Black Glazed Spinel from Saint Bu Gentry and Martial Market Bank. Even if they overcharged us, it would still be worth it.”

He must buy it no matter how high the price was.

However, some news came back from Saint Bu Gentry and Martial Market Bank a while later. They only had a small amount of Black Glazed Spinel, which in total was less than ten kilograms.

“I’m done for! Even Saint Bu Gentry and Martial Market Bank have only a small amount of Black Glazed Spinel. Where can I find 50 kilograms?”

“I’m done for! Even Saint Bu Gentry and Martial Market Bank have only a small amount of Black Glazed Spinel. Where can I find 50 kilograms?”

At this moment, Lu Youcai had no mood to welcome Zhang Ruochen. He was very anxious and walked around in circles.

Zhang Ruochen sat by the side and looked very calm. He said, “Presbyter Lu, I can sell fifty kilograms of Black Glazed Spinel to the Sword Sanctum.”

“It’s so difficult to find fifty kilograms of Black Glazed Spinel ... Wait, what did you just say?”

Lu Youcai “rolled” toward Zhang Ruochen like a meatball with his eyes wide opened. He acted like a drowning man trying to hold on to a straw. He stared closely at Zhang Ruochen

Zhang Ruochen said, “I got a patch of Black Glazed Spinel in Five Elements Primitive World. I can give fifty kilograms of it to Sword Sanctum.”

Hearing this, Lu Youcai’s eyes were full of tears. He almost knelt down in front of Zhang Ruochen.

“Right! How could I forget that Mr. Zhang has been to Five Elements Primitive World,” Lu Youcai pat his forehead and wanted to slap himself.

“Mr. Zhang, you are really my life saver!”

Zhang Ruochen said with a smile, “At first, I wanted to sell the Black Glazed Spinel. But you suggested that I go to the Auction House...”

Lu Youcai immediately held Zhang Ruochen by his shoulder. He was so afraid that Zhang Ruochen would leave, and he said, “Don’t! Please don’t go to the Auction House. Mr. Zhang, you must sell the Black Glazed Spinel to me. I will pay you twice the market price. No, three times the market price. Is that ok? If you are not satisfied, we can still negotiate.”

Zhang Ruochen said with a smile, “Certainly, as you wish.”

Nobody would think that they have made too much money. Zhang Ruochen was no exception.

Lu Youcai was relieved. Three times the price seemed very high, but if he went to the Auction House, the price would only be higher.

“Oh my god.”

Luckily, Zhang Ruochen did not haggle over it with him. Otherwise, Lu Youcai would have to pay five times or even ten times the price if he went to the Auction House.

Zhang Ruochen took out a hundred kilograms of the Black Glazed Spinel that was prepared a long time ago. He gave half of them to Lu Youcai, which was exactly fifty kilograms.

Seeing that there were still fifty kilograms of the Black Glazed Spinel left in the box, Lu Youcai licked his lips. He said, “Mr. Zhang, can you also sell another fifty kilograms of the Black Glazed Spinel to Sword Sanctum? As for the price, you name it.

The Black Glazed Spinel was a Spirit Treasure of Origin, which not only could be used to refine a weapon, but also could be used to practice the Treasured Body of Water Spirit. Its value could not be compared with any amount of Spiritual Crystals.

He would buy as much as he could.

Zhang Ruochen dug out more than four hundred kilograms of the Black Glazed Spinel in Five Elements Primitive World. Even if he sold a hundred kilograms of it to Sword Sanctum, it was not a big deal.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment. He said, “All right! Since we are friends, I’ll sell you a hundred kilograms of the Black Glazed Spinel in one go. I am still only charging you three times the market price.”

Lu Youcai was very jowous. He said, “Being your friend is my great honor.”

Although Lu Youcai’s current cultivation was much higher than that of Zhang Ruochen, Zhang Ruochen was still one of the Kings of the new generation. With his talent, his future achievements would definitely surpass Lu Youcai’s.

Only good things would happen after making friends with Zhang Ruochen.

Lu Youcai called over two superiors of Sword Sanctum and asked them to send fifty kilograms of the Black Glazed Spinel to the ancestor.

At the same time, he handed a purple card that was made of crystal to Zhang Ruochen. He said with a smile, “a hundred kilograms of the Black Glazed Spinel cost a total of three

hundred and sixty million pieces of Spiritual Crystals, which were all deposited in the Martial Market Bank. Brother Zhang, you can withdraw it at any time you want.”

He took over the purple crystal card and saw nine star-shaped light streaks on the front side of the card, which was the nine-star VIP card of the Martial Market Bank.

Only those who had deposited a hundred million pieces of Spiritual Crystals were qualified to get a nine-star VIP card.

The nine-star VIP card was a symbol of great status even in East Region Saint City. Anyone with it could go to places where common people could not go. When he entered the Auction House, he could also be seated on the VIP seat.

Zhang Ruochen injected the Genuine Qi into the card. Streaks of inscriptions appeared on the surface of the card, forming a series of numbers.

Three hundred sixty millions of Spiritual Crystal was a big fortune. Even a Half-Saint was not as rich as Zhang Ruochen.

After confirming the amount, Zhang Ruochen nodded and smiled, “Brother Lu, you are the diplomatic presbyter in the Sword Sanctum, so you should be quite familiar with East Region Saint City. There is one thing I want to ask for your help.”

“Brother, if you need anything from me, just name it. In the Eastern Region, as long as it’s not related to a Half-Saint, I can do it for you.

Lu Youcai pat on his chest and promised.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I want to buy a mansion in the Seventh District in Jinhong Mainland. It doesn’t need to be too big, but it would be better not to be too far away from the Saint Academy.”

Lu Youcai laughed out loudly, “It’s just a piece of cake. I’ll order someone to search right now. If there is any news, I will inform you immediately.”

“Thank you very much,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Lu Youcai said, "We are brothers. If you say 'thank you', then you are regarding me as an outsider. It should be me who need to say thank you."

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment. He asked again, "There is one more thing. I have been troubled by a big problem recently, and I need a reliable master to protect my safety or even help me out of the trouble. Brother Lu, do you know what I should do?"

Lu Youcai was a smart man. He understood instantly what was going on. His eyes squinted and he asked, "Brother Zhang, do you need a bodyguard or a contract killer?"

Zhang Ruochen said with a smile, "If I want to hire an assassin, I would go straight to the black market. But I don't trust anyone in the black market."

"I understand!"

Lu Youcai nodded his head and stroked his beard. He said with a smile, "Brother Zhang, you should have heard of the mercenaries?"

"Certainly," Zhang Ruochen said.

Lu Youcai said, "The Thirty-first City of Jinhong Mainland is the gathering place of the mercenary. At that place, you can hire the mercenary in the Heaven Realm or Fish-dragon realm as long as you have the money. You can even hire the King's royal mercenary in the Half-Saint Class."

"Mercenaries who have become famous have their own beliefs, and some even value their reputation more than their lives. Moreover, there is a Mercenary Society in the Eastern Region which specifically restricts the mercenaries and sanctions them. So if you want to hire a mercenary, going there will be a good choice."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were brightened. He showed a thoughtful look.

If he could hire a superior in the Ninth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm to kill Blood Spirit Queen, he would succeed for sure.

Zhang Ruochen must kill Blood Spirit Queen before he left for the Battlefield of the Primitive World.

Hearing Lu Youcai's words, Zhang Ruochen felt that it was necessary to go to the Thirty-first City to hire a master. Even if it's not for killing Blood Spirit Queen, he could also hire someone to protect his life.

Chapter 439 - The Thirty-first City

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

A Divine Altar of up to 330 meters tall was built in the underground of the Sword Sanctum. It was cylindrical and majestic, and it constantly radiated white holy light.

The Jade Saint walked to the bottom of the Divine Altar. He pushed the air gently with his hand, urging a stream of wind. The wind enveloped the fifty kilograms of Black Glazed Spinel and made them fly up from the ground to the top of the altar.

The woman with white hair proudly stood in the center of the altar. She stretched out her snow-white fingers to catch the Black Glazed Spinel through the air. She struck the Black Glazed Spinel into the Good-luck Sword which was floating in the air.

“Swoosh!”

The Good-luck Sword absorbed the black glazed crystals, and it began to repair slowly as if it got a new source of life.

Jade Saint said, “Divine ancestor, Zhang Ruochen is at the Sword Sanctum. Do you want to meet him? Perhaps, you can confirm his identity now.”

The woman with white hair opened her beautiful eyes and meditated for a moment. Then she said, “Not for the time being. After the Good-luck Sword is completely repaired, I will definitely go to meet him.”

Somehow, her heart was weaving. She had not had this feeling for a long time.

Jade Saint nodded his head and did not further ask any questions.

After leaving the Foreign Affairs Hall, Zhang Ruochen went to visit the current Master of the Sword Sanctum, Lu Chongyu. However, he was told that the Life Sword had not been completely repaired, and it would be returned to him personally after the sword is repaired.

Zhang Ruochen did not think too much of it. He left the Sword Sanctum in that afternoon and decided to go to the Thirty-first City.

“What does the place that mercenaries gather look like? Lu Youcai says that he has arranged a trusted person to pick me up in the Thirty-first City. Hopefully, I can hire a superior who can kill the Blood Spirit Queen as soon as possible,”

Zhang Ruochen thought.

Only by killing Blood Spirit Queen could Zhang Ruochen focus on other things.

Blood Spirit Queen was like a knife that was always hanging above his head. He did not know when the knife would suddenly drop and behead Zhang Ruochen.

Soon after leaving the Sword Sanctum, Zhang Ruochen had an ominous premonition. He felt a pair of eyes was staring at him from behind.

“Does the person of the Sword Sanctum want to take away the three hundred and sixty million pieces of spiritual crystals from me?”

Zhang Ruochen thought.

After all, Zhang Ruochen was also a saint of the Saint Academy now. Did the Sword Sanctum dare to kill a saint in the East Region Saint City?

Zhang Ruochen released his spiritual power and dispersed it to explore the superior behind him.

But at this very moment, a stroke of dangerous aura came from behind and got closer and closer. He could faintly sniff a smell of blood from behind.

“This is bad. It’s the Blood Spirit Queen.”

Zhang Ruochen felt Blood Spirit Queen’s aura, and his face changed greatly. He immediately activated the power of the Martial Soul. There was a light column dashing out of his head. A giant vortex which centered on the light column appeared and absorbed the Spiritual Qi of heaven and earth into his body.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen’s aura increased to the Fish-dragon Realm.

“Awoo!”

Zhang Ruochen’s body was wrapped up by a layer of golden light. Resounding a dragon’s roar, his body quickly rushed out forward like a comet.

At this moment, he heard loud sound that was coming from behind.

A huge blood red palm print struck at the position where Zhang Ruochen was just at and made a large crater with a diameter of more than ten meters in the ground. The surrounding grounds were also cracked.

If Zhang Ruochen reacted a little more slowly, the palm would have hit him.

About thirty meters behind Zhang Ruchen, there were circles of water wave like ripples appeared on the originally transparent void. A streak of Spiritual Blood flew out from the center of the ripples and condensed into the body of Blood Spirit Queen.

Blood Spirit Queen showed cold and murderous eyes. She chased after Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen regarded her as the enemy who must be killed. She wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen badly too.

“Zhang Ruochen. Are you still going to run away today? Hand over the Half-Saint’s Light and the Holy Meteorite Sutra, and I will spare your life,” Blood Spirit Queen said and trembled in rage. Every one of her bloody hair was standing up up.

Although Blood Spirit Queen had already lost the Half-Saint's Light, her cultivation had reached the sixth change of the Fish-dragon Realm. Therefore, the speed of her movements were terrifyingly fast.

In a flash, she was behind Zhang Ruochen, and her arms swiveled in a circle. She used the Spiritual Blood to condense a sharp Blood Sword. With a swooshing sound, she stabbed toward the center of Zhang Ruochen's back.

Zhang Ruochen used the spiritual power to the extreme. When Blood Spirit Queen pulled out her sword, he immediately changed his position and moved more than twenty meters to the left.

“SWOOSH!”

When Blood Spirit Queen missed her first strike, she immediately struck out the second sword, the third sword...

The sword Breaths swept towards Zhang Ruochen like endless ocean waves.

“Out!”

A light spot appeared on Zhang Ruochen's glabella. He quickly applied the Violet Thunder Sword and utilized the Sword Defending Technique.

The Violet Thunder Sword flew out of Zhang Ruochen's Storage Ring and made a thunderbolt and lightning sound. Like a streak of light, it attacked the Blood Spirit Queen from about thirty meters away.

A blood-red sword radiance and a purple thunderbolt light ceaselessly crashed in the air, sending out sword clashing sounds.

“Zhang Ruochen's strength actually increased so much in the past few days,”

Blood Spirit Queen was very shocked and had to re-evaluate Zhang Ruochen's potential.

Although Zhang Ruochen was still far from being her opponent, if Zhang Ruochen continued to make an

improvement, it would not be long before he could completely surpass her.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen saw a row of navy blue walls appear in front of him, as if there was a big dragon lying on the horizon.

Above the city gate, there were four ancient words, The Thirty first City.

Zhang Ruochen was overjoyed that he finally arrived at the major city of the Thirty-first City. If he could escape to the Major City, he would survive.

No matter how high was Blood Spirit Queen's cultivation, she dared not to kill anyone in the Major City.

Blood Spirit Queen was determined to kill Zhang Ruochen, so she naturally would not let Zhang Ruochen escape into the Major City.

Her body turned into a cloud of blood fog and divided into six strokes of Spiritual Blood. They quickly flew out and rushed to the front of Zhang Ruochen and stopped him.

“Die.”

Blood Spirit Queen extended a jade-white finger. Her sharp fingernail was like the tip of a sword and it suddenly stabbed out, hitting toward Zhang Ruochen's glabella.

Zhang Ruochen immediately recalled the Violet Thunder Sword and blocked her stike.

“Peng!”

Blood Spirit Queen's finger hit the center of the blade of the Violet Thunder Sword. The powerful Sword Breath converged into a point, forming an overwhelming power.

Three layers of light immediately emerged around Zhang Ruochen's body, which respectively showed blue, golden and white color.

The blue light was his Celestial Bodyshield.

The golden light was the Dragon Pearl's power of protection.

The white light was the defensive breath of the Half-Saint's Light.

Even if Zhang Ruochen had three layers of body light, he still suffered a heavy blow. He flew backward like a stringless kite.

If there was a big disparity between two people's cultivation, no matter how many treasures one had, it would be useless.

Blood Spirit Queen wanted to attack again to completely break through Zhang Ruochen's defense and kill him outside of the Thirty-first City.

A sharp voice came from still-distant Thirty-first City.

"How dare a Blood Spirit commit murder in East Region Saint City?"

A man in white armor rushed out of the Thirty-first City. In a flash, he rushed to the front of Blood Spirit Queen and struck out one palm.

His palms were as white as jade. His fingers were long and thin, and his hands were more beautiful than a woman's.

However, the power contained in his palm was terrifying. He pushed back the Blood Spirit Queen with just one move.

Blood Spirit Queen viciously spared a glance at the man in white armor. He hummed coldly, "Mind your own business. Do you want to die?"

Blood Spirit Queen clenched his five fingers into a fist and struck out. The Spiritual Blood rushed out and formed a huge fist shadow.

"Boom!"

The man in white armor strode forward clawed the shadow into pieces. Subsequently, his claws quickly turned into palms and sliced down, hitting toward Blood Spirit Queen's neck.

Blood Spirit Queen also swang her arm and chopped toward the man.

"Pow!"

They both stepped backward at the same time.

“Zhang Ruochen, I’ll let you go today. Next time, you won’t be so lucky.”

Blood Spirit Queen unwillingly spared a glance at Zhang Ruochen, and she turned into a stroke of Spiritual Blood, went underground, and disappeared from their sight.

The man in white armor chased after her, but he was still one step behind, so Blood Spirit Queen escaped.

“What a powerful Blood Spirit. It has the potential to become a Half-Saint of the Blood Spirit.”

The man in white armor showed a dignified face and stomped his feet on the ground. The ground slightly shook.

Zhang Ruochen walked over to the man and cupped his hands. “Thank you for your help.”

The man in white armor turned around and stared at Zhang Ruochen. He said, “I am the deputy Commander of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group, Nie Honglou. Are you Zhang Ruochen?”

Nie Honglou was very proud when he spoke his name because his name had infinite honor, which was more important than his life.

Zhang Ruochen was slightly astonished. He said, “How do you know my name?”

Nie Honglou smiled and said, “Among the geniuses of the new generation, probably only you can display the Sword Defending Technique. Besides, people in the Sword Sanctum have told me that you will come to the Thirty-first City. When I was talking with him, I saw a man outside the city was being hunted down. Any man with brain can guess the person is you.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I see. Are you the superior that Sword Sanctum helped me to contact?”

After that battle, Zhang Ruochen was quite satisfied with Nie Honglou’s strength.

After all, Blood Spirit Queen reached the Sixth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm by blending the Half-Saint’s Light. Her

strength was much stronger than that of the average monk in the Sixth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

Nie Honglou was also in the Sixth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, but he was capable of defeating the Blood Spirit Queen.

Thus, his talent was also quite high and he was not an ordinary mercenary.

Nie Honglou said with a smile, "Let's go in the city first, then we will talk business. The person in charge of the Sword Sanctum is still waiting for us in the city."

After Zhang Ruochen and Nie Honglou walked into the Thirty-first City, a streak of Spiritual Blood appeared from the underground and silently sneaked into the Thirty-first City.

Chapter 440 - It's A Small World

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

On the street of the Thirty-first City, there were many warriors riding tall savage beasts. They wore thick armor, with huge swords hanging at their waists and bags on their backs. Some of them had blood stain on their armors. It seemed that they had just returned from their missions.

This was the gathering place for the most powerful mercenaries in the Eastern Region. Every large-scale Mercenary Group had its stronghold in the city to receive and pass on tasks.

The Silver Sky Mercenary Group wasn't the top-ranking mercenary group in the Eastern Region. Its history only spanned several decades, incomparable to the top groups that had been operating for thousands of years or even tens of thousands of years.

From the Commander to the ordinary mercenary, the vast majority of them were young. The eldest one was no more than 60.

Yet, the young group had quite the reputation in the Eastern Region. That was because they only accepted genius mercenaries, with the weakest one among them being a Three-realm Fighting Genius.

Moreover, the reputation value of the group was extremely high. In the Mercenary Union, it was enough to rank in the top five.

For a mercenary, reputation was the most important thing.

No matter how powerful a mercenary was, no one would hire one without reputation.

The Commander of the group, Silvermoon, was a beautiful and talented person blessed with extreme luck. Though she wasn't a Saintly Being, she was on par with one. Her cultivation had reached the Ninth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. She might very well end up being the youngest Half-Saint in the Eastern Region.

Two deputy commanders served under her.

One of them was Nie Honglou.

Despite his young looks that made him look 20, Nie Honglou was already 42. His eyebrows were like green peaks. His eyes were like cold stars and his nose was like a dangling gallbladder. He was very handsome.

He was clean without a speck of dust or a single stain on his clothing. His gestures and movements demonstrated a chic and elegant noble temperament.

Presently, he, Lu Yi, and Zhang Ruochen were seated in a luxurious and elegant room on the second floor of the Kong Yi Tower.

They were sitting in a different direction, calmly tasting the wine.

Lu Yi, who was the disciple of Sword Sanctum, was under Lu Youcai's orders to welcome Zhang Ruochen. He was a master in the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

He put down his glass and asked curiously, "Mr Zhang, I heard from the presbyter that you're going to hire a top master. Is it just for dealing with the Blood Spirit?"

Zhang Ruochen nodded. "Dealing with the Blood Spirit is one reason. I want a master around me for protection at all times."

Lu Yi looked like understanding finally dawned on him.

Now, everyone knew that Zhang Ruochen had swallowed the Dragon Pearl and he was Buddha Emperor's descendant. There would certainly be many who wanted to kill him.

It was reasonable that he wanted to hire a top-level mercenary to protect him.

Nie Honglou grinned. “The Blood Spirit isn’t simple. It must have combined large amount of Half-Saint’s Light. It’s stronger than some masters in the Seventh Change in the Fish-dragon Realm and has the potential to be a Half-Saint. I can’t kill her on my own.”

Lu Yi frowned. “If even the Deputy Commander Nie can’t kill her, we can only ask for Half-Saint’s help. Only he can kill her for sure.”

Nie Honglou smiled. “That’s not for sure. If Mr Zhang can pay a price high enough, I can even invite the Commander of Silvermoon Group. If she’s willing to help, I have every confidence that we’ll kill the Blood Spirit.”

Lu Yi was shocked when he heard the name of Commander of Silvermoon Group. “It’s said that the Commander had learned the martial arts of 100 families and observed 18 volumes of the Half-Saint’s Sacred Glyphand. Her cultivation is infinitely close to the Half-Saint Realm. It’s not difficult for her to kill the Blood Spirit if she’s willing to help.”

“How much money should I pay for her help?” Zhang Ruochen.

The more powerful the mercenary was, the higher the price would be.

He would need a huge amount of Spiritual Crystals to hire a strong warrior like Silvermoon for just one day.

Nie Honglou smiled. “It’s hard to say. The Commander doesn’t do business according to the routine. Once, she helped a beggar to kill the descendant of the Half-Saint family for a silver coin. However, she also asked for 100 million Spiritual Crystals and scared off the deacon of Saint Xu Gentry.

“I can’t promise you now. I can only help you tell the Commander. I’m not sure if she’ll be willing to help.”

“All right! I’ll go with you to the Silver Sky Mercenary Group,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Though he trusted the mercenary to help him relay his request, he still wanted to visit the Silver Sky Mercenary Group personally. In particular, he wanted to meet the Commander and see what kind of talent she was.

A monk who could become the youngest Half-Saint of the Eastern Region couldn't be a simple person.

If she could successfully reach the Half-Saint Realm in such a short amount of time, she would reign superior to even the Six Great Kings of the new generation.

Who wouldn't want to meet such a figure?

Lu Yi had other things to deal with, so he took his leave first. Before he did so, he told Zhang Ruochen that he could be found in the branch gang of the Sword Sanctum in the Thirty-first City if he was in trouble.

Zhang Ruochen thanked him and went to the Silver Sky Mercenary Group with Nie Honglou.

Swoosh!

There was a bluestone lane in the Thirty-first City.

A streak of Spiritual Blood gushed out of the crevice between the two stone slabs on the ground.

The Spiritual Blood rose up and condensed into the body of the Blood Spirit Queen. With her exquisite bare feet, she stood on a cloud of blood fog one meter above the ground.

She had a graceful figure, ample bosom and hips, and a wonderful body curve. With her long blood-red hair, she emanated an icy cold aura.

“Zhang Ruochen actually wants to hire a mercenary to deal with me? I must find a way to deal with him in advance,” she said to herself.

A Blood Spirit's strength lay in concealment. Even if Zhang Ruochen had a Level 41 Spiritual Power, he might not be able to find her.

Earlier, she had been in the hiding as she eavesdropped Zhang Ruochen's conversation with Nie Honglou.

Tap, tap!

There were sounds of footsteps.

A blue-robed man carrying a two-meter-long wide knife appeared in the small alley. He lowered his voice and said, "Zhang Ruochen has gone to the Silver Sky Mercenary Group. You're dead once he has Silvermoon's help. Now you need allies to go with you to the Silver Sky Mercenary Group and kill Zhang Ruochen."

Blood Spirit Queen's eyes turned cold. "Who are you?"

Dark Blue Emissary stared at her and said slowly, "I'm your ally."

"You think you're qualified?"

Blood Spirit Queen sneered and disappeared from where she stood. She turned into a bloody wave and rushed to Dark Blue Emissary with a palm strike.

Dark Blue Emissary's body bulged as if there was wind billowing his clothes. The Genuine Qi gushed out of his body and rapidly spun around his body, forming a circle.

Standing inside the circle of the Genuine Qi, he threw a punch at Blood Spirit Queen and hit the center of her palm.

Boom!

They took three steps backward at the same time before they regained their footing.

"Amazing. You're not weaker than me. Who are you?" Blood Spirit Queen asked.

Dark Blue Emissary flexed his wrist and smiled. "I'm Dark Blue Emissary, one of the Seven Kills Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall. Blood Spirit Queen, our young master is in the Thirty-first City. He's very interested in you and wants to help you kill Zhang Ruochen and destroy the Silver Sky Mercenary Group."

"Di Yi?" Blood Spirit Queen said.

"Correct."

Blood Spirit Queen sneered. “Help me? Di Yi had his heart dug out by Zhang Ruochen. He wants to kill Zhang Ruochen more than I do. If anyone’s helping, it’s me. Besides, it’s not hard to kill Zhang Ruochen. Why does he need to involve the Silver Sky Mercenary Group?”

Dark Blue Emissary smiled. “There’s no harm in telling you. Silvermoon is a renegade of the black market. The young master has come to the Thirty-first City to kill her. Zhang Ruochen’s appearance is just a coincidence. Perhaps this is just a small world! Since that’s the case, the young master decides to take this opportunity to kill him as well.”

Thoughts raced in Blood Spirit Queen’s mind. She had to admire the intelligence network of the black market. They knew when Zhang Ruochen had come to the Thirty-first City and how to find her.

When she was eavesdropping on Zhang Ruochen’s conversation, perhaps the master of the black market was also watching her secretly.

She felt chilled to core just thinking about having people control her every movement.

“I’ll first cooperate with Di Yi to get rid of Zhang Ruochen and regain the Half-Saint’s Light,” Blood Spirit Queen thought.

Chapter 441 - Silvermoon

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Deputy Commander Nie is back!”

“Deputy Nie, no matter how hard I try, I couldn’t succeed in practice the move ‘Fish for the Moon in the Water’. Can you give me some advice?”

...

As soon as Nie Honglou got back, Silver Sky Mercenary Group was stirred up and everyone was excited. Those mercenary warriors all came toward him and clustered around him, just like the moon being surrounded by a myriad of stars.

Most of them were young women.

They all flirted with him and followed him eagerly as if they were pursuing their beloved.

Admittedly, Nie Honglou did have an extraordinary figure. He had a delicate face, robust body and amazing talent, so it was natural that a lot of girls liked him.

He smiled, “Today, I’m going to introduce you to a guest who could give you some good advices for your sword techniques.”

He pointed to Zhang Ruochen as he was speaking.

Until then did they notice a young man who stood right beside Nie Honglou.

Though the young man’s look wasn’t as breathtaking as Nie Honglou, he was also handsome and valiant. He had a unique personality, which made people feel approachable.

A dozen pairs of eyes fixed at Zhang Ruochen at the same time, but he still looked calm and relaxed instead of getting

nervous.

A female mercenary with a ponytail stepped out. She was in long boots and carried a snake-shaped sword on her back. She stopped in front of Zhang Ruochen.

“He’s probably less than 25 years old. How can he give us suggestions?”

She scrutinized Zhang Ruochen, raised her eyebrows and shook her head lightly. Obviously, she was not enthusiastic about him.

Warriors could use Genuine Qi to maintain their physical conditions and slow down aging.

However, their eyes could not fool people.

Martial masters could know the warriors’ real ages through their eyes.

That female mercenary was called Tu Ling. She had achieved the Completion of Heaven Realm. She was a warrior on the Heaven Board and a leader in Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

Therefore, it was reasonable that she looked down upon a young person who was still in their early twenties.

Nie Honglou made a laugh and asked, “It should’ve been seven years since you achieved the Completion of Heaven Realm. Where do you rank on the Heaven Board?”

Though Tu Ling was proud and arrogant, she respected the senior Nie Honglou very much. She bowed with her hands folded and answered, “Deputy Commander, I’m now ranked the 84,720th on the Heaven Board.”

Nie Honglou said, “You’ve made a great improvement. I remember that you were ranked after 200,000th last year.”

Tu Ling stood straight with her developed chest and lifted her chin. She was very confident and smiled, “When I undertook a task last year, I obtained a thousand-year Spiritual Dose. After I refined it, my cultivation had enhanced a lot. Thus, I reached the top 100,000 on the Heaven Board.”

“If I could succeed in practicing the sword technique of Inferior Class, Ghost Level imparted by Commander, my ranking on the Heaven Board will definitely improve.”

Tu Ling had practiced the Moon Sword for five years and was only one step away from the Succeed.

Nie Honglou shook his head and said, “Your talent is quite good. However, it’s unlucky that you still lag badly behind this young man.”

Tu Ling was not convinced and said, “Deputy Commander, it’s too early to draw such a conclusion. Although I haven’t broken into the Fish-dragon Realm, I didn’t waste any time and continued to train over these years. Do you really think that a warrior ranked on the Heaven Board is that fragile?”

“Swish!”

Tu Ling hummed, mobilized the Genuine Qi and raised her fingers.

The snake-shaped crystal sword on her back was controlled by Genuine Qi and flew out of the sheath and dropped into her hands.

Two gusts of swirling wind rushed out of between her feet. Meanwhile, she thrust her sword and displayed the Moon Sword.

Suddenly, thirty six sword shadows appeared in front of the sword. They simultaneously stabbed toward Zhang Ruochen’s thirty six vital parts on his body.

Zhang Ruochen smiled slightly and slightly moved his body, then illusory images of bodily movement appeared.

After a moment, those illusory images all overlapped.

Zhang Ruochen still stood in the same place as if he didn’t move at all.

Tu Ling was a little surprised and prepared to launch another attack. However, she found that her sword was held in Zhang Ruochen’s hands.

What on earth just happened?

“My sword...”

She changed her facial expression and immediately made palm positions to launch an attack on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen took a step back and easily escaped Tuling’s attack. He swung his arm up and tossed out the snake-shaped sword. That combat sword returned into the sword scabbard after it flew around Tuling.

“Sword-wielding Technique, heart integrated into the sword.”

Tu Ling immediately stopped her attack and goggled at Zhang Ruochen as if she got to know the young man in front of her for the first time.

How was it possible that such a young man was able to achieve Heart Integrated into Sword?

Although she was a master on the Heaven Board, there was still a long way for her to reach that realm.

Tu Ling was filled with deep esteem towards a young warrior who succeeded in practicing the Integrated into Sword made. She stopped despising him like before. Instead, her eyes were full of worship and respect.

“Could I be fortunate enough to know your name?” Tu Ling asked with joined hands.

Zhang Ruochen also returned the salute with joined hands and said, “Zhang Ruochen.”

Tu Ling showed a confirmative expression and said happily, “It turns out that a king of the new generation has come to the Silver Sky Mercenary Group. No wonder you can succeed in practicing the Heart Integrated into Sword at such a young age. I admire you!”

“Is he Zhang Ruochen, one of the Six Great Kings of the new generation?”

“It was said that he has defeated the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall. Moreover, he’s the first student among the latest group of Saint Apprentices to be enrolled by the Saint Academy this year.”

“Why does he come to our Silver Sky Mercenary Group?”

“Rumor says that he has reached the Realm of Heart Integrated into Sword. If he could give some advice to us in sword techniques, our strength would definitely be improved.”

...

Most of the surrounding mercenaries heard of Zhang Ruochen's name and his story.

Many young warriors among them also regarded Zhang Ruochen as their model. Now that they saw him in person, they were naturally excited.

Subsequently, some people walked to Zhang Ruochen to talk about the problems they had encountered in the practice of sword techniques, hoping that he could give them some advice.

Zhang Ruochen was very patient and always wore smiles on his face. He talked about sword technique and exchanged Martial Arts with those warriors of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group. Moreover, he occasionally shared his understandings of sword techniques.

After two hours, the gate of a Tower in the center of Silver Sky Mercenary Group was opened with a loud crash.

As a faint white light was emitted from the gate, a tall woman came out from the light. She had silvery hair, icy temperament, and cold eyes. She wore combat boots and armor that exposed her flat white belly.

It was Silvermoon, the Commander of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

She stood upon the stone steps and looked at Zhang Ruochen, and she slightly frowned. Then, she looked at Nie Honglou and radiated doubts from her eyes.

Nie Honglou bowed to Silvermoon and said something to her through the sound wave. And then, she nodded and showed a thoughtful look.

Finally, she fixed her eyes again on Zhang Ruochen and walked toward him.

Upon seeing Silvermoon, those mercenaries of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group became quiet, stepped back, and saluted to her respectfully.

They greeted simultaneously to their Commander.

“Is she Silvermoon, Commander of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group?”

Zhang Ruochen carefully looked at the woman walking out of the Tower.

Silvermoon looked like a girl in her twenties with a perfect figure. She had an ample bosom, round hips, and slender waist. In particular, she had two long legs that was not covered by the armor, which were as glittering and translucent as the egg white without any impurities.

She obviously wore armor and had an air of coldness, but she gave people an impression of sensuality.

However, Zhang Ruochen found that he couldn't recognize Silvermoon's real appearance even if he injected the Genuine Qi into his eye vessels.

He could only see her shadow instead of her true body, as if she was in another dimension.

No, that was her true body.

But, her cultivation was so deep that Zhang Ruochen couldn't see through. It was far deeper than ordinary people, and she was already on the Holy Road.

Of course, if Zhang Ruochen used his Skyeye, he could see clearly her appearance and even her cultivation. But doing so would be too rude and definitely enrage her.

“I didn't expect that she has arrived at such a profound Realm. She is probably not be far from the Half-Saint Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen could clearly see that every step Silvermoon took, the Spiritual Qi of the Heaven and Earth would vibrate as if she was the center of the universe.

Even Zhang Ruochen could not mobilize the Spiritual Qi of the Heaven and Earth in front of her, even if he released the

Martial Soul.

Zhang Ruochen was highly gifted. As the old saying goes, someone will always be better than you. In the Eastern Region, there were also many extraordinary people and smart talents.

Silvermoon and Nie Honglou could be rated as smart talents. In the aspect of talent, they were better than most of the Saints in the Saint Academy.

Chapter 442 - The Enemy's Arrival

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Like a Female Warlord straight out of a painting, Silvermoon had an extraordinary temperament and powerful presence. Even if she just stood there casually, people would feel tremendous pressure from her.

“Nie Honglou said that you wanted to hire me to help you kill a Blood Spirit at the Sixth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. Do you know how much does it cost to hire me for one day?” Silvermoon said frankly.

Even if he was standing in front of a superior like Silvermoon, Zhang Ruochen was not afraid and looked very calm. He said, “A superior like the Commander of Silvermoon Group wouldn't bother about silver coins and Spiritual Crystals. I guess what you need is something else, right?”

After seeing how composed he was, Silvermoon had a look of praise in her eyes. She said, “You lived up to your name, Zhang Ruochen. No wonder that you can defeat the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall. Let's Go! We'll talk in detail inside the Silver Sky Tower.”

With a gesture of invitation, Silvermoon slightly moved her body and disappeared.

In the next moment, she had returned to the seven-story tower.

Zhang Ruochen set foot on the stairs, climbed upwards, and walked into the Silver Sky Tower.

As he stood on the first story of the Silver Sky Tower, Zhang Ruochen looked up and saw Silvermoon sitting on a seat with

sliver eagle wings.

She wore a thin layer of silver armor which only wrapped around her breasts and hips. The armor was made out of unknown materials and it was radiant and bright as if it was burning in flames. Much of her white skin was exposed outside the armor.

Drops of silvery light rain fell from the sky, and she seemed to be hidden in the rain.

Her long silver hair covered her shoulders and hung around her slender and sexy neck, impressing people with the visual impact of a cold, arrogant, yet sexy goddess. Conflicting temperaments were shown at the same time.

Silvermoon said, “Zhang Ruochen, I have two conditions. You only have to agree to either one of them, and I’ll personally kill that Blood Spirit without receiving any additional commission. Moreover, I’ll send Nie Honglou to protect you for a month.”

Zhang Ruochen stood straight with his hands on his back in the center of the tower, saying, “What are your conditions?”

Silvermoon said, “I know that you’re the Buddha Emperor’s descendant with the Dragon Pearl. Therefore, the first condition is that I’d like to read the Buddhist Emperor’s True Thought Painting for three days.”

“I’ve now reached the peak of the Ninth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm and only one step away from the Half-saint Realm. However, it’s extremely difficult, like how the wrath of heaven can never be comprehended by mere mortals.”

“If I can perceive the Buddhist Emperor’s True Thought Painting, it should help me a lot. Perhaps I can use this to realize the true meaning of the Half-Saint Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “I’m sorry, I don’t have the Buddhist Emperor’s True Thought Painting.”

Silvermoon was disappointed, but she could understand him.

The True Thought Painting was drawn by Buddhist Emperor with his lifelong Buddhist doctrine. Thus, it was very precious.

Even if she had such a treasure, she would not take it out easily to others.

However, Silvermoon still misunderstood Zhang Ruochen, because he really did not have the treasure.

“All right!”

She nodded and said, “In that case, here’s the second condition.”

Zhang Ruochen listened carefully and said to himself that with her status and cultivation, the requirement Silvermoon put forward would certainly not be cheap. By no means could an ordinary person achieve it.

What would her second condition be?

Silvermoon said, “Zhang Ruochen, you should be quite knowledgeable about the Silver Sky Mercenary Group. It was founded by me, and the members all are young talents. Although the mercenary group isn’t powerful now, it’s full of life and vitality.”

“Moreover, it has a relatively high degree of credibility, and it has recruited a lot of extraordinary talents. Imaginably, if its development is smooth, with a hundred years, it’ll surely become a super mercenary group with its name known all over the Eastern Region. So, are you interested in joining us?”

Zhang Ruochen was slightly surprised. He didn’t expect that her second condition was to invite him to join the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

“Are you inviting me to join you?” Zhang Ruochen reconfirmed.

Silvermoon gave a rare smile, stood up, and walked through the air. She said, “Silver Sky Mercenary Group is widely known as a gathering of geniuses. If there are news about how Zhang Ruochen, one of the Six Great Kings of the new generation, is also a member of us, it would definitely be a good advertisement. Soon many young warriors with an adventurous dream would come to join us. Thus, our group would grow rapidly.”

“So, your name itself is already a priceless treasure. If you join us, I’ll certainly help you to kill the Blood Spirit and ensure your safety.”

In fact, Zhang Ruochen also wanted to join some mercenary groups to adventure in various places of the world, increase his information of the world, experience martial arts, and enhance his capability.

The Eastern Region had a vast land that Zhang Ruochen had never been to.

Read thousands of books, travel thousands of miles.

Martial Arts and Holy Road could not be practiced by secluding oneself in a room.

When Silvermoon invited him to join the Silver Sky Mercenary Group, Zhang Ruochen certainly had an intention to do so.

Just when he was still considering, a man in purple robe flew from a distance, flashed from the void space like a ghost, and landed on the top of the Silver Sky Tower.

It was not until he stood still that people could see his appearance. He was the Purple Wind Emissary, the leader of Seven Star Emissaries of the Black Market Excellence Hall.

“Swoosh!”

Purple Wind Emissary took out a delicate small golden bell that was two inches tall. He put it in the center of his palm, and then mobilized Genuine Qi into the bell.

As the Genuine Qi erupted, the inscription inside the bell was activated.

The small golden bell quickly rotated and flew out. It hovered over the sky above the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

“Bang!”

A huge Golden Bell Shield fell down, completely wrapped up the Silver Sky Mercenary Group, and enveloped them inside the bell.

When Purple Wind Emissary flew to the top of the group, Zhang Ruochen and Silvermoon in the tower had already noticed.

“Someone is on the top of the tower.”

Silvermoon broke through the rooftop of the tower immediately and threw a palm to attack the Purple Wind Emissary.

But she was a little too late. After displaying the Langhuan Golden Bell, Purple Wind Emissary had immediately retreated and disappeared without a trace.

“Buzz!”

That palm thrown by Silvermoon hit the light wall of the Golden Bell. However, it did not break the light wall. Instead, it caused a giant sound, just like the ringing of a bell.

Circles of sound waves surged down like waves.

“Splash!”

The Silver Sky Tower was the first to be attacked. Under the impact of the sound wave, the seventh floor shattered, the pillars turned into flying ash, and the glazed tiles were reduced to fine powder, followed by the sixth-floor, the fifth-floor...

Chapter 443 - Langhuan Golden Bell

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Under the impact of sound waves, the Silver Sky Tower was torn to pieces.

Silvermoon's face changed. "Damn it, it's a trap!"

Purple Wind Emissary deliberately made her discover him in order to induce her to throw a palm to strike the Langhuan Golden Bell.

If the sound waves were transmitted to the ground, more than half of these warriors from the Silver Sky Mercenary Group who were weak would have been shredded into a bloody mist.

In other words, these warriors of the Mercenary Group were actually going to die in her hands.

It was a scheme to kill two birds with one stone. Not only could the warriors of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group be confined to the Langhuan Golden Bell, preventing them from escaping,

but they could also annihilate a large number of warriors from the Silver Sky Mercenary Group by means of Silvermoon's hands.

And finally, it intended to disturb the Heart State of Silvermoon as well.

As long as the mercenaries of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group died from those sound waves, Silvermoon would certainly reproach herself and disturbed her Heart State.

As a result of that, her fighting power would plummet down sharply.

At that time, Di Yi would be able to defeat the Silver Sky Mercenary Group more easily, suppressing Silvermoon, the traitor, and killing Zhang Ruochen, the sworn enemy.

Red Wish Emissary was standing behind Di Yi, wearing a thin red veil layer, under which her graceful figure was looming. She smiled charmingly and said, “Young master is exactly prophetic, Silvermoon is fooled as expected.”

Blue Star Emissary said, “The Langhuan Golden Bell is a Holy Weapon. Under the impetus of Purple Wind Emissary, nearly half of the power of the Holy Weapon can be exerted. But Silvermoon’s hard strike on the Golden Bell was the real trigger that brought out the Destruction Power of the Langhuan Golden Bell. With this sound wave, half of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group could be slaughtered.”

Silvermoon was suspended in mid-air and it was too late to stop the sound waves from rushing at the ground.

“This is an outrage, how dare they trap me!”

Silvermoon was very angry and immediately rushed to the ground, trying to turn the tables.

The others did not feel the sound waves coming from above.

However, Zhang Ruochen felt them in advance and immediately released the Divine Dragon Strength of the Dragon Pearl without any hesitation.

“Swish!”

A layer of golden brilliance, centered around Zhang Ruochen’s body, rushed out and appeared about five meters from the ground in mid-air to resist the impact of the sound waves.

With the current cultivation of Zhang Ruochen, the power of the Dragon Pearl that could be exerted was quite limited, and it was impossible for it to resist the sound waves.

Therefore, under the cover of the golden light, Zhang Ruochen secretly mobilized the Power of Space and displayed the

occult art of space warps to change the direction of the impact of the sound waves.

From afar, the abundant sound waves dived down from the sky, but immediately bounced back when encountering the golden light curtain released by Zhang Ruochen.

Of course, there were still some sound waves that went through the golden light curtain and fell to the ground.

“Boom!”

The ground was broken and there were dense cracks.

The defensive strategy inscription of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group was activated immediately, then it formed a light column and flew up into the sky.

Even so, many buildings were smashed by the sound waves, which were becoming fragmented and being turned into ruins.

This wave of shocks did not injure the Mercenary Group warriors. Only a handful of them fainted under the impact of the sound waves, as their seven head orifices were all bleeding and legs were trembling.

“How could it be? How could Zhang Ruochen successfully mobilize the power of the Dragon Pearl and resist the sound waves of the Langhuan Golden Bell?”

The eyes of Blue Star Emissary went askew as he was quite shocked when looking in the direction of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group from afar.

Zhang Ruochen’s martial cultivation was not that high. Even though he was in possession of the Dragon Pearl, he could only protect himself at most, so how could he withstand a Holy Weapon?

“Interesting.”

Di Yi was wearing a golden metal mask, under which there was a pair of eyes sparking with interest. He seemed to be becoming more interested in Zhang Ruochen.

Only Blood Spirit Queen knew what really happened, thinking to herself,

“Zhang Ruochen must be using the power of space. If I can learn to control space, then I can go anywhere in this big world.”

Although she knew the details about Zhang Ruochen, she would not tell Di Yi.

She and Di Yi had not gotten that familiar yet.

The Silver Sky Mercenary Group was in chaos. They were all shocked by this sudden attack and did not know what happened.

“What happened? Who dares to attack the Silver Sky Mercenary Group in the 31st City?”

“That power is extremely fierce. If the sound waves were a little bit stronger, I certainly would have died.”

...

Silvermoon flew over from above and stood on a broken wall.

After her beautiful eyes took a glance down, she was slightly relieved to see no casualties.

“Bam!”

The golden brilliance enveloping the Silver Sky Mercenary Group was generally converging back into Zhang Ruochen’s body just like a tide.

Zhang Ruochen stepped out of the collapsed Silver Sky Tower and looked at Silvermoon in the distance, saying, “Commander of the Silvermoon Group, perhaps you are in big trouble.”

Silvermoon delivered a grateful look to Zhang Ruochen, without asking why Zhang Ruochen had such a powerful force that could even hold off the sound waves of the Langhuan Golden Bell.

She said, “This time, I’m afraid you’re going to be tired! If I’m not wrong, the enemies who come here should be masters of the Black Market. They are coming to look for me.”

Zhang Ruochen’s brows furrowed as he said, “How can you start a feud with them?”

“It’s a long story. I will tell you if there are still opportunities in the future,” Silvermoon said.

Upon hearing the words “Black Market”, some warriors of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group were shocked and frightened.

The influence of the Black Market was powerful, deep-seated, and all over the world. Everyone was terrified.

Of course, there were still many people remaining calm.

“In any case, we all swear to be together with the Commander and the Silver Sky Mercenary Group, dead or alive.”

More than half of the mercenary warriors were kneeling down on one knee, with their right fists pressing on their chests, and saluting Silvermoon.

Watching this scene, Zhang Ruochen also had to admire the charm of Silvermoon’s personality. In a moment of life and death, there were still so many people willing to follow her and join her in battle.

Moreover, with her power alone, she could establish a Mercenary Group on her own and gain a firm foothold in the Eastern Region.

Thus, it could be seen that her own ability was also quite outstanding.

Suddenly, the sky quickly changed.

Looking up from the martial arts arena of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group, the sky had dark clouds covering the moon. The daylight turned into night. There was only a single light column still shining, making the surroundings slightly visible.

“What’s going on?” Someone was shocked.

Zhang Ruochen looked over the top of his head and said, “It should be the power of the Holy Weapon, the Golden Bell.”

Silvermoon said, “What the Black Market used must have been the Langhuan Golden Bell. We are now covered in the Golden Bell. The holder of Golden Bell can influence our vision by mobilizing its power.”

“Is it true that nobody from the outside world could know that the Silver Sky Mercenary Group has been attacked by the Black Market?” Tu Ling asked.

Silvermoon nodded.

Instantly, everyone’s heart sank.

Chapter 444 - Attack

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Tu Ling was still very calm and asked, “How can I break the Langhuan Golden Bell?”

This time, Silvermoon did not answer, as if she was thinking about something.

Zhang Ruochen answered, “You can’t play hardball with the Langhuan Golden Bell, or it will produce a strong sound wave of destruction that can kill all the martial artists in it. By doing so, you are committing suicide. Just now, we were almost killed by the sound waves.”

Tu Ling frowned and said, “So we are just going to allow anyone to butcher us?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “That may not be true. Although we are covered in the Golden Bell, an array is protecting us. The people from the Black Market can’t hurt us. If the time is long enough, the superior in the 31st city will certainly find that there is something wrong with me and will try to rescue me. If I guess correctly, masters from the Black Market should launch an attack soon.”

“Crack! Crack!”

On a dimly-lit street afar, figures emerged one by one.

Among them, Di Yi walked in the forefront, clapping and laughing. “You are indeed worthy to be my opponent, Zhang Ruochen, which finally makes me feel that the road to cultivation is not so lonely.”

In addition to Di Yi, five of Seven Kills Emissary, including Red Wish Emissary, Orange Star Emissary, Green Robe

Emissary, Blue Emissary, and Purple Wind Emissary, followed behind him. Each of them was a master of dragons and phoenixes.

“Clomp, Clomp!”

The sound of iron heels approached.

On both sides of Di Yi, nine knights rushed out.

They wore armor made of white bone. Every piece of bone was a piece of the armor, full of brilliance and sparkling like jade.

This was the armor made of the bones of the monk who had reached the Ninth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, and was called the “Glazed Bone Armor”.

That was because the Ninth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm was known as the “Glazed Treasured Body”. It was swordproof, waterproof, and fireproof, which was much better than an adamantite and indestructible body.

By using the bones of the monk who had reached the Ninth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, the refined armor was not only extremely tough, but also contained strong power from the bones.

The warriors in the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm could exert the power of a warrior who reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm by putting on the Glazed Bone Armor.

If the Completion of the Heaven Realm warriors wore Glazed Bone Armor, they would be able to exert the power of the First Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

Silvermoon’s face suddenly sank when she saw the 18 knights, the “Glazed Knights”.

The 18 knights, except for the two knight commanders, had the martial cultivation of the Completion of the Heaven Realm. And by putting on the Glazed Bone Armor, their strength increased immediately. They surpassed the mortal warriors and achieved the strength of the Fish-dragon Realm.

18 Glazed Knight of the Fish-dragon Realm could almost destroy a suzerain or a family.

Di Yi smiled and said, “Silver Sky Emissary, you left the Black Market 25 years ago, and the Hall Owner misses you very much. So he wanted me to ask you to come back.”

Zhang Ruochen was quite surprised.

“Why did Di Yi call Silvermoon ‘Silver Sky Emissary’?”

“Could it be that Silvermoon was once from the Black Market?”

Silvermoon stared at Di Yi and sneered coldly, “Since I’ve left Black Market Excellence Hall, I cannot go back. Di Yi, go back and tell the Hall Owner that if he wants to ask me back, let him come personally. Don’t send over juniors like you to get killed.”

Standing behind Di Yi, Purple Wind Emissary said clearly, “Silver Sky Emissary, you overestimate yourself too much. Do you really think because you have cultivated into the Glazed Treasured Body that no one under Half-Saint could get you?”

Silvermoon took a glance at Purple Wind Emissary and said indifferently, “In my eyes, you are just a junior.”

“Is that right? Then let me know how strong you are.”

“Phew!”

Purple Wind Emissary displayed a wonderful bodily movement in a flash. He passed through the light screen of the Langhuan Golden Bell and got into the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

The Langhuan Golden Bell was originally controlled by Purple Wind Emissary. Of course he could shuttle in and out of the light screen of the Golden Bell at will.

He appeared by Silvermoon’s side at an extreme speed. He tightened his fingers and used two fists to hit straight out.

“Mountain-pushing Fists!”

Purple Wind Emissary’s fists emitted a colored glaze aureole, which turned out to be the cultivation of the Ninth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. He had cultivated the Glazed Treasured Body.

Before the arrival of the fists, a strong boxing force rushed forward, as if it could push down the mountains.

Silvermoon moved her body magically and fell back. Her slender and flexible waist suddenly bent into a “bow” shape, passing through Purple Wind Emissary’s fist.

At the same time, she condensed Vital Essence and chopped toward Purple Wind Emissary’s neck with her palm.

“Rocking Hill force.”

Purple Wind Emissary changed his bodily movement immediately and fell to the ground with footsteps moving forward. Then, four figures appeared who encircled Silvermoon in the center.

The four figures punched out at the same time, breaking out the Rocking Hill force.

Silvermoon flew away from the ground and jumped out of the boxing circle.

Purple Wind Emissary retreated backward, returning to Di Yi’s side outside of the light curtain of the Langhuan Golden Bell.

Silvermoon wanted to follow behind Purple Wind Emissary, but she did not expect for Purple Wind Emissary to respond so quickly that he would close the Langhuan Golden Bell again before she could reach it.

“I did not expect that your cultivation had actually reached this step.” Silvermoon stopped in mid-air and stared at Purple Wind Emissary, seeming to be somewhat surprised.

Back then, the martial cultivation of Silvermoon was far beyond Purple Wind Emissary’s in the Black Market Excellence Hall. And Silvermoon was selected as the first Emissary.

Through the two strikes of the previous battle, Silvermoon discovered that the cultivation of Purple Wind Emissary was not weaker than hers.

Purple Wind Emissary said, “The reason you were caught by me is not because you’re not working hard enough, but because the resources of the Black Market Excellence Hall are

more abundant. Therefore, my cultivation speed is faster than yours. In fact, it's already quite unexpected that your strength is much more formidable than I thought."

Purple Wind Emissary relied on the Black Market. It was definitely better than Silvermoon, who was alone in the fight.

If Silvermoon was still in the Black Market, it was estimated that she would have already reached the Half-Saint Realm.

"Anyway, I can't return to the Black Market anymore. Since we have to fight, let's fight!" Silvermoon stood straight with firm eyes.

Purple Wind Emissary took a look at Di Yi and asked for his opinion.

Di Yi blinked his eyes and laughed. "Use the Roaring Flame Hammer first."

"I'm coming."

A man with a green flame burning all over his body rushed out from behind Di Yi. It was Green Robe Emissary among Seven Kills Emissary.

His face was thin, eyebrows dark, and eyes deeply concaved. He held a flaming bone hammer and knocked on the Langhuan Golden Bell.

The bone hammer, which was up to three meters long and shaped like a giant human skull, was surrounded by green flames.

"Buzz!"

The Roaring Flame Hammer hammered above the golden light screen, forming a circle of ripples suddenly and making a loud noise, as if the sky clock was vibrating.

If that hammer struck the ground, it would be enough to make the surrounding 10-mile area turn into a sea of fire.

"It is actually another Holy Weapon! This is bad!"

Zhang Ruochen's heart sank.

The Langhuan Golden Bell could withstand the attack of the sound waves with the array arranged by the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

However, by adding a Roaring Flame Hammer, the power of the sound waves would be improved again.

“Boom!”

All the buildings in the Silver Sky Mercenary Group collapsed, and even the thick copper pillar was cracked with a grain of lines, as if they were about to fragment.

With only the first wave of attacks, the defensive strategy of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group had been destroyed. It would be impossible to block the second wave of attacks.

Chapter 445 - Glazed Knights

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“It’s over, I’m afraid we’re all gonna die here today.”

“How powerful the sound waves are! The defensive strategy can’t even resist them.”

...

The sound of the Langhuan Golden Bell was like an Army of Ferocious Ghosts who were crying, yelling, and being strangled, which made them timid and scared. This sound not only impacted human flesh but it also affected people’s souls.

Some of the Heaven Realm warriors from the Silver Sky Mercenary Group who had not cultivated Martial Souls yet could not resist the impact of the sound waves. Their souls were wounded, frightened, and terrified and they desperately wanted to escape.

However, they just rushed over 33 meters away and hit a light screen layer. The screen emitted a bouncing force that sent them flying out.

“I don’t believe that I even can’t break a light screen.”

A mercenary warrior who had reached the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm took a heavy Dark Steel Saber, then with his legs bent, he shot up.

His hands held the knife handle while his power gathered on the sword, dragging knife energy as he chopped down.

“Pow!”

The knife appeared to split open the wall of bronze and iron, emitting a huge sound of impacting metal and splashing out a large spark.

This harsh sound broke his eardrum and a rush of blood flowed out from his ears.

With a clanging sound, his knife fell to the ground.

He flew backward with his hands covering his ears, and he tumbled and screamed on the ground.

Green Robe Emissary's body was burning with flames and he laughed loudly. He mobilized Genuine Qi and then raised the Roaring Flame Hammer again and knocked it on the Langhuan Golden Bell.

“I'll ward off the sound wave attack, Mysterious Light Shield.”

Silvermoon made a Magic Handprint and Holy Qi radiated from her body. Above her head, a round light wheel appeared immediately and slowly rotated to resist the attack of the sound waves.

The Mysterious Light Shield was a mid-class Ghost Level martial technique. Only the warriors who opened up the Sacred Mark of the holy light could successfully practice it. And once they had, it could sufficiently ward off the attack of a Holy Weapon.

Di Yi sneered and said, “Silvermoon has been pinned by the Langhuan Golden Bell sound wave and cannot join the fight. Glazed Knights, it is time for your show. You're all wearing the Glazed Bone Armor and aren't afraid of the sound wave attack. You must kill all the people in the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.”

“Rumble, rumble, rumble...!”

The sound of iron heels could be heard, which raised a lot of dust.

Under the leadership of the two knight commanders, 18 Glazed Knights, armed with 20-foot-long Dragon Bone

Spears, drove the savage beasts and crashed into the golden light curtain.

The Glazed Knights were so invincible that the Silver Sky Mercenary Group warriors were killed cruelly.

A mercenary soldier who was in the Medium State of the Heaven Realm jumped up seven meters with a heavy sword in his hands and leaped behind of one of the Glazed Knights, brandishing his sword and chopping at the left side of the Glazed Knight's neck.

“Pow!”

The heavy sword slammed on top of the Glazed Bone Armor, uttering a loud bang, but it failed to break the armor.

The Glazed Knight suddenly turned around, revealing a cold look, and stabbed out with the sharp Dragon Bone Spear.

As he sneered, the spear penetrated the mercenary warrior's lizard armor and pierced his body. The tip of the spear went out of the mercenary soldier's back, exposing a half-meter-long bloody red rod.

The Glazed Knight lifted up the mercenary warrior with the spear, with blood constantly flowing from above.

“Go to your death.”

Tu Ling clenched her white teeth and revealed cold hatred in her eyes. With a snake-shaped crystal sword coming from out of the blue, she stabbed toward the Glazed Knight's left eye from 10 feet away.

Her cultivation was in the Completion of the Heaven Realm. She was a master on the

Heaven Board

and her snake-shaped sword was a 9th-level Genuine Martial Arm.

As she stabbed, a current of icing air emerged from the sword, as if the air were about to be frozen.

That Glazed Knight burst into hoarse laughter. With a flick of his arm, the Dragon Bone Spear spun in a circle. Then, the

mercenary warrior in the Medium State of the Heaven Realm was shattered to pieces, with flesh and blood scattered about.

Afterward, he held the spear with both hands to use it as a stick, suddenly slashing at Tu Ling, who was rushing toward him.

Tu Ling did not confront the Glazed Knight head-on but immediately withdrew her sword technique. Like a beautiful snake, she rushed in front of him along his spear with dexterous body movements.

“Swish!”

She drew her sword again, as if a spiritual snake had darted out its forked tongue, still hitting toward the Glazed Knight’s left eye.

When she was about to succeed, another Dragon Bone Spear came from her left side, piercing the armor on her left shoulder and leaving a long bloody stain.

Seeing another Glazed Knight appear on the left side, she turned pale.

A Glazed Knight’s strength was comparable to a superior’s in the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. Moreover, they were invulnerable.

Although Tu Ling entered the top 100,000 on the Heaven Board

with powerful strength, under the two Glazed Knights’ Combined Attack, she could only dodge here and there. In such a dangerous situation, she was almost pierced through by the Dragon Bone Spears several times.

“Pow!”

After dealing with dozens of strikes, one of the Glazed Knights wielding his spear struck her belly. She was hit, spat out blood, and was thrown flying, then fell heavily on the ground.

“Go to your death.”

Another Glazed Knight, driving a savage beast with a Dragon Bone Spear, rushed at her and stabbed toward her chest.

With her palm pressing against her chest, Tu Ling only felt the pain of her five internal organs, and she even could not move her fingers. She looked at the spear thrust at her from above and her eyes were full of desperation.

Suddenly, a young figure appeared before her. It was Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen stretched his arms forward, with his five fingers emitting a purple thunderbolt, and squeezed the Dragon Bone Spear tightly.

The spear tip was left only one inch away from Tu Lin's chest.

Seeing the young man standing beside her, Tu Ling relaxed and said, "Zhang Ruochen."

She quickly mobilized the Genuine Qi and ran a large circle of vital energy in her body, and then she recovered a little bit. Immediately, she hit the ground with one fist and shot up.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the Dragon Bone Spear with one hand while he popped a class-five healing pill up in the air with the other hand, saying, "Take this."

"Thank you."

Without hesitation, Tu Ling took the pill and immediately swallowed it.

"Humph! Are you courting death?"

The Glazed Knight did not take Zhang Ruochen seriously. He held his Dragon Bone Spear with both hands and ran the power of his entire body, hoping to throw him out.

However, Zhang Ruochen seemed to take root on the ground. No matter how hard the Glazed Knight used his strength, he remained motionless.

"Heart-piercing Strike!"

Another Glazed Knight immediately rushed up to display his overbearing movements. He stabbed his spear out with a giant force and hit toward Zhang Ruochen's chest and abdomen.

“Zhang Ruochen, be careful! The two Glazed Knights’ Combined Attack is quite powerful, which can multiply their fighting power,” Tu Ling said to remind him.

Tu Ling originally had a profound cultivation. If she only battled with one Glazed Knight, she still had confidence that she would defeat him.

But battling with two knights, she was unable to fight against them for more than a hundred moves. Thus, it could be seen that the Glazed Knights’ joint attack was very powerful.

“Divine Dragon’s Steal.”

Being fearless, Zhang Ruochen flew away from the ground and rushed in front of the Glazed Knights. He struck out his palm, generating a large streak of lightning.

Chapter 446 - Decisive Killing

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Awoo!”

An illusion of lightning dragon more than 10 meters long flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s palm. It hit the Glazed Knight’s chest before flying out of his back.

“Pft!”

The knight suffered a heavy blow that turned his chest and abdomen bloody. Without his Glazed Bone Armor, his body would have been torn apart. He spat out a mouthful of blood fog. His eyes darkened and he lost his balance. He fell down, sliding off the savage beast’s back.

Zhang Ruochen fell on the savage beast’s back and snatched the Dragon Bone Spear from his hand. He stabbed the Glazed Knight through his mouth into his head.

The blood flew out from the crevices of his armor and stained a large area of the ground.

Another knight looked stunned in the distance. He seemed as if he had yet to snap out of his shock.

Bam!

Zhang Ruochen didn’t do things sloppily at all. Grasping the spear, he swung at the other knight and sent him flying from the back of the savage beast.

The knight uttered a heartrending cry and smashed through a six-meter-high wall. He fell into the ruins.

“Amazing. They’re all warriors in the Heaven Realm. Why is the gap so great? With such power, Zhang Ruochen could already be ranked in the top 1,000 on the Heaven Board. Maybe even the top 500.”

Tu Ling was stunned to see how easily Zhang Ruochen defeated the two Glazed Knights. She finally realized the difference between them.

Standing high on the ground, Zhang Ruochen looked around and discovered that the two most powerful masters of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group, Silvermoon and Nie Honglou, were tied down.

Silvermoon was able to fend off the sound wave attack of Langhuan Golden Bell alone with her cultivation but she was too busy to attend to kill the Glazed Knight.

Nie Honglou was stuck with the two Glazed Knight Commanders.

The two Glazed Knight Commanders dispatched by the Black Market Excellence were all top experts. They had holy meridians in their bodies, which could turn their Genuine Qi into weak Spiritual Qi. With the support of their armors, they were almost on par with Nie Honglou.

Seeing that he had always been Di Yi’s nemesis, Zhang Ruochen decided to lend the Silver Sky Mercenary Group a hand.

He made up his mind to put up a good fight against the warriors of the black market.

He summoned the Violet Thunder Sword and executed the Sword Defending Technology.

Whoosh!

The Violet Thunder Sword turned into a streamer that flew and hit a knight’s back. The knight fell to the ground off the savage beast’s back.

Bang!

Zhang Ruochen rode the savage beast and rushed over. He took the spear and stabbed the fallen knight on the chest.

Snap!

Though the armor didn't shatter, the knight's body couldn't withstand the impact of such a powerful force. His chest collapsed into itself with a crackling sound.

Even the ground caved in.

Blood continued to gush out of the knight's mouth as he trembled all over. Eventually, his internal organs turned bloody and he stopped breathing.

Zhang Ruochen had killed two knights and severely injured one in a matter of seconds.

Even if it was the black market, they had to spend a large number of Spiritual Crystals just to train one Glazed Knight.

Losing one knight meant losing a lot of wealth.

Standing outside of the Langhuan Golden Bell, Di Yi narrowed his eyes and wore an unpleasant look. "Blood Spirit Queen, it's now your turn!"

Blood Spirit Queen sneered and immediately rushed out. He passed through the golden light curtain and entered the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

"Go with him. End the battles quickly!" Di Yi said.

Red Wish Emissary, Orange Star Emissary, Deep Blue Emissary, and Purple Wind Emissary who had stood behind him rushed out at the same time, joining the battle.

The Silver Sky Mercenary Group was already under tremendous pressure under the attack of 18 Glazed Knights.

With the four major Emissaries and Blood Spirit Queen joining the battle, it was an even more devastating blow to them.

"Does even the God want our Silver Sky Mercenary Group to die?"

Bathed in blood, Nie Honglou was forced to fight Deep Blue Emissary along with the two knight commanders.

His red-rimmed eyes widened to see the Four Emissaries and Blood Spirit Queen who had rushed into the light screen of the Golden Bell, as well as the mercenary soldiers who were constantly falling into pools of blood. His heart burned with hatred.

His body was all scratched up. He was almost defeated but struggled to hold, refusing to admit defeat.

While Silvermoon faced the sound wave attack of the Langhuan Golden Bell, she was also fighting Purple Wind Emissary.

Suddenly, Purple Wind Emissary used a move from the martial technique of mid-class of Ghost Level, Heaven-earth Splitting Spear. He hit the Silvermoon in the stomach, piercing through it and leaving a deep and bloody wound behind.

“Silvermoon, you dare to use spare a part of your power to resist the attack of the Langhuan Golden Bell while fighting me?”

Purple Wind Emissary sneered as he retrieved his Purple Torch Spear.

As he retrieved his spear, a stream of blood poured out from Silvermoon’s stomach. The blood trickled down her slender thigh.

She instantly used a streak of the Spiritual Qi to seal the wound. She gritted her white teeth. “Aren’t you worried that I’ll take back the Mysterious Light Shield and let the sound wave of the Langhuan Golden Bell fall, killing the warrior of the black market in the bell?”

Purple Wind Emissary sneered. “In that case, the sound waves will also kill your mercenary soldiers. Silvermoon, your greatest weakness is that you’re not ruthless enough. “You betrayed the black market for this reason and now, you’re dying for the same reason as well.”

Purple Wind Emissary and Di Yi knew very well that they couldn’t stop Silvermoon if she wanted to leave.

They could only restrain her through the lives of the mercenary soldiers. Now, she couldn’t leave even if she

wanted to.

Everyone has their weakness.

“All the grudges should end today.”

Silvermoon sighed, knowing that today would mark her death.

She would never abandon anyone from the Silver Sky Mercenary Group and leave.

Since she couldn't leave, she could only die together with her group. Before the might of the Black Market, her group was so small.

After Zhang Ruochen had killed four Glazed Knights, he finally met Blood Spirit Queen.

Blood Spirit Queen struck out one palm, his palm power turning into a piece of blood cloud that sent him flying.

“Zhang Ruochen, let's see who'll come and save you today.”

Blood Spirit Queen floated down from the sky and stood on the savage beast's head. Stretching his two claws, he stared proudly at Zhang Ruochen underneath.

“You joined the Black Market?” Zhang Ruochen asked, wiping the blood from the corner of his mouth.

Blood Spirit Queen shook his head. “Di Yi and I are just partners. We'll go our separate ways after killing you.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Di Yi is truly cunning. To think he'll make use of you as well. Very well then, we'll settle our grudge today. It's either your death or mine.”

“You want to fight me? With your cultivation?” Blood Spirit Queen laughed.

She was basically well aware of Zhang Ruochen's trump card.

Even if he used all the tricks up his sleeve, she could still kill him using 30% of her power.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Sarira in a relaxed way and murmured to himself, “Looks like today's the day I unlock the first seal of the Sarira.”

Chapter 447 - Mighty Power

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

According to Golden Dragon, as long as Zhang Ruochen unlocked the first-level Sarira seal, he would be able to obtain power that was comparable to that of a warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm.

But Zhang Ruochen did not know that the power would be comparable to that of which Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

In the distance, Di Yi's eyes slightly narrowed as he said, "Is that aura... the Sarira?"

It was not just Di Yi, but the other masters in the Langhuan Golden Bell also felt the aura of the Sarira.

Although the seals of the Sarira had not yet been opened, everyone had already heard the sound of the Sanskrit between heaven and earth.

A majestic power rushed from the ground and sky, and gathered on Zhang Ruochen's palm.

He opened the box and saw a golden fireball. Golden Buddhist scriptures flew from the inside one after another and floated in the void space.

"Dragon Sarira!"

Blood Spirit Queen opened her eyes wide, which shined with a greedy look.

Standing close to Zhang Ruochen, she immediately rushed out to seize the Sarira.

When Zhang Ruochen's body moved, the space around fluctuated slightly and his body disappeared. After a moment,

he reappeared 50 meters behind Blood Spirit Queen.

He had just used Space Moving, but at that moment, everyone was attracted by the Sarira. No one noticed that Zhang Ruochen had mobilized the power of space.

Zhang Ruochen removed the first-level seal of the Sarira and suddenly, a huge power was released from it to support Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen's body became golden, with a sacred Buddha's light suspended above him.

“Whoosh!”

The Violet Thunder Sword flew back and fell into the hands of Zhang Ruochen.

“Zhang Ruochen, if you hand over the Sarira, I'll spare your life.” Blood Spirit Queen's eyes were crazy as she longed for the Sarira.

At the same time, two Glazed Knight Commanders also rushed over and held the Dragon Bone Spear behind him. It seemed that they also had the desire to obtain the Sarira.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You all want the Sarira. But whom should I give it to?”

“Of course, it should be given to us, the Black Market Excellence Hall. Only our young master has the right to benefit from the Sarira,” said a Glazed Knight Commander among them.

Zhang Ruochen said, “What will happen if I don't give it to you?”

The Glazed Knight Commander raised the Dragon Bone Spear and said with a sneer, “You're just a warrior of the Heaven Realm, you are a nonentity. I think that you don't have the right to say ‘no’ before me.”

At the same time, the Glazed Knight Commander jumped from the back of a savage beast and suddenly thrust out a lance.

His cultivation was in the Fifth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, which opened up two Holy Meridians, allowing the Genuine Qi to be transformed into Holy Qi.

Therefore, even if he just made a casual move, he could burst out tremendous power.

The Fourth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm was called the “Yinyu Holy Meridian”, while the Fifth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm was called the “Yangyu Holy Meridian”. The two Holy Meridians connected the two legs, which made the power break out from the entire body.

It seemed that just a lance was thrust out. But in the eyes of the others, it was like a bone dragon had flown out, showing its sharp teeth and biting Zhang Ruochen’s head.

If he did not break the first-level seal of the Sarira and simply relied on his own cultivation, Zhang Ruochen could not defend against the lance.

Everyone from the Silver Sky Mercenary Group was worried about Zhang Ruochen. No one thought that he could bear the full strike from the Glazed Knight Commander.

“Zhang Ruochen, retreat,” cried Tu Ling.

As his eyes narrowed, Zhang Ruochen stepped forward and quickly grabbed the Dragon Bone Spear.

“You dare to go to grab the Dragon Bone Spear! Do you think I’m just an ordinary Glazed Knight?”

The Glazed Knight Commander sneered and twisted his arms, producing white Holy Qi in his palm that formed a huge vortex.

However, he soon discovered that Zhang Ruochen had disappeared and was not engulfed by the vortex formed by the lance.

“How could a warrior in the Heaven Realm be so fast? He...”

The face of that Glazed Knight Commander changed, and he immediately took his Dragon Bone Spear back and quickly retreated to defend himself.

“It’s too late!”

Zhang Ruochen was standing behind that Glazed Knight Commander, he then held out his palms and struck the knight’s head.

“Boom!”

The head of that Glazed Knight Commander cracked like a watermelon, turning into a strangely distorted shape. His blood constantly flowed out of the breach in the bones.

The Glazed Bone Armor was not invincible. As long as the power was strong enough, it would still be broken.

A young and powerful master in the Fish-dragon Realm was killed by Zhang Ruochen’s palms.

Zhang Ruochen was standing astutely on the back of a savage beast and he took the Dragon Bone Spear from the hands of that Glazed Knight Commander. He poured Genuine Qi into it, and inscriptions immediately appeared.

“Using the dragon bones of the Half-Saint Class, the lance is engraved with 88 basic inscriptions and 12 medium-level inscriptions, which are comparable to an 11th-level Genuine Martial Arm. As a weapon used by a Glazed Knight Commander, it is really powerful.”

Zhang Ruochen observed the seven-meter Dragon Bone Spear while gently nodding and speaking.

Whether it was the soldiers of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group or the masters of the Black Market, they were all shocked as they stared at Zhang Ruochen, who was standing on the back of a savage beast.

He had just used one move to kill a superior in the Fifth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm!

“How could he be so powerful?”

Red Wish Emissary blinked her beautiful eyes, which looked like water. Even she felt that there was no doubt Zhang Ruochen would die today. She did not expect that Zhang Ruochen could abruptly burst out such an incredible force and kill a Glazed Knight Commander.

Even though he was in the Black Market, the Glazed Knight Commander had a very high status and enjoyed a position that was only weaker than Seven Kills Emissary.

How could a warrior in the Heaven Realm kill a Glazed Knight Commander?

Nie Honglou also had some doubts and could not understand why Zhang Ruochen suddenly became so strong.

If Zhang Ruochen already had such a powerful force, why did he ask the Silver Sky Mercenary Group to help him get rid of Blood Spirit Queen?

Di Yi's eyes got sharp as he seemingly knew something and said, "It's the Sarira. "Superiors have left their own strength in the Sarira. Zhang Ruochen only needs to unlock the seal, then he could get that power. We do not need to be panic about a power that can't last long. Soon, Zhang Ruochen will return back to his normal cultivation."

Zhang Ruochen took a look at Di Yi and said, "You are indeed the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall. You really have a unique insight. Can you guess how long that power will last for me?"

Di Yi curved his mouth and said, "No more than one hour."

Although a smile was still hung on Zhang Ruochen's face, he had to admire Di Yi for being able to see the truth.

Zhang Ruochen said, "One hour is enough. Di Yi, you must know that this is the 31st city. Superiors in the city will find the abnormalities of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group at any time. Once a Half-Saint makes an attack, I believe that your people can't leave safely."

Blue Emissary stood in the clock, side by side with Blood Spirit Queen. He shouted coldly and said, "Zhang Ruochen, you are too pretentious. Even if you borrow the power of the Sarira, you can't be too strong. I'll fight with you!"

"Count me in."

Blood Spirit Queen showed a cruel smile and stepped out at a faster speed than Blue Emissary.

She stretched out her sharp claws and hit Zhang Ruochen's heart.

Chapter 448 - Killing Blood Spirit Queen

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Blood Spirit Queen's fingers were extremely sharp. They were like five iron hooks cast by magic irons. There were streaks of Spiritual Blood flowing between her fingers.

Her claws were imbued with a strong killing force before they hit Zhang Ruochen's body. They penetrated his Celestial Bodyshield and left five holes on his robe.

He immediately grabbed her wrist and mobilized his Genuine Qi, injecting it into his Hand Meridians. He twisted his arm and threw Blood Spirit Queen, sending her flying.

Simultaneously, he struck his palm upward.

“Dragon and Elephant Return to Earth.”

With a banging sound, his palm hit Blood Spirit Queen and threw her in the air.

After falling to the ground, she staggered and took 17 steps backward as she resolved the palm power.

However, she was still hurt badly. Drops of blood dripped from her chest and soaked her clothes.

There were many bloody cracks around the palm print, making her body seem fragmented.

She immediately grabbed a mercenary warrior and drained his blood. The blood that entered her throat was like nutrient to her and flew toward her wounds.

Her wound began healing at a speed visible to the naked eye. Very soon, she had recovered.

“Zhang Ruochen becomes terribly powerful with the help of the Sarira. He nearly killed me with one palm just now,” she thought.

She looked into the distance and spotted Zhang Ruochen fighting with Blue Emissary.

He took a small step forward and swung his sword without using any sword movements. Instead, he made earth-shaking giant waves of Sword Breath.

Sword Breath rushed over and left four bloody sword wounds on Blue Emissary, who had ranked second among the Seven Kills Emissary.

He was injured by the Sword Breath.

Crash!

Zhang Ruochen turned into an illusion and rushed out once again. He used his finger as a sword and held out a golden index finger to attack Blue Emissary’s mid-brows.

Blue Emissary’s expression changed greatly. He immediately placed a giant sword across his body and stretched out his left hand, turning it into a handprint attacking toward the body of the sword.

He wanted to use his palm power and sword force to resist Zhang Ruochen’s Finger Sword.

Bam!

Zhang Ruochen’s fingers struck the sword body, resulting in an instant piercing sound.

Circles of water wave-like Sword Breath fluctuated and spread out in all directions revolving around Zhang Ruochen’s fingertips.

“Pft!”

Blue Emissary spat out a mouthful of blood. The armor on his body burst open. His skin was punctured by the Sword Breath, turning his whole body bloody.

His right hand that had been holding the sword—from the wrist, to the skin of the fingers, the flesh, and the meridians—turned into blood, leaving only bones behind.

The giant sword fell from his hand and pierced the ground. The tip of the sword sank into the ground half a meter deep.

The mercenary warriors were all very excited. Zhang Ruochen's opponent was Blue Emissary of the Black Market Hall of Fame, yet he actually defeated him with only one move and hurt him badly with two moves.

Could Blue Emissary withstand his third move?

He didn't give Blue Emissary the chance to escape. He immediately gathered his Genuine Qi and directed it to his left thumb. He then executed his third move.

“Sun Meridian Ripple.”

He seemed to empty the Spiritual Qi of heaven and earth inside the Langhuan Golden Bell in a flash. The Spiritual Qi turned into a powerful sword path and flew out like burning sun.

The sword waves would soon kill Blue Emissary.

“Zhang Ruochen, how dare you to kill an Emissary!”

Suddenly, Purple Wind Emissary threw himself in front of Blue Emissary and hit the Purple Torch Spear to the ground. A layer of flame rushed out from the ground and formed a purple, circular wall of fire. It fended off the sword waves.

Boom!

The two powers collided and broke out with red and purple lights. The lights sent the nearby warriors flying.

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes. “The martial technique of mid-class of ghost level, Fire of Cold Underground.”

Purple Wind Emissary pulled the spear out of the ground and lay it horizontally. She stood up and said coldly, “Yes. It's the Fire of Cold Underground Essence Qi.”

The Fire of Cold Underground Essence Qi was a kind of martial technique. It required the monk to stay in the

underground all the year round to absorb the cold underground vital essence and assemble them into flames, so the monk could succeed in practicing the martial technique cultivation.

According to legend, the underground vital essence was the Essence Qi of Hell. When the essence Qi was practiced to a certain extent, it could even become the Sacred Hell Fire.

While Zhang Ruochen and Purple Wind Emissary stood facing each other, a piece of Spiritual Blood silently came out from the underground behind the former and turned into Blood Spirit Queen's body.

A cruel smile appeared on Blood Spirit Queen's face. She put her hands together and condensed her body's strength before hitting Zhang Ruochen squarely on the back.

“Zhang Ruochen, watch out for your back.”

When Silvermoon saw the Blood Spirit Queen, she quickly reminded Zhang Ruochen.

Now, only he could help the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

If he was hurt badly from a sneak attack, there would be no saving their group.

She was desperate to stop Blood Spirit Queen but she was unfortunately heavily wounded. She had her hands full just resisting the sound wave attack of the Langhuan Golden Bell.

Everyone thought Blood Spirit Queen would kill Zhang Ruochen but they didn't know that his Spiritual Power was that powerful. He had long noticed that Blood Spirit Queen was behind him.

He separated his legs and applied his bodily movement, instantly dividing his body into three parts.

One figure flew upward, another went downward, while the last turned backward.

They each struck out one move of palm technique.

“Elephant Galloping.”

“Dragon in the Sky.”

“Nine-folds of the Elephant Power.”

The three movements of handprints nearly hit Blood Spirit Queen’s body at the same time. They fell on the top of her head, lower abdomen, and chest and sent her flying.

“I’ve said that we’ve to end our grudges today. Now, everything should be over.”

Zhang Ruochen rushed forward as his feet continued to change positions.

Every time he moved, there would be an extra figure on the ground. In the end, he landed yet another strike on Blood Spirit Queen.

Bang, bang!

In a flash, he struck out 72 palms in succession and left 72 figures on the ground. In the end, all the figures were integrated into one. He retrieved his hands.

A short moment later, Blood Spirit Queen fell from the air. Her feet fell to the ground as she found footing three steps away from him.

Streaks of blood-colored lines like pottery and porcelain appeared on her body. They then burst open and turned into a cloud of blood fog.

“Is everything over?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the cloud of blood fog. He was still on ground, thinking that the life aura of the Blood Spirit Queen hadn’t completely dissipated.

Being a Blood Spirit, she couldn’t be killed so easily.

“Zhang Ruochen, let me help you. Hehe!”

Red Wish Emissary flew over and smiled at him from under her thin layer of veil. She took out a cloth bag filled with runes and placed the cloud of Spiritual Blood inside the bag.

“Refine.”

Red Wish Emissary was very beautiful with her every movement brimming with charm. From the bag, she poured

the cloud of Spiritual Blood into a drug tripod more than 13 centimeters tall.

Sad howling sounds came from inside the drug tripod.

The sound disappeared a moment later.

The Spiritual Blood turned into a glittering thumb-sized red pill.

“Spiritual Blood Pill, refined with the Blood Spirit in the Sixth Change of Fish-dragon Realm. This is definitely a medicine suitable for improving one’s cultivation. Zhang Ruochen, no matter how powerful you are, you’re just fulfilling my dream.”

Red Wish Emissary grinned and picked up the pill with two snow-white fingers. She then swallowed it.

“It’s true that Blood Spirit Pill is rare, but what a pity that it has such massive adverse side effects.”

Zhang Ruochen remained still in his place without trying to snatch the pill. He stood in front of the mercenary warriors, such as Nie Honglou and Silvermoon, protecting them.

Having killed Blood Spirit Queen, he could just leave. But he didn’t do so.

Since he chose to help the group, he would help them to the end.

The main purpose of the Blood Spirit Pill was helping the user to quickly enhance his Spiritual Blood and Martial Soul.

Enhancing one’s Spiritual Blood was actually to enhance his physical quality and quickly improve his martial cultivation.

Of course, the pill could also increase the user’s Martial Soul. However, it could also affect the user’s Martial Soul and produce strong side effects.

Red Wish Emissary was in the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. However, she dared to swallow the pill that was made of the Blood Spirit in the Sixth Change of Fish-dragon Realm. The pill would inevitably have a great effect on her Martial Soul.

Martial Soul was a spirit.

If the Martial Soul was affected, the Heart State in the future would naturally be distorted. It wasn't necessarily a good thing for the practice of the Holy Road.

This was why Zhang Ruochen didn't snatch the pill.

He knew that the masters of the Black Market he was about to face were far more horrifying than the dead Blood Spirit Queen. None of them were opponents to be trifled with.

Chapter 449 - The Detachment of the Dragon Pearl

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“The Blood Spirit Queen is also a top superior; she has a chance of becoming a Half-Saint in the future. I’m afraid she isn’t expecting to die in the hands of a warrior in the Heaven Realm such as you.”

Di Yi stood outside of the Langhuan Golden Bell. He praised and nodded his head as if he admired Zhang Ruochen.

Those who did not know the truth would actually think that he and Zhang Ruochen had an intimate friendship.

“The path of cultivation is about going forward step by step,” the Purple Wind Emissary said. “We can only reach the Holy Road if we are standing on solid ground. Even though Zhang Ruochen has help from the Sarira, it is an external force. There is a huge difference between us in terms of cultivation. If you give the order, young master, I will chop his head off.”

Di Yi raised his arm and gently waved it. He said, “Five of the Seven Kills Emissaries of the Black Market Excellence Hall have arrived. We also have two Holy Weapons, Roaring Flame Hammer and the Langhuan Golden Bell. If we want to kill him, it won’t be difficult. But I still want to give him another chance.”

He continued, “Zhang Ruchen, as long as you take the initiative to sacrifice your Martial Soul and join the Black Market, I can assure you that your future position among the

younger generation of the Black Market will be second only to me.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “You don’t give up, do you? You still want to make me your shadow?”

Di Yi did not deny his intention. He smiled. “Originally, the person I took fancy to was Bu Qianfan. But after seeing you, I realized that you are more suitable to become my demonic shadow. If you were my shadow, my strength would double.”

Di Yi was practicing the Picture of Omen’s Congential Magic Qi in the Omen Lithograph. Before he reached the Fish-dragon Realm, he had to find a genius who was as talented as him and integrate their shadows into one.

If he succeeded, his fighting power could increase several times over.

Di Yi’s current strength was already invincible among those in the same realm. Even using all his means Zhang Ruochen had only won by a narrow margin.

If he improved his strength, by the time he became a Saint, he would be able to deal with a group of Saints all by himself.

It was not easy to practice into a demonic shadow. Di Yi needed to find a Genius who could keep up with his practicing speed.

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen was the best choice.

Di Yi could not bear to kill Zhang Ruochen unless he really had to.

Di Yi said, “You are Buddha Emperor’s descendant. You should understand that everything in heaven and on earth has karma. You dug out my Demon’s Heart, I will refine you into a demonic shadow. It’s tit-for-tat. Don’t you think it’s reasonable?”

“People in the Black Market are reasonable?” Zhang Ruochen questioned.

Di Yi smiled. “The Black Market is open to business with everyone. It is not only reasonable, it also plays by the rules

and rituals. We will certainly handle a traitor like Silvermoon harshly.”

He winked at the Purple Wind Emissary.

He understood what he meant. She grabbed her Purple Torch Spear and rushed out. He displayed a Heaven-earth Splitting Spear movement and attacked Silvermoon.

The spear struck out, driven by Genuine Qi. Suddenly, everything changed.

The Four Images of heaven and earth, wind, rain and thunder all began to attack. They flew out from the tip of the purple spear with tremendous momentum.

The Heaven-earth Splitting Spear was a mid-class Ghost Level martial technique, but it was completely beyond the scope of martial technique. To ordinary warriors, it was comparable to a god’s technique.

In fact, any Ghost Level martial technique was beyond the imagination of the common people.

Let alone the Ghost Level mid-class martial technique.

The Purple Wind Emissary broke through Silvermoon’s defense and pierced her in the abdomen, wounding her severely.

If the Purple Wind Emissary shot her again she would completely lose her fighting strength. That is, if she didn’t die.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the Dragon Bone Spear, he had seized from the Glazed Knight Commander. He activated the Divine Dragon Strength of the Dragon Pearl and swung the spear to stop the Purple Wind Emissary.

In the distance, Di Yi smiled. He seemed to be expecting that Zhang Ruochen would come to help Silvermoon.

“You should also take a shot!” Di Yi said.

The Blue Emissary, the Orange Star Emissary, and the Glazed Knight Commander attacked Silvermoon from three directions at the same time.

Zhang Ruochen saw them from the corner of his eye. He instantly understood what Di Yi was trying to do.

At first, Di Yi had used the warriors from the Silver Sky Mercenary Group to contain Silvermoon. She had been attempting to withstand the Langhuan Golden Bell sound wave when the Purple Wind Emissary hurt her.

Now, Di Yi was using Silvermoon to contain Zhang Ruochen in the same manner.

He was using the Open Conspiracy.

The so-called Open Conspiracy meant that Zhang Ruochen knew Di Yi had set a trap for him, but he had to make the jump.

It was brilliant.

Zhang Ruochen immediately withdrew and retreated. He swung the Dragon Bone Spear. It hit the Orange Star Emissary and sent her flying.

CLINK!

The Orange Star Emissary crashed into the Golden Bell's light wall, letting out a loud noise like metal colliding. The Golden Bell shook and formed into a large fluctuation of energy.

The Orange Star Emissary slid down. She knelt on the ground and spat out a mouthful blood. Her face was extremely pale. It was apparent that she had suffered severe internal injuries.

She had an amulet treasure that helped her to block most attacks. Otherwise, she would have been more seriously injured.

CRASH!

Just as Zhang Ruochen sent the Orange Star Emissary flying, the loud sound of thunder came from behind him.

The Purple Wind Emissary applied the Heaven-earth Splitting Spear again. The tip of his spear stabbed Zhang Ruochen in the center of his back. It would have penetrated his body if it had been just two centimeters deeper.

Di Yi nodded his head. He was excited but felt an ounce of regret at the same time.

He was excited that Zhang Ruochen had finally walked into his trap and would die under the Purple Wind Emissary's spear.

He felt remorse that such a great demonic shadow candidate was going to die here.

Suddenly, his expression changed. A ball of golden light had flown out from Zhang Ruochen's back.

SWOOSH!

The golden Dragon Pearl flew out from Zhang Ruochen and hit the Purple Wind Emissary. It pierced her, leaving a huge blood hole.

The Dragon Pearl had been so fast that the Purple Wind Emissary did not have time to activate her amulet treasure.

“How could this happen? My cultivation is at the Ninth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm... I have practiced into a Glazed Treasured Body...”

The Purple Wind Emissary retreated seven steps and knelt on the ground. He looked at the blood hole incredulously. A harsh pain spread out from the wound, causing his face to distort in agony.

Zhang Ruochen turned around. The Dragon Pearl flew back and floated between his hands.

Zhang Ruochen was excited. He looked at the Dragon Pearl in surprise. He seemed to be talking to himself. “The Dragon pearl can actually fly out from my body and the power it gives out is even stronger than Holy Weapons!”

The Dragon Pearl suspended in his heart and had strong power to protect him.

It could actually turn into an aggressive Holy Weapon and penetrate a Glazed Treasured Body.

Who could defeat a Half-Saint?

Of course, Zhang Ruochen was also very clear that the reason he had been able to evoke the Dragon Pearl out was that he relied on the power of the Sarira.

If he lost the Sarira, with his current cultivation of the Medium State of the Heaven Realm, he could never bring the Dragon Pearl out of his body.

Unless, his cultivation reached the Fish-dragon Realm.

“I must work hard to break through to the Fish-dragon Realm as soon as possible. Once I succeed, I can truly use the power of the Dragon Pearl.”

SWOOSH!

He struck out the Dragon Pearl once again and sent the Blue Emissary and the Glazed Knight Commander flying at the same time. However, they all their opened amulet treasures in advance. They were seriously injured and fell into a pool of blood, but they did not die.

“Zhang Ruochen can actually control the Dragon Pearl of the Golden Dragon. Everyone, leave quickly!”

The Red Wish Emissary had been refining a Blood Spirit Pill, but when she saw how powerful Zhang Ruochen was, she quickly rushed out.

Zhang Ruochen chased after her. When she exited the light screen, he took advantage of the opportunity and leapt out.

Outside, he looked up and saw a small golden bell suspended in mid-air.

It was the true body of the Langhuan Golden Bell.

Zhang Ruochen was sure that there was Half-Saint from the Black Market hiding in the dark. He knew that the only way to escape was to shoot the Langhuan Golden Bell down.

His Spiritual Power could already feel the Half-Saint’s aura.

“Shatter for me!”

Zhang Ruochen immediately struck out the Dragon Pearl and aimed toward the Langhuan Golden Bell.

Chapter 450 - Return

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Dragon Pearl soared up and emitted a bright light, like a small golden sun. It had such amazing heat that it seemed as if it could smelt the earth.

As long as the Dragon Pearl could knock down the Langhuan Golden Bell, this block of the forbidden city would open.

Then, the superiors in the 31st city could naturally discover that the Black Market monks were attacking the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

Especially the imperial court.

The imperial court of the First Central Empire abhorred the Black Market. Once it was discovered that the Black Market monks appeared in the city, it would be the first to send a large army from the Ministry of War to destroy them.

Seeing that the Dragon Pearl would certainly collide with the Langhuan Golden Bell, suddenly, a thin, old man wearing a gray robe flew out above the Dragon Pearl.

The Gray Gowned Elder seemed to emerge out of thin air. It was extremely strange. He stepped into the void space and rushed toward the Dragon Pearl.

A purple crescent mark appeared on his glabella.

“Bam!”

A sacred power rushed out of the crescent mark, then turned into a beam of light. The Dragon Pearl was knocked back upside down, then it hit the ground and made a loud noise.

The ground suddenly shook and a giant hole appeared.

The golden flame melted the mudstone around the giant hole and turned it into a black mirror.

“Someone can shoot down the Dragon Pearl!”

The faces of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group warriors all changed as they could feel the strength of that power.

The Gray Gowned Elder stopped and hung in the void space. His body exuded an imposing momentum that condensed into substantial waves and fell from the sky.

All the warriors in the Black Market and the Silver Sky Mercenary Group were suppressed to the ground.

Only a handful of people, such as Di Yi, Purple Wind Emissary, and Silvermoon, could stand still.

Zhang Ruochen immediately called back the Dragon Pearl and lifted it to the top of his head. He then continued to infuse Genuine Qi into it and borrow the power of the Dragon Pearl, and finally managed to resist the momentum of that old man.

“Devil Yuanying.”

Zhang Ruochen’s face changed as he recognized the Gray Gowned Elder standing in mid-air. He was a Half-Saint of the Black Market, Yuanying, who had saved Di Yi at the Tongming River.

A Half-Saint of the Black Market finally appeared!

Di Yi’s brows wrinkled as he cupped a fist in his palm and bowed. “Elder Yuanying.”

“Di Yi, you make me very disappointed, you have to deal with the Silver Sky Mercenary Group, but unexpectedly, you’re losing.” Devil Yuanying’s voice was a bit harsh.

Although Di Yi was a young master and his status was lofty, he only had a cultivation in the Heaven Realm. In front of a Half-Saint, he could only be regarded as a junior.

This action against Silvermoon was originally a Black Market experience for Di Yi and Seven Kills Emissary. Although Devil Yuanying also walked with them, he could only do something when they were in danger.

Di Yi did not explain it too much and said, “Elder, please give me another 15 minutes, I will defeat Zhang Ruochen and Silvermoon.”

“There is no time! The superiors from the Ministry of War have already arrived. We should go!”

Devil Yuanying coldly stared at Zhang Ruochen and Silvermoon for a brief moment and said, “Today, you are lucky.”

“Pfft!”

His sleeves waved and suddenly, a cold hurricane blowing from the east side of the sky flew at Zhang Ruochen and the warriors of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

“Pffff!”

Some warriors whose martial cultivations were low were torn to pieces by the hurricane and turned into bloody bones.

Zhang Ruochen only felt a whirlwind. When he fell to the ground again, the Black Market monks had disappeared. The ground was full of the remnants of corpses.

There were only 17 remaining warriors of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

The splendid buildings built by the Silver Sky Mercenary Group had all become ruins. Those mercenary soldiers were dead or injured, only 17 powerful warriors survived. It was a heavy loss.

Of course, the Silver Sky Mercenary Group had a lot of mercenary warriors to perform the tasks outside. The warriors they lost today were almost equal to 30% of the fighting power of the entire Mercenary Group.

“They’ve run away!”

Zhang Ruochen squeezed his fingers and thought with some regret that if he could have killed one or two Emissaries, it would really hurt the Black Market.

Training an Emissary cost more resources than raising a hundred Glazed Knights.

“I just clearly saw the appearance of a Half-Saint of the Black Market. How did he suddenly disappear?” Tu Ling carried a sword in the shape of a spiritual snake and took a deep breath. Her legs were still shaking.

Even a master of the Heaven Board such as her was still shivering and felt terrified in front of a Half-Saint.

“It must be that the Half-Saint of the 31st city had detected the change of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group and rushed over. Therefore, Devil Yuanying had to take the Black Market and immediately flee,” Zhang Ruochen surmised.

Zhang Ruochen’s glabella raised a Skyeeye and looked at the sky above his head.

He saw two strands of the Half-Saint’s aura turn into two light columns. They fought and quickly rushed out of the 31st city and were rapidly going away.

The 31st city was a city of mercenaries. Not only did it have many masters, but it was also full of conflicts and killings. It was normal for the imperial court to send a Half-Saint to manage the city.

What was unknown was if the Half-Saint could contain Devil Yuanying.

“Boom!”

Before long, a group of sergeants dressed in heavy black armor, riding tall savage beasts, rushed to the outside of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group and surrounded all the streets and alleys.

At the same time, a general dressed in a red cloak rode a brute elephant, which was a fourth-level savage beast, and entered the martial-arts arena of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group to communicate with Silvermoon.

“Commander of the Silvermoon Group, city governor, let me tell you Devil Yuanying has escaped with the masters of the Black Market. I now lead the City Guard and began to investigate the spies of the Black Market around the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.”

Hearing this sentence, Zhang Ruochen sighed.

Devil Yuanying and Di Yi still fled.

Under the blessing of the Sarira, Zhang Ruochen gained formidable power within a short time. However, when he collected the Sarira, a sense of weakness emanated from his bone marrow.

That was the side effect of using the Sarira.

Zhang Ruochen took the Dragon Pearl back in his body and no longer listened to the conversation between Silvermoon and the general. He sat on the ground and began to run his exercises to adjust his health.

As Genuine Qi flowed through his body, Zhang Ruochen gradually resolved the feeling of weakness.

When Zhang Ruochen reopened his eyes, the city guard of the 31st city had already withdrawn. They had taken away a large number of spies who were arranged around the Silver Sky Mercenary Group by the Black Market.

Di Yi dared to personally come to the 31st city to deal with the Silver Sky Mercenary Group. Of course, it had been arranged a long time ago.

Every spy was one of his chess pieces.

The City Guard pulled these spies out, which also caused a loss for the Black Market. In the future, the control of the Black Market in the 31st city would drop by a large margin.

“Zhang Ruochen, thank you for helping. Without you, the Silver Sky Mercenary Group would be doomed. In the future, if you need anything, just send word to the Silver Sky Mercenary Group, and even if it is very difficult, I will definitely come to help.”

Silvermoon went to the opposite side of Zhang Ruochen, lowered her proud head, held her fist in her palm and bowed her head to Zhang Ruochen.

Her wound in the lower abdomen had completely healed, and no scars were left on her white skin.

Of course, although trauma was invisible, internal injuries did not recover in a short moment.

Even though she had practiced the Glazed Treasured Body, it would take at least three days to return to her peak. Of course, it was precisely because she had practiced the Glazed Treasured Body that she was able to suffer severe injuries and survive.

If it were a different person, perhaps he would have already died.

Zhang Ruochen quickly said, “Commander Silvermoon, you are welcome. Di Yi is not only your enemy but also my enemy. In the future, we’ll still have many opportunities for cooperation.”

This time, although he used the first-level seal of the Sarira, and also eliminated Blood Spirit Queen, additionally, he also became acquainted with such a superior as Silvermoon.

In general, the gains outweighed the losses.

Seven Kills Emissary and the Glazed Knights were at Di Yi’s side, but there were also several friends beside Zhang Ruochen. However, few people could contend with Seven Kills Emissary.

After getting this ally, Silvermoon, in the future, Zhang Ruochen would no longer be so lonely and struggle to fight against Di Yi.

Silvermoon said, “This time, because you caused it, Di Yi’s action failed. He certainly will not give up on this and will also send masters to deal with you. Well! In the next half month, Nie Honglou will protect you until you formally enter Saint Academy and become a Saint.”

In half a month, Zhang Ruochen could formally enter Saint Academy to practice. Even if the Black Market was stronger, he would not dare to go to Saint Academy to kill him.

Nie Honglou was the deputy commander of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group. He was also a superior in the Sixth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm. He alone could fight with two

Glazed Knight Commanders, which proved his powerful strength.

With his protection, as long as they did not encounter masters as powerful as Purple Wind Emissary and Silvermoon, Zhang Ruochen would not be in any danger.

Zhang Ruochen not only saved Silvermoon, but also saved Nie Honglou. Nie Honglou was very grateful to Zhang Ruochen. He did not have any objections when he heard the arrangement of Silvermoon.

After a night of rest, Zhang Ruochen and Nie Honglou healed their injuries.

The next morning, they walked out of the 31st city and returned to the Seventh District.

Immediately upon returning to the Seventh District, Zhang Ruochen saw the Foreign Minister Elder in the Sword Sanctum, Lu Youcai.

Lu Youcai was fat and wore a gorgeous black golden armor that was bulging with his round belly. He squinted his eyes and had been waiting in Courier Station of the Martial Market.

He sat on a jade Taishi chair and saw Zhang Ruochen walk in. He immediately stood up and laughed. "Brother Zhang, there is already information on what you asked to do!"

"So fast!" Zhang Ruochen's face glowed.

Lu Youcai looked at Nie Honglou, who was standing next to Zhang Ruochen, and revealed a hint of a strange look. "I'm sure this person is the mercenary master hired by Brother Zhang in the 31st city, the deputy commander of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group."

"I'm Nie Honglou," he said.

Lu Youcai nodded and no longer looked at Nie Honglou. He said, "Yesterday, Brother Zhang asked me to help you buy a house in the Seventh District. Today, somebody wants to transfer a house where a Half-Saint had lived. The price is 100 million Spiritual Crystals. Brother Zhang, do you want to see

it? The owner of the Half-Saint former residence is a predecessor, and she also wants to meet you.”

Chapter 451 - Hearing the Lan You Song after 800 years

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

A hundred million pieces of Spiritual Crystals seemed to be a sky-high price, and it was enough to scare away many Monks in the Fish-dragon Realm.

However, in Zhang Ruochen's opinion, it was acceptable. The most important thing was that it was the mansion where the Half-Saint used to live. He must've had left behind some powerful defense strategy.

How important was the defense strategy?

When the Silver Sky Mercenary Group was destroyed, its importance was set in stone.

If the defense strategy of the Silver Sky Mercenary Group was stronger and more powerful, how could the Monks of the Black Market be able to break in?

Sometimes, setting up a powerful defense strategy cost more than 100 million pieces of Spiritual Crystals.

Moreover, the grass, trees, houses, posts, and soil of a place where the Half-Saint had lived for a long time would sanctify to a certain degree. Even drinking the spring water would prolong the life of an ordinary people.

The so-called "Even the dog swaggers when its master wins favor," held some truth.

Therefore, the former residence of the Half-Saint was definitely a sanctum that everyone wanted. It could only be bought at the Auction House.

Lu Youcai was able to buy the mansion of the Half-Saint at the price of 100 million pieces of the Spiritual crystals. Maybe the other party sold it at a low price since he was part of the Sword Sanctum.

“Let’s go, take me to have a look,” Zhang Ruochen said eagerly.

Lu Youcai immediately took a carriage with Zhang Ruochen. They went out of the Courier Station of Martial Market, and walked toward the Avenue of Kings not far from the Saint Academy.

While the carriage moved forward, Lu Youcai said, “The street of the Avenue of King has a total length of 34,000 meters. On the either side of the street, there are a total of 432 mansions. The owners of the mansions are either Half-Saints or the senior personnel of the powerful Saint family. Don’t even mention the Black Market heretics, not even the disciples of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect heresy would dare step into the Avenue of Kings.”

Since Lu Youcai was a presbyter of the Sword Sanctum who was in charge of the foreign affairs, he immediately found out that Zhang Ruochen was in danger when he was with the Silver Sky Mercenary Group.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and slowly took a deep breath. He showed an exhilarating expression and said, “What a thick Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. The street of the Avenue of Kings is indeed very unique, and it is really a Holy Land for practicing.”

Lu Youcai said with a smile, “Brother Zhang, have you ever heard that there is a holy meridian in the Saint Academy?”

“Of course.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “It was said that there is a Saint Mountain in the depths of the Saint Academy. At the bottom of the Saint Mountain lies a holy meridian that has been deposited for a hundred million years. It can release the Holy Qi.”

“If the warriors breathe the Holy Qi and practice their skills, practicing for one year would equal to ten years of hard work. It is a pity that only the Half-Saint in the Saint Academy can open up an abode of fairies and immortals in the holy mountains. The ordinary Saint has no such treatment.”

The Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi was the foundation of all cultivation.

When the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi was condensed to a certain degree, it would become a Spiritual Vein full of the Spiritual Qi.

The Spiritual Vein had been deposited under the ground for millions of years and was condensed by the pressure of the earth. When it was impacted by some special forces, it would turn into the holy meridian.

The holy meridian could transform the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi into the Holy Qi.

In the depths of the Saint Academy, there was such a holy meridian that had a history of more than 100 million years.

Lu Youcai said with a smile, “Hehe! A branch of the holy meridian of the Saint Academy flows out from the Saint Academy, and passes through the underground floor of the street of the Avenue of Kings. Although there is no Holy Qi at the bottom of the street of the Avenue of Kings, there is very thick Spiritual Qi.”

“So many of the powerful Saint families let their outstanding disciples live in the residences on the street of the Avenue of Kings. Many people are fighting over such a sanctum.”

Zhang Ruochen was slightly interested. He asked curiously, “In that case, why does the owner of the Half-Saint mansion sell it at such a low price? A mansion like this would be sold for at least 500 million pieces of Spiritual Crystals at the Auction House.”

Lu Youcai showed a strange smile and said, “Ask the owner of the Half-Saint mansion yourself when you meet her. You will know then.”

Zhang Ruchen always felt that there were something more in Lu Youcai's words. Things might not be so simple. He wondered what kind of person the owner of the Half-Saint mansion was.

The street of the Avenue of Kings was very busy and it was full of people and carriages. There were countless warriors who travelled through the road.

The carriage stopped outside a magnificent vermilion mansion. Stone Kyilins were standing on both sides of the gate.

The Kyilins were not made of stone, but they were the real Kylin Stone Beasts. They were alive and savage beasts of the fourth level of the superior class.

The body of the Kylin Stone Beasts was seven meters tall. Their bodies were as hard as iron. The kylin blood flowed in their body. They were the original inhabitant of the Cloud-stone Primitive World.

The army of the First Central Empire broke through the Cloud-stone Primitive World and enslaved a large number of Stone Beasts. They brought them to the Kunlun's Field and sold them at high prices for guarding mansions.

Two of them opened their eyes and bent their forefeet. They knelt on the ground and saluted to Lu Youcai, Zhang Ruchen, and Nie Honglou. They spoke in human language, "Welcome, distinguished guests."

Lu Youcai smile and said, "Brother Zhang, the two Kyilins Stone Beasts are at the fourth level of the superior class and are capable to burst out an attack comparable to the warriors in the Final State of the Heaven Realm. In the Martial Market, they at least cost 2000,000 pieces of Spiritual Crystals to buy one. They are one of the free gifts for purchasing the mansions."

Nie Honglou was quite impressed. He said, "So as long as we buy this mansion, Zhang Ruchen will be the owner of these two beasts from now on?"

"Of course. Mr. Nie, are you also interested in buying the Former Residence of the Half-Saint?" Lu Youcai asked.

Nie Honglou shook his head and said, "I can't afford it."

Although Nie Honglou was a superior in the Sixth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, and his strength was profound, he had used all his money to purchase the practicing resources, so he didn't have much left.

Let alone 100 million pieces of Spiritual Crystals, even 10 million was not a feasible amount for him at that moment.

Although he could not afford it, he knew clearly about the growing potential of the Kylin Stone Beast.

If they were given a lot of kylin blood, they could even grow into fifth level savage beasts.

A fifth level savage beast was comparable to a Monk in the Fish-dragon Realm, and the price could exceed 10 million pieces of Spiritual Crystals.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the two Kylin Stone Beasts. He nodded his head and continued to follow Lu Youcai and walked into the gates of the mansion.

When he just entered the gate, a group of beautiful maids came out to meet him. All of them were dressed in clean white clothes. They didn't look like servants at all. Instead, they were like rich girls from royal families. Two of them had reached the Earth Realm.

"Welcome, distinguished guests."

The maids bowed. They were especially respectful to Zhang Ruochen.

It was because that Zhang Ruochen might be their master in the future.

"Rise! All of you." Lu Youcai said with a smile.

This mansion was very large. It not only had an artificial mountain that was several hundred meters tall, but also small lakes, a peach forest, a bamboo forest, and a pine forest. The further you walked inside, the more quiet and peaceful it got.

Zhang Ruochen paused outside the Orchid Valley and pointed to a certain direction in the void space with his five fingers.

SWOOSH!

Suddenly, a layer of white light screen appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen's fingers.

One could see with one's naked eyes that streaks of Inscription of Array flowed on the light screen.

Zhang Ruochen deliberately activated the array in the mansion. He wanted to test the intensity of the array.

“What a powerful defense array. It should be a sixth level array. Moreover, there is Saint Power left by Half-Saint, which is enough to fend off the full attack of the Half-Saint.”

Zhang Ruochen was amazed. He said, “The Defensive Array is worth more than 100 million pieces of Spiritual Crystals. Who is exactly the owner of this mansion? How can he be willing to sell it at a low price as 100 million pieces of Spiritual Crystals?”

When Zhang Ruochen was puzzled, a melodious flute sound came from the bamboo forest in the distance.

The flute sound was beautiful. It was like the sound of nature coming from above the Nine Heavens.

PHHF!

The breeze stirred the bamboo leaves, which letting out unique rhythmic sound. It echoed each other with the flute sound.

Hearing this flute sound, Zhang Ruochen immediately froze and stopped breathing. He seemed to be petrified.

His eyelids kept twitching. Many thoughts emerged in his mind, “The Lan You Song? But how?”

At this moment, a beautiful girl's face appeared in Zhang Ruochen's mind.

That was his cousin, Kong Lanyou.

800 years ago.

“Cousin, why do you always only practice your sword skill every day? Can you play with me?”

A young girl with a pair of beautiful peacock wings giggled. She held the dress with one hand and crouched down by the creek. She used another hand to scoop up the water and splash it on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen took back his sword and shook his head. He said, "Lanyou, you are so playful and don't work hard, how will you lead the half-peacock human to the Prosperity Avenue?"

Kong Lanyou stuck out of her tongue and put her hands on her hips. She laughed, "You are here and you can protect me! Please don't practice the sword anymore and play with me for a while. Just for a few minutes, okay?"

"No, I have a bet with sister Chi Yao, I must succeed in practicing the Nine Yang Sword earlier than she does," Zhang Ruochen said seriously.

"Huh, you only think of your sister Chi Yao all the time and never think about me. I don't like you anymore! Woo woo!"

Kong Lanyou sat on the floor and was very upset. She rubbed her eyes with both hands and began to cry.

Zhang Ruochen sighed and looked at a green bamboo that was not far away. He swung the sword and two streaks of sword Qi flew out. They chopped the green bamboo into three sections.

He grabbed one of the bamboo tubes and held it in his hand. He knocked it on Kong Lanxuan's head and said, "Lanyou, stop. I'll play a song for you, okay?"

"Hee hee, I lied to you, I wasn't crying. What kind of song will you play for me?"

Kong Lanyou laughed and made a funny face. She immediately grabbed Zhang Ruochen by his arm and stayed close to him. She opened her round eyes and asked curiously.

Zhang Ruochen also smiled and put the bamboo tube on his lips. He said, "I wrote this Lan You Song especially for you."

"Wow! Cousin, you know how to play a vertical flute?" Kong Lanyou was surprised.

“Nonsense, of course, I do. We even take the same music class... It’s just that you fall asleep every time in class,” Zhang Ruochen said.

...

After a long while, Zhang Ruochen shook his head and woke himself up from his memories. He was full of emotion as if he just had a dream.

He never thought that after 800 years he could still hear the Lan You Song.

Who on earth could it be?

Chapter 452 - Kong Lanyou

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen was unaware that Lu Youcai had not bought the Half-Saint mansion. In fact, it was originally an estate of the Sword Sanctum.

Entering the bamboo forest, he walked along a quiet stone path following the direction of the flute.

Suddenly, it stopped.

PHHF!

There was now only the sound of water flowing from the creek and bamboo leaves rustling in the wind.

Moments later, the melodious voice of a woman came from the Bamboo Pavilion next to the brookside. “Deep in the woods, I stay alone. I have only the moon for company.”

The voice was familiar but difficult to place.

Zhang Ruochen gazed towards the Bamboo Pavilion. He saw a woman with white hair sitting with her back to him.

Her hair was white as snow.

She held a yellowed bamboo flute in her hand and said again, “Zhang Ruochen, how do you know this poem?”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes widened. His heart began to beat hard in his chest and there was a roaring of thunder in his ears.

This time, he had heard it clearly!

It was indeed her voice.

After eight hundred years.

Eight hundred years later, and they actually had the opportunity to meet once again. The playful young girl he once knew was now crowned in silvery hair.

CLIP-CLOP!

Zhang Ruochen tried to conceal his feelings. With heavy footsteps, he took one step at a time into the Bamboo Pavilion until he stood opposite Kong Lanyou.

Kong Lanyou concealed her aura to the extreme; no one could feel the power fluctuations around her body. She seemed like an ordinary woman, sitting there elegantly. She shifted her beautiful eyes and stared at Zhang Ruochen.

It was just like in the scroll. The woman in the scroll looked like a goddess above the Nine Heavens. She was graceful, calm, quiet and otherworldly.

Her face had not change much in 800 years. Her fair white skin was more delicate than a baby's. She had bright red lips and long eyelashes.

Her eyes were dark and resembled jade, giving an unpredictable feeling. They were extremely bright and seemed to be able to see through Zhang Ruochen's soul.

Although her face was not old, her long green hair had faded to white, symbolizing the passing of time.

It was wrong. Such beauty with white hair.

Zhang Ruochen was very agitated, but he had to keep calm and restrain his emotions. He tried to look away from her as he was afraid she would see through him.

"How could it be her?"

Zhang Ruochen did not dare to unite with her. He remembered 800 years ago, the last time he saw her, the moment before he was killed by Chi Yao.

How could it be a coincidence?

Had his death been planned by Chi Yao and Kong Lanyou?

He had always trusted Kong Lanyou, just as he had trusted Chi Yao. And yet, he had died under Chi Yao's sword.

Could he still trust Kong Lanyou?

He stared at the ground and cupped his hands, bowing. He said with a trembling voice, “Predecessor, I am Zhang Ruochen.”

Once upon a time, Kong Lanyou had seen him as a role model. She had followed him around, pestering him like a small tail that could not be thrown off.

But now, Zhang Ruochen did not dare to identify on the same level. He could only address himself as a junior.

Kong Lanyou carefully analyzed him. She did not ignore his small movements or glances.

After a long while, she said, “Zhang Ruochen, you haven’t answered my question. How do you know that poem?”

He took a deep breath and hid all his emotions. He said, “Predecessor, are you interrogating me?”

Kong Lanyou put down the flute in her hands, and her voice was colder. “You have never seen me before. How do you know that I am a predecessor? What if I am your peer?”

Zhang Ruochen said calmly, “Even though my cultivation is lacking and can’t see through your cultivation, I have seen some aspects of the world and know that you are by no means an ordinary person. Besides, one’s eyes cannot conceal secrets. Your eyes are full of knowledge and you have experienced the vicissitudes of the world.”

Kong Lanyou did not blink. She stared intensely into Zhang Ruochen’s eyes, attempting to see through him.

After a moment, she said, “When I mention the poem, a normal person would certainly ask me how I know it. However, you were not surprised at all and questioned me instead. Why is that?”

Zhang Ruochen was screaming internally.

The once playful little girl had become so shrewd. He had said just one sentence and she had discovered all its flaws.

Zhang Ruochen did not show his panic and put on a doubtful look instead. “When I was in the Sword Sanctum, I would say

this poem. Aren't you from the Sword Sanctum?"

Kong Lanyou frowned. She hit the cotton. Zhang Ruochen dodged all her strength.

"Does he really think I am from the Sword Sanctum, or is he deliberately pretending to think so?"

Confused, she sat back. She asked for the third time, "How do you know that poem?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "This is a secret. Please forgive me but I cannot tell you."

"Must I force you?"

Kong Lanyou showed a firm expression in her eyes.

An invisible momentum erupted from her body and raced toward Zhang Ruochen, like a tsunami.

She controlled the power with great skill. However, while strong, the momentum was within the boundary of Zhang Ruochen's tolerance.

Zhang Ruochen was not surprised, "Even if you attempt to force me, it won't work."

"Is that right?"

Kong Lanyou smiled and lifted one of her slender white arms. Suddenly, the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi turned into Spiritual Qi streams and gathered toward her palms. It condensed into a cyclone.

The Qi-spinning Palm, a simple Human Stage Inferior Class martial technique, became incredibly unpredictable under her regulation. It seemed to be even more powerful than a Ghost Level martial technique.

"Zhang Ruochen is a guest of our Silver Sky Mercenary Group. If you hurt him, don't blame me if I harm you."

Nie Honglou was responsible for Zhang Ruochen's safety. He certainly would not stand by. He immediately took a step forward and flew up. He stretched his hands like a giant bird spreading its wings.

Blaze came out of his hands. His arms swung in a circle and condensed a huge ball of fire, attacking Kong Lanyou.

Kong Lanyou hummed and gently waved her arms.

The spherical cyclone in her hand flew out, sending Nie Honglou and his fireball flying.

With a bang, the fireball disintegrated, leaving only streaks of smoke.

Nie Honglou landed 33 meters away. His body landed on the ground lightly, like a bamboo leaf.

Nie Honglou touched his chest to find out if he had suffered any injuries. He was okay.

This caused him to be even more fearful.

He was in the Sixth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. A superior like Silvermoon could defeat him, it made little sense to leave him unharmed like this.

It was obvious that this white-haired woman's cultivation was above Silvermoon, and her control of her power was exquisite.

Was she a Half-Saint?

Nie Honglou was shocked. He did not dare to strike out again.

If the other side became hostile, Zhang Ruochen and he would be turned to flying ash with one palm.

Zhang Ruochen was still very calm. He spared a glance at Kong Lanyou. "Even if you try to force me, it will be no use. Everyone has their secrets, don't they?"

"I won't force you."

Kong Lanyou retracted her momentum. "To be honest, I am quite curious about you and have investigated you. Before the age of 16, you were weak and sickly. You couldn't even open up the Sacred Mark."

"Then, when you got older, you opened up the Sacred Mark. And in a short period of three or four years, you grew from a sick young boy who stayed in bed all the time to a young king

who was well known in the Eastern Region. What did you experience when you turned 16?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “Everyone is saying that I became the Golden Dragon’s disciple and Buddha Emperor’s descendant. My cultivation advanced rapidly, and I became an elite man.”

“I do not believe that.”

Kong Lanyou shook her head. “According to the information that I have, you were in the Completion of the Earth Realm when you got the Dragon Pearl. You are a genius student at the School of the Martial Market. And when you were 16 years old, it wasn’t the martial technique of Buddhism that you practiced, but the Sacred Sword Skill of low-class of Spiritual. I want to know, how do you know the Sacred Sword Skill?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “Your information is quite detailed. Is it really worth for someone like you to spend so much effort investigating a junior like me? ”

“It’s worth it! Why wouldn’t it be? Even if I spend another 800 years, it would still be worth it. As long as there is a result.” Kong Lanyou narrowed her misty eyes.

Zhang Ruochen’s heart ached. It took all his restraint not to rush forward and tell her that he was the one she was looking for; he was her relative from 800 years ago, possibly her only relative left.

...

Chapter 453 - Sword Contest

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Confronted with Kong Lanyou's question, Zhang Ruochen contemplated for a moment before he answered. "When I got the Good-luck Sword, an idea flowed into my mind, and then I learned Sacred Sword Skill. I never knew the reason why."

Although he could not bear to lie to her, Zhang Ruochen still continued to do so.

Kong Lanyou raised her sharp and white chin, revealing a slender neck. "Is it true? May I know the set of Sacred Sword Skill you practiced?"

Kong Lanyou once saw Zhang Ruochen practicing Sacred Sword Skill. She thought in her heart that a person's image could be changed – his eyes could be disguised and his actions could be changed. However, the Tao of the sword was difficult to change.

If he was really the Zhang Ruochen that she knew, she was confident that she would be able to find out from testing him.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "Predecessor, as long as you do not mind my rude sword technique, I'd like to have a fight with you."

"In that case, please show me how profound the swordsmanship of the King of the younger generation of the Eastern Region is."

Kong Lanyou stood up, revealing her slender figure and elegant temperament. She walked out of the bamboo pavilion and stood at the end of the stone trail.

"Swoosh!"

As she waved her arms, two currents of sword Qi flew out from Kong Lanyou's fingertips. It cut off a bamboo pipe as thick as a thumb from the top of a bamboo.

The bamboo tube was jade green and a meter long.

Zhang Ruochen's spine was straight as a javelin, making him look outstanding. With the same trick, he also cut off a one-meter-long bamboo tube. He held it in his hands and stood ten steps away from her.

She said, "You've reached the Medium State of the Heaven Realm."

"Yes."

He was not surprised. With her current strength, she could naturally see through his cultivation.

Kong Lanyou nodded and said, "My cultivation is much higher than yours, and my understanding of martial arts is also far above yours. For the sake of fairness, I will suppress my cultivation at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, just three levels lower than yours."

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "You, my predecessor, should be very clear about my strength. In the same realm, there are few men in the entire Eastern Region who can fight with me. I advise that you suppress the realm at the Medium State of the Heaven Realm, same as me. Otherwise, I'm afraid that you will be defeated badly."

In any case, she was Zhang Ruochen's cousin. Even if 800 years had passed, her image in his heart was still the little girl who was inclined to cry.

Zhang Ruochen certainly did not want to be underestimated by her and wanted to compete with her in a fair battle.

At the same time, he wanted to know how powerful this little girl had become.

Eight hundred years had passed; she should have made some progress.

"You can talk big after defeating me."

The corner of her mouth twitched up, a slight smile appearing on her face.

Meanwhile, she had lifted the bamboo tube with her right hand, moved her feet, and changed her shape rapidly. She suddenly appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen and hit his right shoulder.

In the distance, Nie Honglou squinted at Kong Lanyou drawing the sword and said, “This predecessor is really confident. Doesn’t she know that against someone within the same realm, Zhang Ruochen is invincible?”

Lu Youcai said, “Whenever somebody reaches a certain realm in cultivation, one’s perception about movement and Tao of the sword will reach another height, which is beyond our understanding.”

“Nevertheless, it’s impossible for her at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm to defeat Zhang Ruochen who is at the Medium State of the Heaven Realm.” Nie Honglou shook his head.

He was also a master, so he knew Zhang Ruochen’s strength well.

In the same realm, few people could withstand Zhang Ruochen’s one movement.

Besides, her cultivation would be three levels lower than his.

“Let’s wait for the results! Being the predecessor, she will not do things she’s not sure of,” Lu Youcai said.

Lu Youcai did not know the white-haired woman’s real identity either. He only knew that even her ancestor was very respectful to her. She must be very important!

Perhaps she was a saint.

“Sacred Guiding Sword! ”

Kong Lanyou’s first movement was the first move of Sacred Sword Skill.

Her movements were natural and smooth, like a swordsman directing the way. With a wave of her hand, the bamboo tube went out.

Zhang Ruochen had already practiced Sacred Sword Skill to The Perfection of Martial Arts, so he immediately found a way out when she displayed Sacred Guiding Sword.

“Sacred Wave Sword!”

It was still a movement of Sacred Sword Skill. As he turned his arms, the sword Qi gushed out and turned into waves, sweeping toward Kong Lanyou.

“Swish—”

However, Kong Lanyou’s sword technique suddenly changed. A white light stabbed his chest through the waves of sword Qi.

The ordinary movement of Sacred Sword Skill became unpredictable. It was not the sword technique of the low-class of Spiritual anymore, but even beyond that of the Ghost Level.

Zhang Ruochen reacted really quickly. However, he was still a little late in lifting his sword to block the bamboo tube.

“Bang!”

The bamboo tube skillfully broke through the Celestial Bodyshield, hitting him between two of his ribs.

He felt pain – more pain than being stabbed by a real sword. The Genuine Qi throughout his body went retrograde, causing him to lose his ability to fight.

Zhang Ruochen felt weak. He sweated profusely, one hand on the ground as he panted for breath.

Kong Lanyou withdrew her sword and lifted her chest, saying proudly, “How was it? Even if I kept my cultivation at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, you couldn’t withstand my strike.”

“How could this be?”

Zhang Ruochen was reluctant to concede defeat to this little girl. One strike! Moreover, she had suppressed her cultivation at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, which was three levels lower than his.

It was impossible 800 years ago. Back then, Zhang Ruochen could easily beat her to the ground with just one hand.

Kong Lanyou said, “Although you’ve achieved Heart Integrated into Sword and practiced Sacred Sword Skill into the Perfection, you still have some subtle flaws, but you still can’t them with your current cultivation. What’s more, your fighting experience is far less than mine. Besides, you are worse in controlling your strength.”

Zhang Ruochen gradually recovered after running his Genuine Qi and adjusting his breath for a moment. He was no longer unreconciled, instead, he humbly analyzed Kong Lanyou’s words and said, “I’d like to thank you for your guidance.”

Kong Lanyou stared at Zhang Ruochen deeply and asked, “Are you really not him?”

“Who? Are you talking about me?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Kong Lanyou sighed again and stopped questioning.

“Actually, your control of power is already quite remarkable. When I was at your cultivation, I was far inferior to what you are now. Your talent is high, so you should set a higher goal.

“I lived in this mansion for a while. I believe you also know its value.

“I will live in this mansion for the next month. If you can accept ten of my strokes within a month, I will present this mansion to you without asking for a single cent. What do you think?”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat. He asked, “Why would you do this?”

“Because, your name... is Zhang Ruochen.”

Kong Lanyou’s eyes glazed over with deep feeling as if she was recalling something.

Lu Youcai stood in the distance, staring at Zhang Ruochen with an extremely envious gaze.

He knew that the white-haired woman in front of him was probably an amazing saint.

Zhang Ruochen could get instructions from a saint and the saint helped him to practice swords. Such an opportunity could

not be found. Even those who were descendants of the Saint Gentries never enjoyed such treatment.

However, he did not know that Zhang Ruochen was secretly complaining.

Within such a short interaction, she had already tested him many times. Several times, she had almost found his flaws.

If he spent a month living with her, he might not be able to hide the truth.

What should he do?

Kong Lanyou wore a space ring. Suddenly, it emitted a circle of white light on the surface. A 156cm- long combat sword flew from inside and suspended in midair.

“Abyss.” Zhang Ruochen stared at the sword, exclaiming secretly in his heart.

The sword that hung in mid-air was just the Good-luck Sword, but Chi Yao had named it “Abyss”. Zhang Ruochen also used this name.

The sword had been completely restored, with an ink black blade and a thick body. Even the broken sword tip was recast and restored.

Kong Lanyou held the sword as if talking to herself. “Do you know that this sword is not only named the Good-luck Sword but also called Abyss? Its former owner was called Zhang Ruochen, same as you.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “When I got this sword, I was informed of these things from the ideas sent from the sword.”

Zhang Ruochen did not know how many things Kong Lanyou had found, so he did not dare talk nonsense. He could only attribute all to the Ancient Abyss Sword.

Zhang Ruochen quickly changed the topic and stared at the Spatial Ring on her finger, saying, “How did you get a Spatial Ring?”

Kong Lanyou said, “You auctioned off so many Spatial Rings at Omen Ridge. Can it be hard for me to get one?”

Apparently, she had already been to Omen Ridge.

Moreover, she had found out that the person who auctioned the Spatial Ring was not Lei Jing but Zhang Ruochen.

“Don’t you want to know how I got those Spatial Rings?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Kong Lanyou said, “I don’t want to know. I’m much more curious whether you can move the Abyss Ancient Sword after it was repaired.”

“Why not?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Kong Lanyou said, “The Good-luck Sword, after restoration, weighs 675kg when the inscriptions are not activated.”

“Even so, I can hold it.” Zhang Ruochen said.

Kong Lanyou said, “The sword spirit in the sword has revived and recovered a faint consciousness. If she is unwilling, no matter how powerful you are, you can’t move the Abyss Ancient Sword unless she approves you to be her owner.

“But the Good-luck Sword will only allow one person to be her master. He’s the son of Emperor Ming from 800 years ago, Zhang Ruochen.

“Although you’re also called Zhang Ruochen, you’re not the son of Emperor Ming, so she may not accept you.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What will happen if I can’t hold the Good-luck Sword?”

“I’m sorry, but then I must take away the Good-luck Sword because it doesn’t belong to you.”

Looking at Zhang Ruochen sharply, Kong Lanyou wanted to know if this Zhang Ruochen in front of her could be accepted by the Good-luck Sword.

If he could get the approval of the Good-luck Sword, then even if he was not that Zhang Ruochen, he was surely inextricably linked to that Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 454 - Hundred Inscription Weapon

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Upon reaching the level of Holy Weapon, any sword could breed Sword Spirit.

Or rather, any sword that breeds Sword Spirit was considered a Holy Weapon.

Floating in mid-air, the pitch dark Abyss Ancient Sword was absorbing Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi as if it had life.

Eight hundred years ago, the Abyss Ancient Sword had already bred a sword spirit. However, after the blade was cut off, the sword spirit also suffered heavy loss and fell into a dormant state.

The sword spirit was only revived and began to recover its weak consciousness when the Ancient Abyss Sword was restored by the Sword Sanctum and its blade began to absorb Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi.

With Kong Lanyou watching, Zhang Ruochen walked beside the sword and reached to stroke its primitive body.

Kong Lanyou stared at Zhang Ruochen and the Abyss Ancient Sword. She held her breath. Under her sleeves, she instinctively squeezed her fingers.

She had never been this nervous ever since she reached the Saint Realm.

“Swoosh!”

The Abyss Ancient Sword trembled a bit, emitting a black brilliance, and then turned into a light shuttle. It flew up,

circled around Zhang Ruochen, and finally fell into his hands.

Zhang Ruochen grasped the hilt, feeling as if he'd been reunited with a long-lost relative. His blood and the Blood Meridian of the Abyss Ancient Sword had found each other again.

His five fingers tightly clenching the hilt, he immediately turned his arm and stabbed forward with the sword.

“Clang!”

The sword slashed through the air, emitting a cheerful sword sound.

The light on the sword tip glittered with spirituality.

Upon witnessing this, Kong Lanou seemed to have received a jolt of electricity. Rushing forward, she confronted Zhang Ruochen and said, “You are him. Tell me you are him.”

He took his sword back and straightened his body before asking, “What are you talking about, predecessor?”

“Don't you pretend that you don't know me! I know You're Zhang Ruochen, the person from 800 years ago!” Kong Lanyou was yelling.

Zhang Ruochen remained very calm as he said, “I'm sorry. I don't know what relationship you have with the former owner of this sword, but I'm sure that I'm not the one you are looking for. May I ask whether the person from 800 years ago is still alive?”

There was bitterness in Kong Lanyou's eyes. She took a step back and shook her head. “He... he is dead. I saw him die in front of me 800 years ago.”

Looking at her painful appearance, Zhang Ruochen also felt sad. “Since this is so, you should learn to let it go. Eight hundred years have passed. The dead have already left and turned into dust. Those who are living should not remain immersed in grief.”

Kong Lanyou took a deep breath and closed her eyes. “Go away, please!”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and took three steps back. He turned around and withdrew from the bamboo forest with Lu Youcai and Nie Honglou, leaving the mansion.

Left alone in the bamboo forest, Kong Lanyou spoke to herself. “Do you think it is him?”

In the void, an old voice spoke. “They’re very much alike, but it is definitely not the same person. Although he seems to know that something happened 800 years ago and is deliberately hiding it. He is a bit weird.”

Her eyes flew open, cold and sharp. She said, “Since the Good-luck Sword accepted him, it means that he must have some sort of relationship with the man from that year. What secret is he hiding?”

...

...

Having returned to the Courier Station of Martial Market, Zhang Ruochen’s heart was perturbed.

“How could she be associated with the Sword Sanctum? What realm has she reached? She claims she saw me die in front of her. Has she had any contact with Chi Yao? Was she related to the thing before?”

Seeing a loved one from 800 years ago, he was both happy and scared.

If this was so, then even she was his enemy. What a sad thing it would be.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen decided to keep his thoughts at bay and focused on the Abyss Ancient Sword instead. He said, “Take things as they come. When I am strong enough, I will be able to uncover the truth.”

“Swoosh!”

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew into the air, sword tip down and hilt up. It rotated slowly in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Inscriptions flowed on the sword like a spider web.

“With 108 basic inscriptions and 18 medium-level inscriptions, the sword should be a preliminary Holy Weapon.”

Empress Chi Yao’s Blood Drop Sword was able to absorb the blood of creatures so that it eventually grew into a Peerless Legend Sword that terrified all the monks in Kunlun’s Field. The Abyss Ancient Sword could grow powerful in a similar manner by absorbing other weapons.

As long as enough weapons were refined, the sword would surely develop to the same level as the Blood Drop Sword.

Holy Weapons were divided into three levels: Hundred Inscription Weapon, Thousand Inscriptions Weapon, and Ten-thousand- Inscription Sacred Weapon.

The so-called “Hundred Inscription Weapon” referred to a weapon with more than 100 basic inscriptions and over 10 medium level inscriptions.

More inscriptions meant more power.

Currently, the Abyss Ancient Sword could only be regarded as the lowest grade Holy Weapon.

Nevertheless, being a Holy Weapon, even if it was the weakest, it could burst forth with immense power.

He grasped the hilt with both hands and injected Genuine Qi into it, continuously activating the inscriptions on the blade.

Gradually, it became heavier and heavier while emitting brighter and brighter light.

At the Medium State in the Heaven Realm, he could only activate the 72nd basic inscription in the blade, which released 10% of the power of the Holy Sword.

Only by fully activating the inscriptions in the sword could the full power of the Holy Sword be exerted.

“Soul-repose Shadowing.”

Zhang Ruochen held the sword with both hands, pulling out a long sword shadow, and then chopped down.

An illusory image of a 23-meter giant sword emerged above the Abyss Ancient Sword and then fell vertically, hitting the

ground. With a loud bang, Sword Qi pierced through the earth and left a deep hole.

“The strength of this sword should be close to the full blow of a monk of the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.”

He then released the Martial Soul and suspended it on top of his head to control the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi, and then continued to inject it into the blade.

Actually, the current strength of his Martial Soul was comparable to the Sixth Change of the Fish-Dragon Realm, having reached the peak of his current cultivation.

While mobilizing the Martial Soul, he activated 99 basic inscriptions in the blade. The aura that the Abyss Ancient Sword emitted became stronger.

Swish!

Inspired by the sword, Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi condensed into hundreds of sword-shaped Qi, flying around him, just like a rain of swords.

With a flick of his arms, he chopped down with the sword.

Suddenly, countless Sword Qi also flew off, hitting the light wall of the array in the Courier Station of Martial Market and forming a circle of ripples.

“It seems my current cultivation is still far from being able to display the true power of the Abyss Ancient Sword.”

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged and embedded the sword into the ground. At the same time, he took out the Violet Thunder Sword, a Tenth Level Genuine Martial Arms.

The Ancient Abyss Sword automatically flew up and hit the sword body of the Violet Thunder Sword. With a loud clang, a crack appeared on the surface of the latter.

“Swoosh!”

Streaks of black light emerged from the tip of the Ancient Abyss Sword. It quickly rotated to form a black vortex.

The Violet Thunder Sword broke into metallic particles that then flew into the vortex and merged with the Abyss Ancient

Sword.

The Violet Thunder Sword completely disappeared soon after.

Zhang Ruochen once again lifted the Abyss Ancient Sword and found that not only did the sword body become heavier, but a basic inscription of electrical nature had also appeared on it.

The total number of basic inscriptions was now 109.

“Will the Abyss Ancient Sword add another inscription every time it takes one weapon?”

In order to confirm his hypothesis, he took out the Dragon Bone Spear, an Eleventh Level Genuine Treasure, and used the Abyss Ancient Sword to refine it.

As expected, another basic inscription appeared on the sword, for a total of 110.

“Both the Violet Thunder Sword and the Dragon Bone Spear are invaluable magical weapons, but they only added two basic inscriptions to the Abyss Ancient Sword.” Zhang Ruochen sighed.

The Violet Thunder Sword was actually worth 370,000 Spiritual Crystals.

The Dragon Bone Spear was even more valuable, worth more than 1,000,000 Spiritual Crystals.

If they were used to buy pills instead, it would be enough to allow large families and Suzerains to cultivate a large number of young disciples.

Yet after absorbing them, only two basic inscriptions were added to the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Continuing his experiments, he let the Abyss Ancient Sword take ten more Genuine Martial Arms. Among them, two were Eighth Level Genuine Martial Arms, and one was a Seventh Level. The remaining pieces were all weapons below the Seventh Level.

After absorbing 10 Genuine Martial Arms, only one basic inscription was added to the Ancient Abyss Sword.

After analysis, he finally concluded that the Abyss Ancient Sword would add a basic inscription after absorbing a Ninth Level or higher Genuine Martial Arms.

As for Genuine Martial Arms below Ninth Level, it needed to take 10 or even dozens of pieces before adding one basic inscription.

Of course, refining weapons would not only increase inscriptions but also absorb the vital essence of the weapons, making the combat sword sharper and harder.

“The Abyss Ancient Sword is currently a Hundred Inscription Weapon. I don’t know how many weapons it will need to upgrade to a Thousand Inscriptions Weapon?”

Holy Weapons were very precious. Even some half-saint families only had one or two Hundred-Inscription Weapons, and they were already regarded as Family Treasures.

Only those who were rich and powerful Saint Families had a Thousand Inscriptions Weapon.

In two days that followed, he spent 60 million Spiritual Crystals to purchase 100 pieces of Tenth Level Genuine Martial Arms in the shops of the Martial Market Bank.

The least of Zhang Ruochen’s concerns was Spiritual Crystals. Even if he had bought 100 pieces of Tenth Level Genuine Martial Arms, he still had 300 million pieces of Spiritual Crystals.

The wealth in spiritual crystals and various treasures that he now possessed was even comparable to the wealth accumulated by a Half-Saint family over centuries.

As long as it could enhance the power of the Abyss Ancient Sword, it was worth spending spiritual crystals on, no matter how much it cost.

Chapter 455 - Heavenly Ring

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

In the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel, it took five days for the Abyss Ancient Sword to completely absorb 100 pieces of the tenth level Genuine Martial Arms and turn them into the sword blade power.

The total number of basic inscriptions on the Abyss Ancient Sword was now 210.

The number of medium level inscriptions was still 18.

The power of the sword had reached a new level. Zhang Ruochen was far from being able to display its true power with his current cultivation.

The Abyss Ancient Sword's spirit was still not fully revived. It was estimated that the sword spirit could heal the wound until the Abyss Ancient Sword reached the level of Thousand Inscriptions Weapon.

Zhang Ruochen practiced sword technique in the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel.

He envisioned himself playing against Kong Lanyou.

Kong Lanyou could turn one simple Sacred Guiding Sword move into a magic trick. She could easily defeat Zhang Ruochen.

The power of the same sword technique actually varied greatly when displayed by different people.

“I can't even resist one of her moves. It is a huge challenge to block 10. I have one month. If I succeed, my control of power will surely reach an unprecedented height.”

Zhang Ruochen had been imitating Kong Lanyou's posture and strenuous manner all day, hoping to comprehend something from it.

He had performed one move of Sacred Guiding Sword more than 1,000 times.

Finally, he made great progress, noticing the subtlety of Kong Lanyou's sword technique.

Just as he calmed down and prepared to refine, he heard Blackie's voice outside the Time and Space Spinel, "Zhang Ruochen, the Sword Sanctum carriage has come to pick you up. It's waiting outside the Courier Station of Martial Market. They say that the three day deadline is up and the Sword Sanctum disciples are ready fight in the Heavenly Ring."

Shocked by Blackie's voice, the feeling of mystery in Zhang Ruochen's mind suddenly disappeared.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to continue to capture the feeling, but it was no use.

He sighed and walked out of the internal space.

The disciple of the Sword Sanctum was Lu Fantian. Zhang Ruochen had indeed promised to fight with him.

"I was defeated by Kong Lanyou with one sword move. It was not just because I didn't have enough control over the power, but also because my actual combat experience was inadequate. I will take this opportunity to go to the Heavenly Ring and have a nice fight. Maybe it will help me improve more quickly."

After thinking it through, Zhang Ruochen climbed into the Sword Sanctum carriage and went to the Coliseum of the Martial Market in the Seventh District.

The Coliseum of the Martial Market in the Seventh District was where the most intense battles in the Eastern Holy Land, even in the entire Eastern Region, took place. Many God's favored sons gathered there.

Disciples of various Colleges and Martial Clubs could enter the Coliseum of the Martial Market to fight at any time. They

weren't just looking to become famous in one battle; they also wanted to refine themselves, improve their combat skills and gain fighting experience.

Lu Fantian had a great reputation in the Eastern Region. He had a Body of Sacred Tree and had reached the Heaven Realm at a young age. Among his peers, few people could match him.

In this generation, if there weren't incredible geniuses like Zhang Ruochen, Bu Qianfan, and Di Yi, with Lu Fantian's talent, he would surely shine brilliantly and become a benchmark of the time.

However, he had been born at the wrong time. In this era, there were not only several Saintly Beings, but also many talents in the Ultimate Realm, such as Zhang Ruochen and Bu Qianfan. His fame was suppressed.

Even so, Lu Fantian's talent could not be underestimated. He had not only reached the Final State of the Heaven Realm, he had also refined the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, practiced into a Body of Sacred Tree, and reached its Peak.

Lu Fantian had just challenged seven consecutive warriors on the Heaven Board and succeeded.

He was currently engaged in his eighth battle. The man who played against him was Yi Qusheng, a disciple of Hanging Sect. He ranked 5,800th on the Heaven Board and his military merits had reached 287,000.

The Heaven Board recruited all the warriors of the Heaven Realm in Kunlun's Field. Only those who had ten winning streaks in the Heavenly Ring, or who had accumulated 10,000 military merits in the Battlefield of the Primitive World were eligible to enter the Heaven Board.

The number of warriors on the Heaven Board had reached more than 370,000, and all of them were under the age of 60.

Warriors who could enter the top 10,000 were all first-class masters. Most of them had special physical qualities.

Moreover, they were in the Yellow Realm, the Black Realm and the Earth Realm, and were close to the Ultimate Realm.

It could be said that the top 10,000 warriors on the Heaven Board were one-in-a-million talents. In a hundred years, they would rule Kunlun's Field. The vast majority of them would become dominators.

Yi Qusheng, who appeared to be in his early 30s, was dressed in a pale blue scholar robe and two neat beards on his chin. He dressed like a man of letters.

He had reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm at the age of 38. His talent was higher than the disciples of many powerful Saint families.

However, he was actually turning 58 this year and his cultivation was still in the Completion of the Heaven Realm.

For 20 full years, he had not been able to break through the limit of mortals.

In spite of this, his strength had continued to improve, and he had ranked in the top 10,000 on the Heaven Board for the past 20 years.

Although his realm did not break through the limit of the mortal warrior, the strength he erupted had already surpassed its limit. It was enough to compete with a monk at the First Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

“Lu Fantian, you have only reached the Final State of the Heaven Realm, and you dare to challenge me. Aren't you being arrogant?” Yi Qusheng held an iron fan in his hand and showed a leisurely look.

In Yi Qusheng's eyes, Lu Fantian was still too young. Even if he had won seven times in a row, it was nothing remarkable.

He had also been very arrogant at Lu Fantian's age and won 31 times in the Coliseum of the Martial Market.

So what?

Now, his cultivation was still at the Completion of the Heaven Realm and he had failed to reach the Fish-dragon Realm.

The Holy Road was difficult to reach!

Lu Fantian placed his sword transversely and his eyes were firm. He said, “Yi Qusheng, you are old! I will replace you and become the 5,800th person on the Heaven Board from today on. To be honest, I have never treated you as an opponent. My opponent is someone else, I’m just using you to practice.”

“You will not brag like this once I kick you out of the Heavenly Ring.”

Yi Qusheng was a bit angry. He mobilized his Genuine Qi, then rushed toward Lu Fantian and struck out a handprint.

BANG! BANG!

The two masters fought fiercely.

A loud noise rose up in the Coliseum of the Martial Market. Nearly 12,000 warriors sat watching the battle between Lu Fantian and Yi Qusheng.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen walk in, Lu Xuan immediately rushed down and took hold of his arm.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’re finally here! My elder brother is a warlike. He can’t wait to go to the Coliseum and challenge warriors on the Heaven Board. He has already defeated seven people.”

Zhang Ruochen looked toward the Heavenly Ring. He said, “Your brother’s strength has progressed. I remember he used to rank 300,000th on the Heaven Board. Now, he’s actually challenging Yi Qusheng, a top 10,000 warrior.”

Lu Xuan smiled. “With my brother’s current strength, it is not hard to defeat Yi Qusheng. Of course, it is because of the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood that you gave him. After refining the Eaglewood, his Body of Sacred Tree reached its Peak. According to the Master, my brother’s current physical quality is enough to contend with a Saintly Being.”

Zhang Ruochen carefully observed the battle. He could not help nodding his head and gasping in admiration. “They are very powerful, their martial techniques are ingenious, and the moves are fluent. They have almost played warriors’ strength to its limit. Few people under the Fish-dragon Realm can match this.”

If Zhang Ruochen did not use his Martial Soul, there was no absolute certainty he could defeat Lu Fantian based on his current strength.

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen could feel that Lu Fantian was hiding some of his skills. He did not use all his strength when fighting against Yi Qusheng.

Zhang Ruochen had been able to absorb the Half-Saint's Light and advance his Martial Soul to the Sixth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

With the help of the powerful Sword Sanctum, Lu Fantian certainly had the ability to find Half-Saint's Light and enhance his Martial Soul. Even if his Martial Soul had not reached the Sixth Change, it was not much lower.

Zhang Ruochen felt for the first time that the fight between him and Lu Fantian would probably be a fierce one. It would not be easy to defeat him.

Zhang Ruochen was sitting in the Spectator Stands, when he suddenly noticed a familiar petite figure. She wore aquamarine robes with a white jade belt around her slim waist outlining her curvy figure.

It was Duanmu Xingling.

Duanmu Xingling was sitting behind Zhang Ruochen. The teenage girl always had a charming smile on her face. "Zhang Rouchen, I heard that you will play against the Sword Sanctum disciple, so I came to the Coliseum first thing this morning. I've been waiting for you for a long time."

Ever since he discovered Duanmu Xingling's true identity, the relationship between them had been awkward. They were no longer as intimate as they once were.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Duanmu Xingling and smiled. "Senior sister apprentice Duanmu, it's been a long time."

Duanmu Xingling grinned. A tinge of regret crept into her voice. "We all live in the Courier Station of Martial Market, but you never take the initiative to see me. Certainly, it's been a long time."

“I knew that once you discovered my true identity, our relationship would never be the same.”

She said her last sentence using sound wave, so only Zhang Ruo Chen could hear it.

She took a deep breath, and said in a self-deprecating tone, “You keep your mind on preparing for the next fight. Don’t worry about me. I’ve just been thinking too much recently. Lu Fantian is a powerful opponent, you must not take it lightly. If you defeat him, I will give you a Five Elements Spirit Treasure.”

Chapter 456 - Master Gathering

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

With joyfulness in his eyes, Zhang Ruochen immediately asked, “Which kind of Five Elements Spirit Treasure did you get in the Five Elements Primitive World?”

In the Five Elements Primitive World, he had obtained three kinds of Five Elements Spirit Treasures, including a Black Glazed Spinel, a Purple Agarwood, and a Golden Ganoderma Lucidum.

However, he still lacked two kinds of Spirit Treasures.

Naturally, he was ambitious in Martial Arts. He did not only want to practice into the Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits or the Treasured Body of Three Spirits, but also the Five Elements Chaotic Body, which was beyond Saintly Being.

Without ambition, how could a man become a person of importance?

Without ambition, how could a warrior become a peerless superior?

“One of the Spirit Treasures is the Bloody Saint-cultivating Soil.”

Duanmu Xingling blinked her eyes and said with a smile, “If you can defeat Lu Fantian, I can give you Bloody Saint-cultivating Soil.”

“No. I also got three kinds of Five Elements Spirit Treasures, so I can exchange the Black Glazed Spinel and the Purple Agarwood with you,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Until he had developed to the Treasured Body of Metal Spirit, Zhang Ruochen would not exchange or sell the Golden Ganoderma Lucidum because it was rare. However, he had many Black Glazed Spinel and Purple Agarwood.

Duanmu Xingling could feel Zhang Ruochen's estrangement from the conversation.

He had never refused her gifts before.

She looked at him deeply and said nothing.

“Boom!”

Suddenly, a deafening yell was heard in the Coliseum of the Martial Market. All the people stood up and called the name, “Lu Fantian.”

While Zhang Ruochen was communicating with Duanmu Xingling, Lu Fantian defeated Yi Qusheng, who fell off the Heavenly Ring.

Actually, Yi Qusheng ranked in the top 10,000 on the Heaven Board

, so he could compete with superiors of the First Change in the Fish-Dragon Realm. Unexpectedly, he had lost to Lu Fantian so quickly that he only had time to use 92 movements.

“Surprisingly, Lu Fantian, at the Final State of the Heaven Realm, was able to defeat Yi Qusheng within 100 movements. Within five years, he will definitely be in the Completion of Heaven Realm. After several years' hard work, he will have a chance to enter the top 10 on the

Heaven Board

.”

“Impossible! It's 10 or 100 times harder than breaking through to the Fish-Dragon Realm. The first 10 people on the

Heaven Board

are Saintly Beings, blessed from above. They can fight against Saintly Beings in the same realm.”

“Haven’t you discovered that Lu Fantian is not much weaker than those Saintly Beings now, based on his current strength?”

“What? Is he so strong now?”

All the people in the Coliseum of the Martial Market were stunned by Lu Fantian’s strength. Some old masters of the Fish-dragon Realm predicted that he would have the chance to enter the top 10 on the Heaven Board within 10 years.

Throughout the whole of Kunlun’s Field, millions of people had been listed on the

Heaven

Board

. However, only those first 100 or 10 persons would be remembered and known in the world.

So, the top 10 on the

Heaven Board

was a great honor.

If in a prolific period of great talents, even Saintly Beings might not be able to enter the top 10 on the

Heaven Board

.

An elder in a purple robe sitting above the Heavenly Ring announced, “Lu Fantian of the Sword Sanctum defeats Yi Qusheng of the Hanging Sect. He replaces Yi Qusheng and rises to the 5800th position on the

Heaven Board

. At the same time, he obtains 287,000 military merits. Lu Fantian, do you still want to challenge?”

Lu Fantian stood in the center of the Heavenly Ring, turned around, and stared at Zhang Ruochen. He raised his arms and waved his sword, saying, “Zhang Ruochen, since you’ve come, let’s have a fair fight. Today, I want to compete with the young king of the Eastern Region. I wonder how powerful you are.”

Following his eyes, all the people looked at Zhang Ruochen.

“What? Zhang Ruochen also came to the Coliseum of the Martial Market. Lu Fantian wants to fight him.” A surprised, young warrior, about 10 years old looked around for Zhang Ruochen.

A big, tall, bald man in a cotton garment, was sitting in the first row. He looked ugly and ferocious, like a butcher.

However, his eyes were extremely deep, and they sparkled with wisdom, revealing a temperament that contrasted sharply with his figure.

The bald man crossed his arms and said to the young man, “Didn’t you know that? Today, I came specially to the Coliseum of the Martial Market to see them fight. It must be a splendid fight because both of them are top warriors. If they don’t fight at least once, no one will know who is stronger.”

On his waist hung four tokens, including a black Yellow Iron Token, a green Black Copper Token, a white Earth Silver Token, and a golden Heaven Gold Token, which respectively represented that he entered the

Yellow Board

in the Yellow Realm, the

Black Board

in the Black Realm, the

Earth

Board

in the Earth Realm, and the

Heaven Board

in the Heaven Realm.

The Yellow Iron Token was imprinted, “No. 1 on the Yellow Board.” The Black Copper Token was imprinted, “No. 1 on the Black Board.” The Earth Silver Token was imprinted, “No. 1 on the Earth Board.”

Covered by the other three tokens, the marking of the last Golden Heaven Token remained hidden. Naturally, his rank on the

Heaven Board

was unseen.

Startled by his ranks on the

Yellow

,

Black

, and

Earth

Boards

, the young warrior did not dare to speak anymore.

On the left of the bald man sat a veiled young woman.

Her eyes were uncovered and very beautiful.

Naturally, she also saw the three tokens on the bald man's waist. With a pretended lightness, she snorted and said, "I don't think so. Zhang Ruochen is only about 20 years old, and he has only practiced Martial Arts for a few years. However, Lu Fantian has already turned 26, so his martial cultivation must surpass Zhang Ruochen's."

The bald man said, "In this fight, you're optimistic about Lu Fantian?"

The veiled woman laughed and said, "If they were in the same realm, Zhang Ruochen might be stronger than Lu Fantian. But for now, Zhang Ruochen still can't compete with Lu Fantian."

"Perhaps!" The bald man said.

Today, many masters on the

Heaven Board

hid in the Coliseum of the Martial Market, among whom were some who had been famous for years. Usually, they sought

experience in the Battlefield of the Primitive World or secluded themselves for refining.

When they heard that Lu Fantian wanted to openly challenge Zhang Ruochen, one of Six Great Kings among the new generation, many superiors on the

Heaven Board

who had secluded themselves for refining came specially to watch the battle.

Many of them wanted to know Zhang Ruochen's actual strength. Meanwhile, they wondered if he deserved the name "a young king."

If he did not deserve it, many people would take action to replace him.

The name "young king" could almost be compared with "the top ten on the

Heaven Board

."

Trees leave a shadow, and people want to be famous.

Many young warriors stood beneath and looked up to them. They were always ready to rush up and dethrone them.

Under the public gaze, Zhang Ruochen carried the Ancient Abyss Sword behind his back, walked to the Heavenly Ring step by step, and stood opposite Lu Fantian.

In an instant, the whole Coliseum of the Martial Market quieted down. Countless eyes were blazing.

Zhang Ruochen looked calm and undisturbed, saying, "Brother Lu, you must have consumed a lot of Genuine Qi since you've fought eight times. I can wait an hour for you. Let's fight after you are restored to your peak."

Lu Fantian instantly took a Huiqi Pill and began to restore his Genuine Qi in the center of the Heavenly Ring.

He obviously valued this battle very much. He knew that Zhang Ruochen was hard to conquer, so he would not be

sloppy.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen also closed his eyes to recall Kong Lanyou's Sacred Guiding Sword. He wanted to keep comprehending the subtle sword technique.

Although he had achieved Heart Integrated into Sword, he was just at the Initial Stage. Among those in the Heaven Realm and the Fish-dragon Realm, he was very remarkable. However, he still lagged far behind Saints.

If he could comprehend even 10% or 20% of the essence of Kong Lanyou's Sacred Guiding Sword, he would definitely be able to enter the Intermediate Stage of Heart Integrated into Sword.

An hour passed very quickly.

Lu Fantian opened his sharp, intelligent eyes again, and said, "Zhang Ruochen, I'm restored to my peak. Draw your sword!"

"Ok, let's fight!"

Without opening his eyes, Zhang Ruochen mobilized Qi with his fingers. The Ancient Abyss Sword immediately flew out of its sheath and fell into his hands.

"Swish!"

He casually displayed one movement, which was "Sacred Guiding Sword." He had practiced it in his mind numerous times.

It seemed just one stroke, but it actually formed countless sword shadows. In the end, they converged into a sword path that extended more than 10 meters in front of Lu Fantian.

Just a simple Inferior Class, Spiritual Stage sword technique deeply troubled Lu Fantian, who could not stand up to it. His momentum instantly broke down, and he had to retreat quickly.

If he had not retreated, he would have been unable to deal with Zhang Ruochen's next sword movements.

Kong Lanyou's cultivation was so amazing that her "Sacred Guiding Sword" technique was almost a saint's teaching. She

not only had a sword fight with Zhang Ruochen, but she also gave him directions.

Zhang Ruochen was so smart that he had understood many truths of the movement in one day. Unconsciously, his sword techniques improved a lot.

That was why he could force such a superior like Lu Fantian to draw back with only “Sacred Guiding Sword.”

Lu Fantian stood firm, bending his legs and lowering himself into a defensive stance to meet Zhang Ruochen’s fierce sword attack. He discovered that Zhang Ruochen was still using the sword technique “Sacred Guiding Sword” as his second movement.

“Why this movement again?”

Lu Fantian developed a headache.

This sword technique seemed simple, but it actually had infinite variation, so he did not dare to stay in its path.

Thus, he dodged again.

Until Zhang Ruochen showed a killing move, Lu Fantian would keep cautious.

He had to prove his strength as a young king in this battle. He could not afford to be defeated or careless.

Many of warriors sitting on the Spectator Stand were confused and puzzled at this fight.

“Zhang Ruochen is fighting Lu Fantian with his eyes closed. Is he so arrogant?” The veiled woman said, frowning.

She thought that Zhang Ruochen disrespected his opponent, as he was fighting Lu Fantian with his eyes closed.

Duanmu Xingling laughed and said, “Whether he fights with eyes opened or closed, there is no difference. Don’t you know that Zhang Ruochen’s talent in Spiritual Power is better than that of his martial arts?”

Then, Duanmu Xingling cupped her chin, stared at the Heavenly Ring with her beautiful eyes, and said, “Moreover, I think that Zhang Ruochen is not fighting but coming into some

practicing state. He must be comprehending a profound sword technique.”

Chapter 457 - Sacred Wood Sphere

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Is Zhang Ruochen perceiving profound sword techniques?”
Duanmu Xingling said.

The masked woman’s eyes flashed disapprovingly, showing her disagreement with Duanmu Xingling’s words.

She said coldly, “What Zhang Ruochen wielded is the Sacred Sword Skill, which is a low-class Spiritual martial technique of the Yin and Yang Sect. In Yin and Yang Sect, even a warrior of the Black Realm can succeed in the practice of this sword technique. Even if it is profound, how deep could it be?”

Despite the thin veil covering her face, her extraordinary temperament could not be concealed. One can imagine that under the veil must be a stunning face.

Her bright eyes were filled with scorn. She regarded Zhang Ruochen as a young and famous warrior who had become conceited because of his success and reputation.

From her point of view, people like Zhang Ruochen were like frogs at the bottom of a well – once they met a real superior, they would easily fall into a bottomless abyss.

Duanmu Xingling turned her eyes and said, “The ‘profound’ that I was talking about is not sword technique movement but the sword technique realm contained in the sword technique. Don’t you know that Zhang Ruochen has achieved Heart Integrated into Sword? Among young warriors, Zhang Ruochen has a peerless sword technique realm.”

“That’s not necessarily true. Seeing as Zhang Ruochen was able to practice Heart Integrated into Sword, naturally, there may be a sword technique genius who can also practice Heart Integrated into Sword realm.”

The masked girl spoke in a confrontational manner while staring coldly at Duanmu Xingling.

Duanmu Xingling made no concessions and laughed. “If that is so, then we shall wait and see. The Coliseum is right there. The outcome will be decided soon.”

On the Heavenly Ring, Lu Fantian had dodged Zhang Ruochen’s Sacred Guiding Sword seventeen times in a row.

Lu Xuan stood up with her hands on her hips and shouted with some annoyance. “Elder brother, can you do it or not? If not, get out of the Coliseum immediately. You cannot bring disgrace upon the Sword Sanctum!”

Hearing this, Lu Fantian became flustered. He glared at Lu Xuan grimly.

It wasn’t just Lu Xuan – the other warriors in the Coliseum of Martial Market were getting impatient.

Originally, they thought it would be a wonderful battle between two geniuses; they did not expect it to be so boring.

From beginning to end, Zhang Ruochen only attacked Lu Fantian with the same sword technique, while Lu Fantian just kept evading Zhang Ruochen’s attack.

If this kept on, what was there to see?

Actually, Lu Fantian fought humbly and had no choice but to keep evading because he could not anticipate Zhang Ruochen’s next movements.

After seventeen movements, Lu Fantian finally found resolve in his heart and was ready to fight back.

When Zhang Ruochen displayed his 18th Sacred Guiding Sword, Lu Fantian counter-attacked instead of evading. Lu Fantian held a long sword inlaid with gold wires and stabbed straight forward.

“Crash! Crash!”

The two swords interlocked, giving off sparks. There was a shrill noise from the friction.

Finally, a real fight. The Coliseum of the Martial Market began to settle down again.

The talents of the Heaven Board who had come especially to watch this battle concentrated their attention on the match with bated breaths. They wanted to see the sword techniques of Zhang Ruochen and Lu Fantian – just how good were they?

With one move, Zhang Ruochen and Lu Fantian separated and retreated to different sides.

In just a few moments, Lu Fantian launched an attack. Holding the hilt, he mobilized the Genuine Qi from his entire body and gathered it in his arms, and then he suddenly slammed down his sword.

It was a very domineering sword.

It was smooth and clean, without any fancy tricks.

From the Spectator Stand, the crowd could clearly see that a sword Qi wave flew out of Lu Fantian’s sword, separating the air left and right to form a magnificent sword technique waterfall.

Faintly, everyone could hear the rumbling sound of a waterfall, shaking their souls.

“That sword is terrifying. Lu Fantian is indeed very strong. The power of his sword alone is enough to fight recklessly against a Monk in the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.” Duanmu Xingling’s heart tightened and she began to worry about Zhang Ruochen.

Lu Fantian’s power was beyond Duanmu Xingling’s expectation.

Actually, the Fish-dragon Realm was above the realm of humans.

A person who has reached the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, also called Innate Embryonic Breath, could make

Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi as his or her food to reach the Foodless Realm.

Such persons were called Monk instead of Warrior.

As long as the person entered the state of genuine fetal respiration, he or she would not suffocate or starve to death even if they slept at the bottom of the river for one year. It was truly beyond the realm of mortals, therefore, countless warriors yearned for it.

Lu Fantian was powerful enough to fight against a Monk in the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Facing Lu Fantian's strong sword, Zhang Ruochen still closed his eyes.

He still kept calm and fought against Lu Fantian with another move of Sacred Guiding Sword.

However, this move seemed to be a bit different from his previous moves.

“Swoosh!”

Zhang Ruochen still shook his arms, but then, the sword Qi from him showed a series of shadows and flew in all directions, forming six sword paths.

“Bang! Bang!”

The sword Qi hit each other and made a series of crackles.

Afterward, Zhang Ruochen continued to display his sword movement. In a flash, 36 moves of Sacred Guiding Sword were shown. Each move had a different sword technique.

Meanwhile, Lu Fantian kept fighting against Zhang Ruochen's sword techniques but failed to hit back.

“How did this happen? How can Zhang Ruochen's low-class of Spiritual sword technique suppress me?”

“I was wrong. Zhang Ruochen is using swordplay comprehension. His seemingly simple sword technique contains the true essence of sword techniques.”

Only by breaking Zhang Ruochen's state of swordplay comprehension could Lu Fantian cause Zhang Ruochen to stumble.

Only in this way could Lu Fantian get an advantage.

After thinking about this, Lu Fantian stopped fighting Zhang Ruochen and retreated to the edge of the Coliseum. Then, with both hands, he lifted the combat sword over his head.

He mobilized the Qi of Sacred Tree in his body to form a Sacred Wood Sphere.

On the Coliseum, the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi began to condense into green vines and leaves that were tougher than real vines and sharper than real leaves.

Vines and leaves grew crazily, covering the whole Coliseum.

Only the Body of Sacred Tree could practice the Sacred Wood Sphere.

In this domain, everything was controlled by Lu Fantian.

Even a simple leaf could immediately become a sharp weapon.

Sensing the impending danger, Zhang Ruochen woke up from the state of swordplay comprehension. Without hesitation, he instinctively wielded the sword, cut the vines and leaves, and struck Lu Fantian.

“Zhang Ruochen, you've finally entered the state of battle!”
Lu Fantian said.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen launch an attack, Lu Fantian was not afraid but happy. He manipulated a root vine to smash toward Zhang Ruochen.

Every vine was a sword.

Dozens of vines collided with Zhang Ruochen's Celestial Bodyshield, making a loud shock sound of Genuine Qi, cracking Zhang Ruochen's sword movement and forcing him to take two steps backward.

Chapter 458 - The Universal Sword Technique

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“It is indeed the Sacred Wood Sphere. Kind of interesting.”
Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen could have also released the Space Domain to meet Lu Fantian’s Sacred Wood Sphere head on, but he did not.

He wanted to refine his fighting skills in this battle. He hoped that he could defeat a stronger, superior force like Kong Lanyou, with a weak, backward force.

That was to win with skill.

“Zhang Ruochen, a really powerful movement still lies ahead.”

Lu Fantian roared loudly, “Sacred Tree Martial Soul!”

He released his Martial Soul and it appeared above him.

Lu Fantian’s Martial Soul was not a human shape but a giant Sacred Tree. It was very much like the Sacred Prime Tree painted on the Yin Yang Wooden Graph.

Although it was just an illusory image, it still gave people a feeling of grandeur and magnificence. It was like a sky-high Divine Tree rooted in the center of the Heavenly Ring.

“Sacred Tree Martial Soul.” Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes.

Very few people could practice into a diverse Martial Soul.

Such people were either particularly strong or particularly weak.

Obviously, Lu Fantian was the former.

Under the support of the Martial Soul, Lu Fantian's strength increased considerably. The green light exuded from his body turned the entire Martial Market battle into a world of green.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel that the Martial Soul's strength was equal to a Monk at the Fourth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. It was very powerful.

“Deadwood can be carved.”

Lu Fantian rushed forward. In the blink of an eye, he had reached Zhang Ruochen's side and applied a Spiritual Stage Superior class sword technique, the Deadwood Sword Technique.

A stroke of sharp breath attacked toward Zhang Ruochen's waist.

Zhang Ruochen's body shrank. He moved backward one step and fended off with his sword.

POW!

A powerful force passed into his arms through the blade. His arm went numb, and the Abyss Ancient Sword almost flew out of his hand.

With a bang, the tip of the combat sword pierced through his robe, leaving a 3-centimeter wound on his waist.

Zhang Ruochen immediately regulated his Genuine Qi. His feet glided backward smoothly. He landed ten meters away and stood firm.

A masked woman in the Spectator Stand smiled. “The so-called Six Young Kings of the Eastern Regions are nothing compared to this. If Lu Fantian's sword was quicker, that attack would have opened Zhang Ruochen's intestines.”

“Lu Fantian may have the Sacred Wood Sphere and the Sacred Tree Martial Soul; Zhang Ruochen has a few tricks up his sleeve too.” Duanmu Xingling sneered.

In fact, Duanmu Xingling was also very confused. Why had Zhang Ruochen not displayed his Martial Soul? Did he think that he could defeat Lu Fantian without it?

She shook her head.

Although she was quite confident in Zhang Ruochen's strength, Lu Fantian was not weak. Especially, his Martial Soul, it was more powerful than many Monks in the Fish-dragon Realm. He was indeed a master among masters.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the hole in his clothes and gently shook his head.

"I wasn't able to dodge it completely. The disparity between Kong Lanyou and me is so large."

If it were Kong Lanyou, she could certainly have ducked Lu Fantian's sword with ease. She would have even fought back and hurt him.

"Right! If I were Kong Lanyou, how would I have held Lu Fantian's sword back?"

A bright light flashed through his mind. He seemed to enter a state of swordplay comprehension.

Lu Rutian could tell that something was wrong with Zhang Ruochen.

"His attention seems to not be focused on the battle. He seems to be refining something."

"This cannot not be allowed."

"He cannot enter a state of refining. If that happens, even if I defeat him, I will not be recognized and approved by everyone."

Lu Fantian regulated his Genuine Qi fully and roared, "Zhang Ruochen, are you here to fight or not?"

"I am certainly here to fight," Zhang Rouchen replied. "As long as you force me to use the power of the Martial Soul, I will do my best to fight with you. If not, your strength is only enough to accompany me while I refine."

What he had said sounded light, but actually it was very domineering, full of confidence and pride. Even if Lu Fantian had the Body of Sacred Tree, he could only help Zhang Rouchen's swordplay comprehension.

"He is so handsome! My brother is much weaker compared to him!"

Lu Xuan's eyes sparkled. She gazed at Zhang Ruochen passionately.

Duanmu Xingling's gaze also sharpened. She realized for the first time that Zhang Ruochen was actually confident.

Soon, she saw why.

Zhang Ruochen was a humble person in daily life. However, he was full of ambition, confidence and endless fighting spirit when it came to the Martial Arts.

Standing on the Coliseum, he was a warrior. If anyone wanted to challenge him, he must take out his strength and make Zhang Ruochen feel that he was qualified to fight with him.

"The king of the younger generation is indeed very proud. If Lu Fantian hadn't tried, I would have liked to fight with him," the masked woman said with a sneer. "When he is defeated ruthlessly, he will know that there is always someone better than him. From that time on, he will converge his arrogance."

It wasn't just the masked woman. Some masters on the Heaven Board who were standing outside also felt that Zhang Ruochen was too arrogant. Among them, several top-ranking masters were eager for a fight. They were ready to ascend the Heavenly Ring and teach Zhang Ruochen a lesson.

Lu Fantian was also irritated by Zhang Ruochen's words. He snorted coldly. "In that case, I won't be modest anymore."

"Heaven, earth and human create all things."

The Gold Wire Sword revolved in a circle on Lu Fantian's hand. It formed into countless sword Qi shadows and gathered into a sphere, letting out a swooshing sound.

The sword Qi sphere spun. It quickly moved toward Zhang Ruochen.

“One makes two (Yin and Yang), two make three (Heaven, earth and human), three generate all things. It is the Universal Sword Technique,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Many people in the coliseum also recognized the sword technique Lu Fantian was applying. They let out sounds of amazement.

The Universal Sword Technique was an Inferior Class Ghost Level sword technique. It contained infinite changes; it was also endless.

With cultivation in the Heaven Realm, he had been able to practice a Ghost Level martial technique into the succeed. It certainly shocked many people.

Even Zhang Ruochen was slightly surprised.

A few months prior, when Zhang Ruochen and Di Yi had fought in the Underwater Dragon Palace, Di Yi had practiced the Inferior Class Ghost Level techniques, Human King Fist and Hades Sword Skill into Small Success.

In the Stairway to Heaven, when Zhang Ruochen had fought against Bu Qianfan, the Inferior Class Ghost Level martial technique, broadsword technique of Army Suppressing and Prestige Destroying Bu Qianfan applied had been close to the level of the succeed.

Now, what level they were in was unknown.

Zhang Ruochen had not yet succeeded in practicing any type of Ghost Level martial arts.

Even the Sword Ripple of Ten Channels was only a Superior class Spiritual Stage martial technique. Only the power of ten fingers linked could reach the Inferior Class of Ghost Level.

Lu Fantian was not much older than them, but it was indeed remarkable that he could practice an Inferior Class Ghost Level martial technique into succeed.

Chapter 459 - Eleven Swords

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Sword Defending!”

Facing Lu Fantian’s Universal Sword Technique, Zhang Ruochen immediately calmed down and regulated the Heart of the Sword. His palm hit the hilt, sending the Abyss Ancient Sword flying.

SWOOSH!

The Abyss Ancient Sword was extremely fast like a streak of black light. It formed an arc in the air and flew through the Universal Sword Technique’s circle of the sword Qi. Then it stabbed towards the center of Lu Fantian’s back.

Zhang Ruochen’s arms glowed with blue light.

The Blue Genuine Qi ran rapidly through his meridians and into his Qi Sea. It collected into his thumbs.

Two sword waves flew out of his thumbs.

Lu Fantian knew that Zhang Ruochen had reached Heart Integrated into Sword. He was not surprised at all when Zhang Ruochen displayed his Sword Defending Technique.

He remained calm and sped up his pace.

BOOM!

He used the Universal Sword Technique to crush Zhang Rouchen’s two sword waves. He swung his arm. He struck out a sword radiance and chopped down at Zhang Ruochen’s neck.

He attacked to defend.

As long as he forced Zhang Ruochen to defend passively, the Sword Defending Technique would lose its effectiveness.

Although Lu Fantian's sword technique had not reached Heart Integrated into Sword, it had reached the Peak of Sword Following the Heart.

“Boundless Universe, and a sword goes to the gods.”

The third swordsmanship of the Universal Sword Technique had overwhelming power. The sword Qi was as cold as ice that had been frozen for 10,000 years. The sword radiance was more dazzling than the burning sun.

“What a powerful sword attack,” Zhang Ruochen secretly praised.

If Zhang Ruochen had not regulated the power of his Martial Soul, he would not have been able to fend off the attack.

“Nice! The Body of Sacred Tree deserves its reputation.”

Zhang Ruochen took the Abyss Ancient Sword back and laughed loudly. He displayed the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon, moving his feet constantly. He kept dodging and attacking like a roaming Divine Dragon. He wanted to break Lu Fantian's Universal Sword Technique with ingenious force.

Many dragon-shaped illusory images appeared on the platform of the Heaven Stage. They were shuttling back and forth within the sword Qi.

Lu Fantian asked, “Zhang Ruochen, why have you still not released your Martial Soul?”

“Almost,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Lu Fantian was confused. “What?”

“You haven't shown your full strength yet. I will release my Martial Soul when you show your last card.” Although Zhang Ruochen had gone through a dreadful experience, he still had not regulated his Martial Soul.

Lu Fantian could not force him to display his Martial Soul with his current strength.

“As you wish.”

He ran his Genuine Qi. Lu Fantian's long hair stood up straight on his head. Like a Demon Lord, he shouted loudly,

“Martial Soul Combined Sword.”

The Sacred Tree Martial Soul that had been standing above Lu Fantian, turned into a soul shadow. It flew to his front and merged with the Gold Wire Sword.

SWOOSH—

The Gold Wire Sword emitted golden light. It formed an illusory image of a huge, four-meter sword. The shadow of the giant sword wrapped around the blade.

The Gold Wire Sword seemed to have produced its own spirituality. It was rapidly absorbing the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi.

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes, staring at Lu Fantian’s sword. “That’s... That’s...”

Zhang Ruochen had thought that Lu Fantian’s sword was only an eleventh-level Genuine Martial Arms. When he opened his Skyeye, he saw clearly that it was a wooden sword.

It was a wooden sword made from the Sacred Prime Tree.

The gold silk on the sword was not embedded, it was the meridians of the Sacred Prime Tree.

It must be understood that the Sacred Prime tree had been cut in the Middle Ancient Times.

According to legend, each vessel made from the Sacred Prime Tree contained spirituality. These vessels could absorb Spiritual Qi and improve themselves automatically. They could even feed Spiritual Qi back to their owner.

Any vessel made from the Sacred Tree was a priceless treasure. Ordinary Genuine Martial Arms were no comparison.

In other words, Lu Fantian’s Sacred Wood Sword could improve itself. If it was able to absorb enough wood-natured Qi of Origin, it would have the opportunity to become a Holy Sword.

Other people’s Martial Souls certainly could not be integrated with the Sacred Wood Sword, but what Lu Fantian practiced was the Sacred Tree Martial Soul.

The integration of the Sacred Tree Martial Soul and the Sacred Wood Sword could increase its power. It could absorb the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. It pushed the power of the Sacred Wood Sword to the extreme.

Zhang Ruochen immediately released his Martial Soul and regulated the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi to gather toward him.

His strength increased quickly. He grabbed the Abyss Ancient Sword and ran Genuine Qi to activate the inscription on the sword. He met the battle head-on.

He had to do his best and have a real fight with Lu Fantianin.

BOOM!

The two swords intersected, like two strikes of lightning struck together.

Lu Fantian trembled. He could not withstand the power. He took a step back.

“My Martial Soul is very strong, but... Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul is actually stronger than mine.”

Lu Fantian felt that the Sacred Wood Sphere seemed to be broken.

BOOM!

BOOM!

Zhang Ruochen displayed 11 moves in a row. The power was stronger and stronger. When he applied the eleventh sword, Lu Fantian was pushed to the edge of the Coliseum.

SWOOSH! Sword radiance flashed.

The Abyss Ancient Sword pointed at Lu Fantian’s neck. It reached just above his throat. If Zhang Ruochen exerted his force slightly, he could chop Lu Fantian’s head off.

Lu Fantian clenched his teeth. His eyes showed disbelief. He stared at Zhang Ruochen opposite him. “This... This is your real strength...”

Zhang Ruochen retracted his sword. “I used all my strength. I really respect you.”

Lu Fantian said in a self-deprecating tone, “If we had fought three days ago... At that time, I hadn’t refined the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, I wouldn’t have lasted three moves. No wonder you didn’t want to fight with me.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “That is not necessarily true. My sword technique had also not reached its current level three days ago.”

Why did Zhang Ruchen say that?

Lu Fantian stared at Zhang Ruochen with slight confusion. He did not ask any further questions. He could only guess that Zhang Ruochen had some kind of adventure in the last three days.

Zhang Ruochen’s sword technique was indeed brilliant and intimidating.

Lu Fantian had never admired anybody. But today, he had really been conquered by Zhang Ruochen’s sword technique.

I will remember today’s defeat. We will surely have another chance to fight in the future.”

Lu Fantian walked down the Coliseum.

Although he admired Zhang Ruochen’s attainments of sword technique, he could not admit defeat. If he could reach the Completion of Heaven Realm, he would surely defeat Zhang Ruochen.

How could he reach the Completion of the Heaven Realm in a short time?

The Battlefield of the Primitive World!

Lu Fantian decided to go to the Battlefield of the Primitive World to experience life and death. Only by continuing to fight, could his fighting skills and will to fight improve further. In the future, he would overcome Zhang Ruochen.

The Purple-gowned Elder on the Heaven Stage Coliseum nodded his head. He announced with a smile, “Zhang

Ruochen, from the School of the Martial Market defeated Lu Fantian from the Sword Sanctum. He is now 5,800th on the Heaven Board and has acquired 287,000 military merits.”

“He defeated Lu Fantian in a mere 11 moves. The name of the young king really deserves its reputation,” a big bald fellow laughed loudly. He was becoming more and more interested in Zhang Ruochen.

“Lu Fantian only ranked 5,800th on the Heaven Board. Even if Zhang Ruochen defeated him, it’s not a big deal.” The masked woman sneered.

The bald guy spared a glance at her. “Lu Fantian’s strength is absolutely not as simple as being ranked 5800th. If he had not encountered Zhang Ruochen, with his strength, he would certainly have been able to enter the top 2000 on the Heaven Board, even higher. Moreover, Lu Fantian’s cultivation is only at the Final State of the Heaven Realm. There is still a large space for him to improve.”

“Really? Then I’ll have a try and see how powerful Zhang Ruochen is.”

She flew down. The masked woman stood in the Heavenly Ring, opposite to Zhang Ruochen, in a flash.

Many martial arts masters were present, but few of them could see her bodily movement clearly.

Several young geniuses who had been sitting next to her were surprised. They suddenly realized that a great master had sat by their sides.

“What an awesome woman. The bodily movement she displayed is out of my reach. Who on earth is she? Is she also a master on the Heaven Board?”

“Surely she is a master on the Heaven Board. Otherwise how could she challenge Zhang Ruochen?”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the masked woman. He had a sudden familiar feeling. He was sure he had met her before.

He regulated his powerful Spiritual Power to observe the woman. After a few moments, he had a ready answer. “It’s

you.”

“You can see through me?” She asked.

“Your camouflage is flawless,” he replied. “Even warriors in the Fish-dragon Realm cannot see through your real identity. However, you can’t hide from me.”

He called out her name, “The God’s favored daughter of the Black Market Excellence Hall, Orange Star Emissary. Am I right?”

The Orange Star Emissary had not made much contact with Zhang Ruochen. She had only met him a few times, and each time she had been clad in a veil.

It was impossible for Zhang Ruochen to see through her true body. Unless his Spiritual Power had reached 41st level.

BOOM!

When Zhang Ruochen called out the masked woman’s name, everyone in the Coliseum of the Martial Market was shocked. They all exclaimed.

It was known to all that the Martial Market Bank and the Black Market were old enemies. They had been fighting both with open and secret means for many years. Their grievances were extremely deep. Who could think of that an Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall dared to enter the territory of the Martial Market Bank?

Chapter 460 - Orange Star Emissary

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“What? Is she really one of the Seven Star Emissaries of the Black Market Excellence Hall, the Orange Star Emissary?”

“It is said that the Seven Star Emissaries are top geniuses in the Black Market Excellence Hall. They are just as strong as Saintly Beings and are extraordinary figures.”

“The Orange Star Emissary is about the same age as Lu Fantian. She is 25 years old this year. However, she ranks much higher than Lu Fantian on the Heaven Board. She is 643rd.”

“The Orange Star Emissary can enter the top 1000 on the Heaven Board at such young age. I’m afraid she’ll be able to hit the top ten on the Heaven Board in the future.”

Although young warriors of the Black Market and the heresy could not enter the Coliseum of the Martial Market to fight in just ways, they could still enter the Battlefield of the Primitive World and accumulate military merits. In this way they could also be on the Heaven Board.

Of course, there were also Evil Warriors who disdained being on the Heaven Board.

The way they proved their strength was simple. They defeated famous masters on the Heaven Board.

Di Yi was one such warrior. Although he was not a master on the Earth Board, he had defeated the top ranking Bu Qianfan with only three sword movements. He had been famous ever since.

The masked woman made no effort to disguise her identity. She said, “Yes, I am indeed the Orange Star Emissary.”

Hearing that, a group of warriors dressed in black armor rushed in from outside the Coliseum. They surrounded the Heavenly Ring.

People from the Black Market were not allowed in the Coliseum of the Martial Market. They certainly would not let her just leave.

The Orange Star Emissary spared a glance at the warriors below. She sneered. “Huh? Is the Martial Market Bank so afraid that if I defeat Zhang Ruochen, the Saint of the Saint Academy, I will dishonor them? They can hardly wait to catch me.”

Xie Yun’an, a Purple Robe Elder, crossed his hands behind his back and walked out of the group of warriors. He stood below the Heavenly Ring with a smile. “Haha! The Orange Star Emissary’s gracious presence in the Coliseum of the Martial Market must be warmly welcomed. Do you plan to stay today?”

As a Purple Robe Elder, Xie Yun’an’s cultivation had to be unfathomable. He had a very high status in the Martial Market Bank and was specially in charge of keeping order in the Heavenly Ring.

Catching an Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall was a great piece of work. Xie Yun’an would never let such an opportunity slip away.

“You? You are ineligible to decide whether I should stay or leave.”

The Orange Star Emissary spared a disdainful glance at Xie Yun’an. Then, she ignored him and looked at Zhang Ruochen. “How about we make a bet?”

“What?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The Orange Star Emissary replied, “We have a fair fight. If I win, you let me go. If you win, I will fold my hands for capture and be at your disposal. What do you think?”

Xie Yun'an, who stood below the Heavenly Ring, sneered. "Today, it is me, not him, that will determine your destiny!"

The Orange Star Emissary replied, "Zhang Ruochen is number one in the Saint Academy. He is likely to become the headmaster's disciple, and even the young headmaster of the School of the Martial Market. You are just a Purple Robe Elder. Yet you dare to look down upon him. I have to say that you're future at the Martial Market Bank is going to be in jeopardy!"

Xie Yun'an's expression changed. He pondered carefully about what was at stake.

His current position as a Purple Robe Elder was indeed more honorable than Zhang Ruochen's identity as Saint. But Zhang Ruochen was not an ordinary Saint, he was top among all the Saints.

Almost every number one Saint would become the headmaster's disciple.

The identity of headmaster's disciple was much honorable than Purple Robe Elder. They were not on the same level.

As the Orange Star Emissary said, if he offended Zhang Ruochen, he would certainly have hard time ahead of him in the Martial Market Bank.

"How dare you, evil woman of the Black Market," Xie Yun'an said harshly. "When did I belittle Brother Zhang? He is a Saint of the Saint Academy, one of the Six Great Kings of the young generation in the Eastern Region, and the pride of our Martial Market Bank. I have always admired him. Today, I finally get to see him in person. Brother Zhang, this evil woman of the Black Market dares to challenge you, how should I deal with her?"

Seeing Xie Yun'an's face, the Orange Star Emissary gave a pleasant smile. Yet there was disdainful expression in her eyes.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Since she has already ascended the Heavenly Ring, she is a challenger. I would like to have a fair fight with her."

The Orange Star Emissary could not help looking at him with respect. “You really want to have a fair fight with me? Since it’s a fair fight, is our bet still on?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “If you win, I will let you leave.”

“You have a lot of guts,” said the Orange Star Emissary.

Without warning, she flew from the ground and leapt forward in one step. She stood before Zhang Ruochen.

She pinched her two fingers into a sword skill and stabbed toward his neck.

She was very fast; beyond the discernibility of the naked eye.

Just when she thought she was about to succeed, she suddenly discovered that her two fingers seemed to have hit an iron wall.

She felt extreme pain in her fingers, and the bones felt like they were broken.

The Orange Star Emissary fixed her eyes. She did not know when Zhang Ruochen had stretched out a palm to block her two fingers. His palm was covered with golden Dragon Scales.

“His reaction is so fast. And he is very powerful. He can withstand my attack without even moving his body. He is so strong that even Lu Fantian could only withstand 11 moves.”

Only after fighting with Zhang Ruochen could she understand how horrible his cultivation really was. It was far beyond her imagination.

She quickly put away the contempt in her heart and mobilized Genuine Qi to the extreme. She wanted to fight Zhang Ruochen with all her strength.

However, he was faster than her. He struck out a handprint first.

The palm power, like a flood without break, poured down and buried her.

“Devil Moon in the Sky.”

She put her hands together. Her Martial Soul mobilized the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. Above her head, it condensed into a black full moon.

The full moon was gloomy and filled with Absorbing Qi. It absorbed his palm power, making it invisible.

He laughed loudly. “What you have practiced is the Moon Picture of Demons in the Omen Lithograph. It can absorb the quintessence of the moon and refine it into your body, and then you can practice into an Acquired Yin Moon body. No wonder you can fight against a Saintly Being.”

“No, you’re wrong. I was born a Lunar Body. It’s not acquired.” The Orange Star Emissary snorted coldly.

Practicing the Moon Picture of Demons, one could absorb the quintessence of the moon and then practice into a Lunar Body. However, it would be an Acquired Yin Moon body.

The Orange Star Emissary had an Innate Lunar Body. It was much more powerful.

The Moon Picture of Demons itself was an extraordinary exercise, at the same level as the Picture of Omen’s Congential Magic Qi that Di Yi practiced. Together with her Innate Lunar Body, the strength she exposed was certainly unusual.

“Even if you are an Innate Lunar Body, I will defeat you.”

Zhang Ruochen pulled out the Abyss Ancient Sword and quickly spun his arm. He stabbed it toward her chest from a very tricky angle.

The Orange Star Emissary immediately controlled the black devil moon to fend off his sword movement.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen’s sword movement staggered. He struck out a backhand and chopped toward Orange Star Emissary’s neck behind.

Her expression changed. He quickly dodged.

Zhang Ruochen’s sword attacked like a shadow following its form. He broke her devil moon.

SWOOSH!

When he applied his tenth movement, he left her with three bloody sword marks. The tip of his sword landed on her glabella.

The Orange Star Emissary's ten fingers kept emitting evil energy. She did not admit defeat. She wanted to continue fighting.

"If you strike out, you will die," Zhang Ruoyun said softly.

His tone seemed to be calm, however it gave people an unquestionable feeling. It made the Orange Star Emissary tremble in her mind. She felt the resolute will in his words.

She did not dare to gamble. She sighed and gradually withdrew the evil energy in her hands. Her eyes were dimmed. "I only fended off ten movements, one move less than Lu Fantian. I looked down on you!"

When Zhang Ruochen defeated Lu Fantian in 11 movements, the Orange Star Emissary had not been impressed. She didn't think he was powerful. She just thought that Lu Fantian did not deserve his fame.

However, now that she had personally confronted him, she knew how powerful his sword techniques actually were. His sword technique and realm were not something that a young warrior should have and reach.

It was not because Lu Fantian was not powerful enough, but because Zhang Ruochen was too incredible.

Chapter 461 - Condition

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“I’ve failed!”

When the Orange Star Emissary uttered these words, the whole Coliseum of the Martial Market stirred up again.

“Zhang Ruochen, the king of the new generation, really lives up to his reputation. He defeated Lu Fantian in 11 moves and an Emissary of Black Market Excellence Hall in 10.”

“He’s too strong! The two battles will surely be published in the next issue of the

Eastern Region Report

.”

At that moment, someone remembered the bet Zhang Ruochen and the Orange Star Emissary had made before the battle.

Duanmu Xingling stood up with a smile. “Orange Star Emissary, you said that if you’re defeated by Zhang Ruochen, you would be at his disposal. Are you going to keep your word?”

The Orange Star Emissary took a long hard look at Duanmu Xingling. “I did say this. I won’t go back on my words.”

Everybody was curious about how Zhang Ruochen would dispose of the Orange Star Emissary.

After all, it was a great merit to catch an Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall. The Martial Market Bank and the Saint Academy would award huge prizes.

It was assumed that Zhang Ruochen would send the Orange Star Emissary to the Law Enforcement Hall of the Martial

Market Bank and exchange her for merits.

TAP! TAP!

Just then, a loud noise came from outside the Coliseum.

A group of officers and soldiers in armor and tabard rushed in from outside.

They lined up in two columns. All had reached the Heaven Realm. Each had a strong murderous feeling.

A stout wild man walked out from the center of the two columns, with his hands clasped behind his back.

His eyes radiated vigor. He had a straight nose and prominent cheekbones. His facial features were as if they had been split and chiseled by knife and ax. He was very masculine.

It's Bu Qianfan, one of the Six Great Kings of the new generation.

"How can the sergeant of Tianwei Camp come to the Coliseum of the Martial Market?" A young handsome man glanced at the two lines of sergeants and immediately recognized their identities.

Tianwei Camp of the Ministry of War. Its name reverberated like thunder.

"Don't you see that person walking in the forefront? He wears the Head of a Hundred Bannermen's Silverfish Treasure Armor. He has an extraordinary temperament. He's barely reached the age of 20."

"Only Bu Qianfan could become the Head of a Hundred Bannermen of Tianwei Camp at 20 years old."

"What? Bu Qianfan."

"Probably, Bu Qianfan has come to the Coliseum of the Martial Market looking for Zhang Ruochen. How interesting! Both of them are kings of the new generation. A fight between them would surely be awesome."

"In fact, Zhang Ruochen and Bu Qianfan have fought before on the Stairway to Heaven. Only at the time, they didn't use their full strength, so the winner wasn't identified."

All the warriors present were excited. They were eager to watch a battle between Zhang Ruochen and Bu Qianfan.

Some young warriors admired Zhang Ruochen, while others worshiped Bu Qianfan, the young God of War.

Zhang Ruochen also saw Bu Qianfan come in. He quickly took out his sword and hit vital a point on the Orange Star Emissary's nine Meridian acupoints to freeze her.

Although the Orange Star Emissary could not move, she showed a strange look when she noticed Bu Qianfan. Her eyes were squinted so tightly they nearly shut.

Bu Qianfan looked first at the Orange Star Emissary, then at Zhang Ruochen. "Zhang Ruochen, can I talk to you privately?"

Zhang Ruochen had an amazing observation ability. He was aware of the strangeness in Bu Qianfan's stare.

Zhang Ruochen had a hunch that Bu Qianfan's visit to the Coliseum had something to do with the Orange Star Emissary, rather than to challenge him.

"Of course."

Zhang Ruochen nodded and stepped off the Coliseum.

Bu Qianfan took the initiative to walk up to him. A powerful Genuine Qi released from his body and formed a spherical domain enveloping the two men.

He transmitted sound with sound waves. He secretly said, "Zhang Ruochen, I'd like to save the Orange Star Emissary. What are your conditions? Just tell me."

It was true.

Zhang Ruochen was not surprised. He looked Bu Qianfan in the eye. "Why?"

Bu Qianfan mused for a moment, there was a tenderness in his eyes. "Don't you want to know why I was defeated by Di Yi? It's because of her. She's a flaw in my heart."

"It turns out it was for a woman."

Zhang Ruochen smiled, but he did not know whether he was laughing at Bu Qianfan or himself.

As the old saying goes, the hero is saddened by beauty!

Even Bu Qianfan, a strong-willed lion-hearted warrior, could be trapped in love.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Okay! I can spare her life, but I have a condition."

"What's your condition?" Bu Qianfan asked.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Source of Spiritual Fire, one of the Five Elements Spirit Treasures. If you bring it to me, I'll give her to you."

Zhang Ruochen had already obtained three of the Five Elements Spirit Treasures. With the addition of the Bloody Saint-cultivating Soil mastered by Duanmu Xingling, he only lacked the Source of Spiritual Fire.

Saint Bu Gentry had obtained the right to manage the Five Elements Primitive World. Bu Qianfan could certainly collect a large amount of the Source of Spiritual Fire. With his status, it would not be difficult.

Therefore, this condition put forward by Zhang Ruochen was not excessive.

Killing the Orange Star Emissary would bring Zhang Ruochen a few rewards at best. Those rewards were unlikely to be as precious as the Source of Spiritual Fire.

Moreover, with her status in the Black Market, there was sure to be a great power behind the Orange Star Emissary.

To kill her would mean offending that power. They would definitely eliminate him at all costs.

Since Bu Qianfan had volunteered to ask him, Zhang Ruochen did not mind doing him a favor at a small cost.

"How straightforward!"

Bu Qianfan breathed a sigh of relief. "I owe you a favor. In the future, if you need any help, please come to the Tianwei Camp of the Ministry of War to find me."

Having said this, Bu Qianfan recovered his Genuine Qi and took the sergeants of Tianwei Camp to turn and leave the Coliseum.

The Orange Star Emissary was Bu Qianfan's Martial Arts flaw. She was irreplaceable to him.

If Zhang Ruochen had asked him to exchange all Five Elements Spirit Treasures, he certainly would have not frowned, never mind one Source of Spiritual Fire.

If Zhang Ruochen had refused to release the Orange Star Emissary, Bu Qianfan would definitely have used force to take her.

“What happened? Why has Bu Qianfan left?”

“I can't believe Bu Qianfan left after saying a few words to Zhang Ruochen. This isn't his style.”

“What exactly did they talk about?”

Everyone was very curious about what had happened.

They had used sound wave, so no one had heard their conversation.

Xie Yun'an came over and stood beside Zhang Ruochen.

“Brother Zhang, do you want to put the Orange Star Emissary into the Deadlock of the Law Enforcement Hall now?”

Although the Orange Star Emissary had been caught by Zhang Ruochen, they were in the Coliseum of the Martial Market, within Xie Yun'an's jurisdiction. If the Orange Star Emissary was sent to the Law Enforcement Hall, Xie Yun'an would share the merits.

It was precisely because of this that he was extremely eager to behead the Orange Star Emissary.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Xie Yun'an. “Why should I put her into the Deadlock? I caught her, she's at my disposal.”

“This...”

Xie Yun'an felt a little awkward and quickly said, “The Orange Star Emissary is an important person. The masters of the Black Market will not let this go easily. It's safer to send

her to the Law Enforcement Hall. If they send someone to rescue her...”

Zhang Ruochen immediately interrupted him, saying, “Say no more. I have my own arrangements.”

He took the Orange Star Emissary to leave the Coliseum of the Martial Market.

Xie Yun’an wanted to stop them, but he dared not offend Zhang Ruochen too much.

A warrior of the Martial Market Bank came over and stood beside Xie Yun’an, whispering, “Elder Xie, what should we do now?”

Xie Yun’an’s eyes were sunken and he revealed a somewhat eccentric smile. “Zhang Ruochen is a hot-blooded young man. Although he’s talented, he is still a man. He must take a fancy to the Orange Star Emissary and have wicked thoughts.”

“An evil woman of the Black Market is extremely cunning. If Zhang Ruochen is tempted by her, she’s likely to escape.” The warrior was worried.

Xie Yun’an nodded and looked dignified. “We must not let that evil woman escape because of Zhang Ruochen’s selfish desire. Go to the Law Enforcement Hall now and ask Master of the Hall to take the woman personally. Only he can suppress Zhang Ruochen. I’ll immediately bring people to the Courier Station of Martial Market, where he lives. We can’t allow that evil woman to escape.”

“Yes, master!”

The warrior immediately jumped onto the back of a beast and whipped it. He rushed out heading toward the Law Enforcement Hall.

“Come with me.”

Xie Yun’an brought dozens of warriors trained by the Law Enforcement Hall. They gathered around Zhang Ruochen and the Orange Star Emissary like an iron bucket, for fear that the evil woman would escape.

Duanmu Xingling also followed, watching from a distance. She was quite puzzled, “What on earth is the matter?”

People thought Zhang Ruochen was not sending the Orange Star Emissary to the Law Enforcement Hall because he coveted her beauty and was stirred with carnal desire.

But, Duanmu Xingling knew better. She knew Zhang Ruochen.

She knew that he was not such a person.

Back at the Courier Station of Martial Market, Zhang Ruochen brought the Orange Star Emissary to his room.

CREAK!

He closed the door and calmly sat on a chair. He glanced at the Orange Star Emissary and placed his finger in a random spot to unlock one Meridian seal.

The Orange Star Emissary regained feeling in her four limbs. She flexed her wrists and went to the window. She sneered. “What did he promise you?”

Chapter 462 - A Man Infatuated

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“You think you have the right to know? It’s a deal between Bu Qianfan and me. You just need to stay here.”

Zhang Ruochen paid no attention to the Orange Star Emissary. He put his hands together to practice the Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Empyrean as if he was alone.

“Hmm! You can defeat me, but you can’t detain me.”

In an attempt to escape from the room, the Orange Star Emissary mobilized her Genuine Qi and displayed a bodily movement.

“Uh!”

But, when she began to run her Genuine Qi, she felt a deep chest pain.

The Genuine Qi inside began to reflux.

The Orange Star Emissary was in a lot of pain. She clutched her chest, sat on the ground, and breathed heavily.

Zhang Ruochen did not open his eyes. “I’ve sealed your nine Meridians. I only released one of them. You can’t run Genuine Qi now. Otherwise, you’ll suffer a backfire.”

The Orange Star Emissary tightened her fingers and stared at him coldly. Her eyes were full of resentment.

At dusk, the sun was about to set.

Bu Qianfan came to the Courier Station of Martial Market with Source of Spiritual Fire and delivered it to Zhang

Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen held the Source of Spiritual Fire and examined it. When he was finished, he covered the box, saying, "You can leave!"

This was simply a transaction. Zhang Ruochen did not stand on ceremony with Bu Qianfan. Each took what he needed.

Since Bu Qianfan had come to save someone, he had to be well-prepared for everything. There had to be a way for him to take the Orange Star Emissary away.

As for Xie Yun'an outside and the warriors from the Law Enforcement Hall, they were not as strong as Bu Qianfan and the Orange Star Emissary. They could not keep them there.

"Thank you again."

Bu Qianfan clasped his hands together to salute Zhang Ruochen.

He took a golden metal mask from his sleeve and placed it over his face, showing only his eyes. He took the Orange Star Emissary and displayed a bodily movement to fly out.

The metal mask on his face was very similar to the one Di Yi wore.

"He really is infatuated. It seems that his martial flaw still exists. As long as there's such a flaw, he'll never be well-matched with Di Yi." Zhang Ruochen shook his head and sighed.

RUMBLE!

There was a fierce fight happening outside.

It didn't last long. Xie Yun'an and a group of wounded warriors rushed in and appeared before Zhang Ruochen.

Xie Yun'an's eyes were red. He was very angry. "Zhang Ruochen, was the Orange Star Emissary rescued?"

On his chest, there were three crimson gashes. The wounds were so deep that his white ribs could be seen.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the stone bench in the courtyard and responded calmly, “You’ve been hurt by the Orange Star Emissary’s Hell Ghost King Claw. Obviously, she has run away.”

Just glancing at it briefly, Zhang Ruochen could see that Xie Yun’an had been wounded by the Hell Ghost King Claw.

“Why? Why did you let her go?” Xie Yun’an yelled, holding his hands tightly.

Zhang Ruochen looked at him and said casually, “I didn’t let her go. She was rescued. Besides, you, someone who has reached the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, and a large number of warriors from the Law Enforcement Hall, can’t stop her. Is it that odd that she ran away from me?”

Xie Yun’an looked at the scars on chest and said angrily, “If it weren’t for Di Yi, I wouldn’t have been hurt by her.”

Zhang Ruochen feigned ignorance, saying, “How do you know that it was Di Yi?”

“He wore a metal mask and displayed the Hades Sword Skill, the Black Market’s unique skill. Who but he would do that?” Xie Yun’an said.

Zhang Ruochen knew the masked man had been Bu Qianfan, not Di Yi.

Of course, he did not reveal that.

A warrior who had attained the Completion of the Earth Realm quickly stepped in from the outside. He got down on one knee in front of Xie Yun’an. “Elder, Law Enforcement Master is arriving!”

Xie Yun’an’s expression changed.

If the Orange Star Emissary had not escaped, he would have been awarded when Law Enforcement Master came, for rendering outstanding service.

Now, the Orange Star Emissary had fled, and Xie Yun’an would be guilty of a dereliction of duty.

He would have no merit, rather he would be in trouble.

A moment later, Shen Fengtian, Master of the Law Enforcement Hall, dressed in a dark black robe, walked in imposingly from the outside.

“Master of the Hall!” Xie Yun’an immediately bowed to him.

Because of the fear in his heart, Xie Yun’an’s face was drenched in sweat and his eyebrows were soaked.

A Law Enforcement Hall was set by the Martial Market Bank in each district. Shen Fengtian was the Master of the Law Enforcement Hall in the Seventh District.

Both the Law Enforcement Hall and the School of the Martial Market belonged to the Martial Market Bank.

The School of the Martial Market trained qualified talents for the Martial Market Bank. Its training was conducted in the Outer Palace, the Outer Palace, and the Saint Academy. It carried out cultivation from childhood and had a perfect teaching system.

Those who could graduate from the Saint Academy would become high-ranking officials in the Martial Market Bank. They would have superior rights and a lot of resources.

The Law Enforcement Hall recruited talents for the School of the Martial Market.

In terms of talent, the entrance requirements for the Law Enforcement Hall were lower than that of the School of the Martial Market.

Any extraordinary warrior had a chance to enter the Law Enforcement Hall.

People in the Law Enforcement Hall had not been trained since childhood. Most developed profound martial cultivation before joining the Martial Market Bank.

The other people were not admitted into the Saint Academy for lack of exceptional talent. Thus, they had to join the Law Enforcement Hall.

Therefore, the Martial Market Bank laid more emphasis on the School of the Martial Market and input plenty of resources to it.

Certainly, warriors from the Law Enforcement Hall also had great rights. The Martial Market Bank assigned many shady things to them.

Shen Fengtian's face had a scar and a cold draught of air encircled his body. He glanced at Xie Yun'an. In a cold voice, without any emotional turmoil, he said, "Where is the Orange Star Emissary?"

Xie Yun'an shook and knelt down on the ground with a loud sound. "She... she has run away. Please spare my life, spare my life, Master of the Hall... It's none of my business. She was released by Zhang Ruochen."

Shen Fengtian's eyes turned green and he looked at Zhang Ruochen. He said, "Did you release the Orange Star Emissary?"

Xie Yun'an, who had reached the Fish-dragon Realm, was frightened to kneel down in front of Shen Fengtian. Shen Fengtian was a very powerful figure.

Zhang Ruochen on the other hand was fearless. He said calmly. "Of course not. The Orange Star Emissary was rescued by Di Yi. Elder Xie just said the same to me personally."

Shen Fengtian knit his brows and immediately turned back. He stared at Xie Yun'an, saying, "Did Di Yi come here?"

"Yes. He rescued the Orange Star Emissary," Xie Yun'an said. "I'm sure that it must have been him."

BAM!

Shen Fengtian flung up his arms and struck Xie Yun'an. Xie Yun'an was flung back and slammed against a stone wall.

"Crap, how dare you release both the Emissary and the young master of Black Market Excellence Hall!? I'll fix you when I return."

Although Shen Fengtian was yelling at Xie Yun'an, his eyes were fixed on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen stared fearlessly at Shen Fengtian, with a smile on his face.

Shen Fengtian snorted and swung his sleeves. He left to chase Di Yi and the Orange Star Emissary.

If he could get them, he would gain great merit.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the stone wall in the distance. Xie Yun'an climbed out from a pile of stones. He spat blood and glared at Zhang Ruochen. Then, he left.

The air was cold and there was a bright moon in the sky.

As if nothing had happened, Zhang Ruochen held the Abyss Ancient Sword and practiced Sacred Guiding Sword in the yard. He practiced and pondered this movement repeatedly, in an attempt to understand its quintessence.

A manor of Saint Bu Gentry in the Seventh District.

The Orange Star Emissary returned to her natural shape. She was dressed in an orange robe and wore a veil. She had a graceful figure and extraordinary temperament.

She stood in the air as if floating on a mass of mist. She looked at Bu Qianfan. "I'll pay you back for saving my life."

SWISH!

Her tender body glittered with brilliance. She flew out of the manor and disappeared into the night.

Bu Qianfan clasped his hands behind him and looked solemn. He glanced in the direction of the Orange Star Emissary's departure and stood still for a long time, as if he had become a sculpture.

"Young master, she is only an evil woman sent by Di Yi to disturb your heart state. If you keep being infatuated with her, you'll be defeated again the next time you meet him." A skinny elder came out of the darkness and spoke in a hoarse voice.

Bu Qianfan exhaled and withdrew his eyes. "I understand."

"Didn't you harden yourself against affection last time you went to the Death Primitive World?" The elder continued.

Bu Qianfan stayed silent for a long time before replying, "Tenth Uncle, I'm going to the Death Primitive World again."

This time, I'll practice for half a year.”

“Young master... You shouldn't be too impulsive,” the elder advised. “The Death Primitive World is very dangerous. If you are careless, you could die. The last time you went there, you were almost...”

Bu Qianfan waved his hand. “I'm not being impulsive. I'm clear about what I'm doing. I not only want to practice the Iron and Blood Martial Classics, but also the Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits. Before breaking through the Fish-dragon Realm, I must accomplish Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits. Only in this way, can I compete with Zhang Ruochen in the future.”

The elder breathed a sigh of relief and said to himself,

“Great! The Young Master isn't infatuated with that evil woman anymore. He's thinking about how to defeat Zhang Ruochen.”

After watching the battle between Zhang Ruochen and the Orange Star Emissary today, Bu Qianfan was worried.

Zhang Ruochen had defeated the Orange Star Emissary in just 10 movements. He needed 100 movements to defeat her.

It meant that Zhang Ruochen was stronger than him.

He could only avoid being defeated by Zhang Rouchen if he practiced harder than him.

Chapter 463 - Fighting With Kong Lanyou Again

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Master of the Hall, I ordered all the masters from the Law Enforcement Hall of the Seventh District to block all passes and city gates and search for them all night. But, we haven’t found them. The Orange Star Emissary and Di Yi have probably escaped.”

Shen Fengtian, the Master of the Law Enforcement Hall, stood in the center of an empty street listening to the report from his subordinates. His face grew more and more solemn.

Shen Fengtian had tracked them through the night with no luck. Both of them had disappeared as if they had evaporated from the world.

“Damn! Di Yi and the Orange Star Emissary are key people from the Black Market. If I caught them, it would definitely bring great merit. I could go to practice in the holy meridian.”

He clenched his teeth. He could not be reconciled, saying, “Someone must have helped them, they couldn’t have left otherwise.”

The warrior got down on one knee. “Master of the Hall, do you mean Zhang Ruochen? Could it be that... he is a Black Market undercover?”

Shen Fengtian certainly did not think that Zhang Ruochen was a Black Market undercover.

To start with, Zhang Ruochen had once defeated Di Yi. It had been a hard hit on the Black Market. He had also thoroughly offended the Black Market.

Secondly, if Zhang Ruochen was a Black Market undercover, he would not have released the Orange Star Emissary openly. It went against his interests.

However, even if Zhang Ruochen was not a member of the Black Market, he should take full responsibility. This matter was related to him.

“Let’s go to the Courier Station of Martial Market. I want to ask him why he released the Orange Star Emissary. If he can’t give me an account, he can hardly absolve himself from blame. Even if he is a Saint.”

Shen Fengtian was furious. He stamped his feet and the flagstone ground below them cracked.

“Master Shen, even if you go to the Courier Station of Martial Market, you can’t do anything to him.” There was a young voice.

Shen Fengtian remained solemn. He looked toward the alley on the left side where the sound had come from. A tall thin figure came out. Gradually, a young and handsome face appeared.

After seeing the young man clearly, Shen Fengtian’s brows lifted slightly. “Xu Hai.”

Xu Hai was a descendant of Saint Xu Gentry, a Saint of the Saint Academy.

Xu Hai bowed to salute.

Both Saint Shen Gentry and Saint Xu Gentry were prestigious rich and powerful families in the Eastern Region. Moreover, they had been on friendly terms for generations and exchanged marriages. Shen Fengtian certainly knew Xu Hai. He was impressed by this nephew.

Shen Fengtian praised Xu Hai, saying, “You’ve made progress in your cultivation. You can show yourself from 33 meters away without a sound.”

Xu Hai replied in a humble way, “Uncle, my cultivation is too far from yours. You were thinking about the Orange Star Emissary and Di Yi, so you didn’t notice me.”

Shen Fengtian said, “You said that I couldn’t do anything to Zhang Ruochen. What do you mean? Is there an incredible individual behind him?”

Xu Hai laughed. “Headmaster Xuanji is ready to accept Zhang Ruochen as his apprentice. Is it appropriate for you to deal with him now?”

“What? Headmaster Xuanji.” Shen Fengtian’s facial expression changed.

Although the Law Enforcement Hall and the School of the Martial Market were relatively independent entities, Shen Fengtian wanted to handle matters without suffering the tempers of High-level from the School of the Martial Market.

However, Headmaster Xuanji was not an ordinary person. He ranked second among the top ten headmasters and was known as a “sword saint”.

Throughout the Eastern Regions, there were only three people who could be called sword saints.

For a superior like Headmaster Xuanji, there were countless superior warriors among his disciples. His seniority was extremely high and he was highly respected. He was not only particularly influential in Martial Market Bank, but also in the entire Eastern Region.

Even if Shen Fengtian was as bold as brass, he dared not to offend him.

Xu Hai said, “The ancestor told me personally. It’s absolutely true. Uncle, don’t force the situation, you should be more patient.”

Shen Fengtian said, “Hmm! So what if Headmaster Xuanji backs him up? As long as I find his vulnerable points, our Law Enforcement Hall can investigate and handle him accordingly.”

“Who doesn’t have a dark past? If we investigate, we’re sure to find something.”

Xu Hai laughed and bowed again. He left promptly after saying goodbye.

Xu Hai didn't think that Shen Fengtian could discover anything new about Zhang Ruochen. However, he was the Law Enforcement Master of the Seventh District. As long as Zhang Ruochen stayed in the Seventh District, he would not live comfortably.

“Zhang Ruochen, you killed my brother. Someday I'll pay you back for this!”

Xu Hai's eyes grew cold, with murderous intent in his pupils.

Over the next seven days, Zhang Ruochen went to the Coliseum of the Martial Market every day. He challenged 227 warriors listed on the Heaven Board.

Most warriors could not force him to display the power of Martial Soul. He mostly worked on perceiving sword comprehension.

Only four masters were able to force him to display his Martial Soul. Unfortunately for them, they all were defeated in three moves.

For half a month, no one on the Heaven Board could last more than 10 movements when he fought with them.

Word eventually spread in the Seventh District, “Only an outstanding figure can last ten movements from Zhang Ruochen.”

When the news spread, countless young masters came to challenge him, including students from the Saint Academy and the Royal Academy.

Those who challenged Zhang Ruochen lined up and registered in the Coliseum of the Martial Market. Many people came not to defeat him but to withstand more movements.

In the following days, Zhang Ruochen fought nearly a hundred times every day. Of course, most people could not force him to use all his strength. He was still working on perceiving sword comprehension.

During the day, Zhang Ruochen fought like crazy and practiced his sword technique. In the evening, he practiced

hard in the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel to improve his cultivation.

Half a month passed very quickly.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly perceive that his strength had improved considerably. Compared to half a month ago, it seemed he had changed a lot and reached a new level.

He had replaced the Orange Star Emissary and now ranked 643rd on the Heaven Board.

“The Saint Academy opens tomorrow. I’ll be an official Saint. My swordsmanship has improved so much over the last two weeks. I’m ready to fight with Kong Lanyou. Tonight.”

Zhang Ruochen did not care about the Half-Saint mansion he could win from Kong Lanyou. He was more concerned about his cultivation. Kong Lanyou’s swordsmanship was the only way he could test if his sword technique had improved.

Zhang Ruochen went to the Half-saint mansion together with Nie Honglou.

Nie Honglou stood outside and Zhang Ruochen went into the bamboo forest alone.

Kong Lanyou still sat in the Bamboo Pavilion. Her white hair trailed along the floor. She held a yellowing xiao, a vertical bamboo flute. Her beautiful eyes were fixed on a brook nearby.

Upon hearing footsteps behind her, an emotional fluctuation appeared in her eyes. Without turning, she already knew who it was.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’re finally here.” Her voice sounded so nice, like water flowing over stones. Listening to her was delightful.

He stopped and stood 33 meters away. “Over the last two weeks, many people came to challenge me to test their swordsmanship. Now, I come to challenge you to test my swordsmanship.”

Kong Lanyou’s lips were bright red. The corners of her mouth curled up slightly. “If you can withstand my sword strikes

three times, I'll buy you a delicious drink. Of course, it depends on your ability.”

SWISH!

She shook her body and flew out of the Bamboo Pavilion, with her vertical bamboo flute in hand. She mobilized her Genuine Qi and quickly pointed to Zhang Ruochen's left temple.

She flew 30 meters and stood before Zhang Ruochen.

It seemed that the vertical bamboo flute was sharper than a sword.

She controlled her cultivation at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, three realms lower than Zhang Ruochen. Moreover, what she displayed was still Sacred Guiding Sword, the first movement of Sacred Sword Skill.

Zhang Ruochen had already released Spiritual Power. He observed Kong Lanyou every moment. Every time Kong Lanyou displayed sword movement, he had already conceived a solution to the problem.

However, struck by the vertical bamboo flute, Zhang Ruochen was still disturbed. He could not display his strength.

Seeing he would be beaten in one strike, Zhang Ruochen suddenly kicked up his heels and took the initiative to slam into her.

“Sacred Guiding Sword! ”

Zhang Ruochen put two fingers together and used them as a sword to hit Kong Lanyou's right wrist.

“You've progressed considerably! Unfortunately, your movements are useless against me.”

Kong Lanyou moved swiftly out of sight.

Zhang Ruochen was suddenly overwhelmed with a strong sense of crisis. All his hair stood on end. Without hesitation, he turned and waved his arms to slash the figure above him.

His arm was like a sword.

“The second movement, Sacred Plenilune Sword.”

Kong Lanyou cut down with the vertical bamboo flute. It collided with Zhang Ruochen's arms and uttered a loud blast of Genuine Qi.

Zhang Ruochen thought to himself,

“This is really dangerous. If I was just a little bit later, her vertical bamboo flute would have hit me in the head.”

Because Kong Lanyou's cultivation was controlled at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, it was her who was thrown out after one bout.

She defused his power skillfully. She fell to the ground. With a hint of surprise, she said, “Your strain capacity has improved a lot. You have a good comprehension ability.”

Actually, Kong Lanyou was extremely shocked. When she was his age, she had been inferior to Zhang Ruochen, both in sword technique and strain capacity.

“If my cousin was still alive, he would likely be a bit better than Zhang Ruochen at this age,”

Kong Lanyou thought.

In her mind, her cousin, who had lived eight hundred years ago, was the most amazing young talent, and no one could surpass him.

“The third movement, Sacred Wave Sword.”

PHHF!

Kong Lanyou swung her arms in the air. Motivated by her Genuine Qi, all the bamboo leaves from the ground flew up and swirled in the air.

Chapter 464 - Blue Sky Herb

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Kong Lanyou rotated the vertical bamboo flute in her hands and stirred up a circle of Genuine Qi waves. She shook her arms and swung them quickly.

The bamboo leaves resembled flying swords. They flew toward Zhang Ruochen like drops of water.

WOO!

In Zhang Ruochen's eyes, they were not bamboo leaves but people with swords in hand. Like thousands upon thousands of horses and soldiers, they were murderous and mighty, uttering earsplitting whistles.

Kong Lanyou's swordsmanship was extremely powerful. She forced him to retreat back constantly.

"No, I can't retreat. My cultivation is higher than her and my strength is stronger than her. Why can't I fight with all my strength?"

Zhang Ruochen sank his legs and his feet stepped into the ground seven centimeters deep. He stopped retreating and held his sword with both hands, ready to slash.

Soul-repose Shadowing, one of the Thirteen Sword Techniques of Soul Chasing.

This sword technique was very powerful and overwhelming. The bamboo leaves were forced apart on both sides. Many were destroyed by sword Qi and turned into fine powder.

BANG! BANG!

Even so, there were still seven bamboo leaves. Under the control of Kong Lanyou's Genuine Qi, they cut through his Celestial Bodyshield, leaving seven wounds.

The wounds were small. The bamboo leaves were only a centimeter deep into the flesh at most. They were not vital wounds.

Kong Lanyou uttered a light "eh" and showed surprise in her eyes. "You can open up Chakras. This gets more and more interesting!"

The so-called "Chakras", one of the extra meridians, was hidden in a warrior's skin.

If a warrior practiced for a year, an extra layer of skin would grow. Thus, his defensive power would also increase. The way a warrior's skin grew was kind of like growth rings inside a tree.

Zhang Ruochen had opened up the Chakras, so the wounds from the bamboo leaves did not go deep.

Of course, if Zhang Ruochen used the Dragon Pearl's Divine Dragon Strength, he could ward off the bamboo leaves entirely without injury. But then, the battle between Kong Lanyou and him would be meaningless.

She controlled her cultivation at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, three realms lower than Zhang Ruochen. Moreover, she only used sword techniques without any other means.

Zhang Ruochen would not use any other means either. He would only use his own power to deal with her.

SWOOSH!

Kong Lanyou launched another attack. She displayed the fourth sword technique.

Zhang Ruochen raised his arm once again to ward off his assailant. He wanted to keep fighting recklessly with her.

With a bang, the vertical bamboo flute she pointed passed through his right arm. It hit his shoulder and sent him flying through the air.

Zhang Ruochen had no feeling in his right arm and half of his body had become numb. Seeing that he was about to fall to the ground, he quickly ran his Genuine Qi, stretched out his left hand to hit the ground, and flew up to land upside down.

Before he could stand firm, Kong Lanyou had launched her fifth strike and hit his glabella.

Instead of dodging, Zhang Ruochen immediately pushed his left palm to hit her lower abdomen.

If she did not take back the vertical bamboo flute, her lower abdomen would be hit. A warrior at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm would definitely die after being struck by Zhang Ruochen's palm.

Kong Lanyou snorted and turned her slender waist. Like a fish in the water, she quickly twisted up and avoided his movement.

She hit downward and pointed the vertical bamboo flute to the center of his back.

“Awful.”

Zhang Ruochen felt his back grow cold and knew that he could not avoid this movement. He immediately mobilized his Genuine Qi to form Celestial Bodyshield and pushed it back.

The Celestial Bodyshield turned into a huge light ball, enveloping him.

The light ball lost its effect when Kong Lanyou's vertical bamboo flute hit its surface.

“Break!”

Kong Lanyou broke Zhang Ruochen's Celestial Bodyshield and hit him in the center of his back.

The Celestial Bodyshield, reduced the power of the vertical bamboo flute by half. It struck him with a crash. He was shaken to lunge forward, without any heavy injury.

Zhang Ruochen endured his burning back pain and turned. Just as he turned back, the vertical bamboo flute was pressed against his heart.

If it was a real life-or-death struggle, his heart would have been stabbed by the vertical bamboo flute.

Zhang Ruochen withdrew, saying, "I've failed!"

"I defeated you in six movements. You've progressed a lot in the last half a month. Your understanding of sword technique was far beyond my expectation."

Kong Lanyou took back her vertical bamboo flute and returned to the Bamboo Pavilion.

She waved her hand over the stone table and a pot of tea and two celadon cups appeared.

She blew a breath. The teapot slowly flew up and suspended in the air.

PHHT!

Kong Lanyou did not perform any other conjuring tricks. The Spiritual Qi between heaven and earth flew continuously into the teapot.

A section of Spiritual Qi flew into the teapot and blended with the water. Another turned into wisps of fire and coated the teapot.

Shortly afterwards, came the delicate fragrance of tea. It turned to wisps of white mist that pervaded the bamboo forest.

"Zhang Ruochen, I told you that if you withstood my strikes three times, I would treat you to a good drink. You can enter the Bamboo Pavilion," Kong Lanyou said calmly.

When he walked into the Bamboo Pavilion, the fragrance of tea was stronger.

Taking a deep breath, he inhaled the fragrance into his abdomen. All of a sudden, he felt a current of mighty Spiritual Qi flowing into his Blood Meridian. His blood seemed to be boiling.

Zhang Ruochen immediately ran the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Emyrean. Genuine Qi rapidly moved through the 36 Meridians in his body for a large cirde of vital energy.

Kong Lanyou took a deep look at Zhang Rouchen as he performed the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Emphyrean. Her eyes were full of confusion and intricacy.

“What on earth is inside that teapot? Why do I benefit so much by taking a deep breath? If I take a sip of tea, will I benefit even more?”

Zhang Rouchen said to himself.

Zhang Rouchen put aside his doubts temporarily. He went to the opposite side and sat down.

Kong Lanyou lifted her eyelids and stared at him. She said, “You're only a warrior of the Heaven Realm. How dare you sit opposite me to be on a par with me? You're quite unscrupulous!”

Zhang Rouchen remained relaxed. “Predecessor, you invited me to drink tea in the Bamboo Pavilion. Why can't I sit down?”

Even if Kong Lanyou had extremely high cultivation, Zhang Rouchen was not afraid of her. He treated her still as his cousin, without pressure.

After meeting her twice, Zhang Rouchen could tell that Kong Lanyou had no enmity toward him from 800 years ago. Moreover, she had been very concerned about him that year.

Even so, Zhang Rouchen did not intend to tell her the truth.

If she knew the truth, she would certainly plan his future. She would bring him back to Ming Hall, with her current cultivation, experience, status, and will.

If he returned to Ming Hall, how would he get along with her in the future?

How did Zhang Rouchen know that she was from Ming Hall? It was actually very simple. When he had gone to Sword Sanctum, Jade Saint had asked him if he was a member of Ming Hall. Now, Kong Lanyou was here again, and she was connected with Sword Sanctum. She had to be a member of Ming Hall.

He was only a young warrior in the Heaven Realm; she was an 800-year-old Saint from Ming Hall. The difference between them was huge. Kong Lanyou would not submit herself to him as she had 800 years before.

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen did not want to expose his identity. He was a proud person and had his own cultivation plan. He did not want to resort to Kong Lanyou and Ming Hall.

Tell her?

Or not tell her?

Suddenly, countless ideas flashed across his mind.

Kong Lanyou seemed to be thinking about something. She did not say anything and fell into silence.

Zhang Ruochen put his hands together. He swallowed and enjoyed the tea fragrance. He performed his exercises and quickly cultivated himself.

Zhang Ruochen's mind was empty after he inhaled the tea fragrance. His doubts about martial arts were settled in an instant.

“If I could keep inhaling and exhaling the tea fragrance and maintain my current status, I would be able to break through the Final State of the Heaven Realm within a month.”

His Spiritual Power was strong; he had reached 41st level. He quickly did three things at once.

He swallowed and inhaled tea fragrance and performed exercises.

He recalled the process of fighting with Kong Lanyou to grasp the quintessence of her sword technique.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen's Heart of the Sword changed into a human shape inside his Qi Sea. He exercised sword techniques repeatedly.

GURGLE!

The water in the teapot was boiling.

Under Kong Lanyou's control, the teapot flew to Zhang Ruochen. A full cup of jade-green tea was poured.

Then, the teapot flew back. Another cup of tea was poured for her.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes and looked at the tea before him. "Is it possible that this tea is boiled with the legendary holy medicine 'Blue Sky Herb'?"

"You're quite knowledgeable. There's a leaf of Blue Sky Herb in the teapot."

Kong Lanyou put the small delicate teacup to her red lips and gently took a sip.

In legends, Blue Sky Herb grew in the clouds rather than on the earth. It absorbed moisture and Spiritual Qi, collected the light of the sun and the moon, and finally formed into a grass-blade of holy medicine.

Such a treasure was more precious than Five Elements Spirit Treasure. If a Blue Sky Herb came on the scene, many Half-Saints would struggle to seize it.

Blue Sky Herb could not only help warriors to improve their cultivation but also help them to comprehend the Holy Road.

Therefore, Blue Sky Herb was extremely precious to a figure at the Ninth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm or a Half-Saint. It was extremely wasteful for a leaf of Blue Sky Herb to be used to make tea for a warrior of the Heaven Realm.

"She treated me with Blue Sky Herb, such a holy medicine. Is it possible that she's recognized me?"

Zhang Ruochen wondered.

Kong Lanyou put down her teacup and stared at Zhang Ruochen. She said, "If you stop drinking it, the efficacy of Blue Sky Herb will decrease."

Zhang Ruochen did not consider it anymore. He lifted his teacup and drank it to the last drop.

Then he almost dropped the teacup. He was frightened by her words.

Kong Lanyou watched him, saying, “You practiced Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Emphyrean?”

Chapter 465 - The Past and Present of the World

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“You practiced the Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Emyrean?”

Kong Lanyou watched Zhang Ruochen with a pair of beautiful eyes, revealing a look of great anticipation.

A storm of emotion surged through him. However, he appeared very calm, saying, “Predecessor, you’re really a master. I can hide nothing from you. You should have already known the exercises I practiced.”

“As far as I know, only two people in Kunlun’s Field have practiced the Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Emyrean. One was Emperor Ming, one of the Nine Emperors eight hundred years ago. The other one was the son of Emperor Ming.”

She paused and carefully observed his subtle movements.

“One of them has been missing for years and his life is uncertain. The other has been dead for 800 years. Zhang Ruochen, don’t tell me that you learned the Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Emyrean by being awakened from the Ancient Abyss Sword.”

Zhang Ruochen said firmly, “It’s true.”

Since he had already made a decision, Zhang Ruochen would continue to hide the truth. He still needed time to verify several things. He did not want anybody to know his true identity before he found the answers.

As long as he did not admit it, Kong Lanyou could do nothing, even if she had some speculation.

In fact, Kong Lanyou could forcibly take away his memory with Soul-finding Technique to find out the truth.

However, she was afraid that the man before her really did have an unusual relationship with the man 800 years ago. If she used Soul-finding Technique, his Martial Soul would be hurt with unrecoverable injuries.

What should she do?

As she contemplated, Zhang Ruochen began to practice.

He closed his eyes and spared no effort in playing the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Empyrean. His body was tightening up with a hundred thousand pores completely closed. His body became a space without leakage.

Blue Sky Herb took effect in a very short period of time. All his blood vessels and meridians were affected by its potency, which gathered in the glabella.

Zhang Ruochen became clearheaded as if the door of wisdom had been opened. He could comprehend sword technique more than ten times faster than before.

The Heart of the Sword was in his Qi pool. Zhang Ruochen's realm of sword technique enhanced considerably as he quickly practiced sword moves.

"With the help of Blue Sky Herb, I will certainly improve my realm of sword technique. Perhaps, I will be able to withstand ten movements from Kong Lanyou tonight."

He drove his Spiritual Power to the extreme and made every effort to comprehend the sword technique. He had to make the best use of this opportunity and avoid wasting the potency of Blue Sky Herb.

"My sword technique is from the heart, and my mind is clear."

"Go with the wind and move with the clouds."

"The sun and the moon have come out together and the universe is pervaded with sword technique."

"The two opposing principles of nature are contained in Tai Chi and all skills derive from one sword technique."

In Zhang Ruochen's Qi pool, a little white man held a light sword and stepped on Genuine Qi to display sword practice, leaving illusory images of sword technique in his mind.

In an instant, he got a thorough understanding of difficult problems that he could not figure out before.

The sword technique method emerged from his mind and surged up as if it were flying out of his head.

Suddenly, he widened his eyes and shot a sharp look. He quickly attacked in the direction opposite Kong Lanyou, his hands shaped into a Finger Sword.

“SWISH!”

Kong Lanyou responded quickly. After he struck, she gained mastery by striking his wrists with the xiao.

Zhang Ruochen rotated his wrists and quickly changed movements. He stood up and stretched his arms straight to her chest, with an invincible sword breath.

“Bang! Bang!”

They displayed movements quickly and fought fiercely. Every time they launched an attack, it was as if two swords were colliding.

Zhang Ruochen attacked her from different perspectives. Sometimes he stood up and sometimes he sat down. Sometimes he even moved quickly around Bamboo Pavilion.

Kong Lanyou sat motionless as a statue, except for her constantly moving hands.

After about three breaths, Zhang Ruochen was thrown out of Bamboo Pavilion after being struck by the xiao again.

Zhang Ruochen sank his legs to keep his center of gravity. Then, he stood on his feet, so that he would not be too embarrassed. He rested one hand on his chest as if his body had been pierced by the xiao. He felt pain and exhaustion all over.

However, he wasn't injured. It could be presumed that Kong Lanyou exerted her strength secretly.

“You’ve withstood 13 movements. You really are a genius,” Kong Lanyou praised.

Zhang Ruochen resisted the pain, saying, “It was your Blue Sky Herb. Without it, I wouldn’t have made such rapid progress.”

“Don’t be so humble. It depends on the ability of a warrior, not just the Herb. Although it’s helpful, it’s just a cup of tea.”

Kong Lanyou stood up and clasped her hands behind her. She displayed an overwhelming spirit, saying proudly, “Zhang Ruochen, are you interested in leaving the School of the Martial Market and becoming my apprentice? I can provide you the best cultivation environment, the best guidance, and the best panacea. I do not accept an apprentice easily.”

“As expected, she really wants to set the course of my cultivation. Fortunately, she doesn’t know my true identity. Otherwise, she would definitely take me away without hesitation,”

Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

Where you stood decided the way you thought.

Kong Lanyou thought that it was a gift for Zhang Ruochen to be accepted as her apprentice.

“Thank you for your kindness,” he replied. “I’ve decided to practice in the Saint Academy. Moreover, I’ve promised to take Headmaster Xuanji as my master.”

Kong Lanyou nodded as if she already knew this. “Elder Xuanji is one of top three sword saints in the Eastern Region. He’s very powerful. It’s good to apprentice with him. Since you’ve made your decision, I should leave and return to the Middle Region.”

“Are you leaving?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Kong Lanyou sighed. “I came to the Eastern Region to meet you. Since you’re not the person I’m looking for, I have no reason to stay here. 800 years! His bones have probably turned to ashes. But, I can’t give up my obsession. I can’t. You aren’t him and you can’t be him.”

Her voice sounded sad. She didn't seem like an infinitely powerful Saint at all, but a delicate and passionate woman.

Zhang Ruochen also felt upset. He was not sure if he was grieving for Kong Lanyou's departure or the passage of time.

After 800 years, Zhang Ruochen was no longer the person he had once been. Similarly, Kong Lanyou had changed as well.

Everything had changed!

Time goes by quickly. Everything is always changing.

In retrospect, all things turn to ashes. Only the green hills remain unchanged.

You withstood 10 movements, so you should be at the Intermediate Stage of Heart Integrated into Sword. As agreed upon, the Half-Saint mansion is your private estate now.”

When Kong Lanyou stood up, she showed her slender and beautiful figure. She walked out of Bamboo Pavilion and was about to leave.

Zhang Ruochen stared at her back. Finally, he could not help asking, “I heard you mention many times the son of Emperor Ming 800 years ago. Did you know each other?”

Kong Lanyou quivered and stopped, saying calmly, “We more than knew each other. He's irreplaceable in my heart forever. But, I was not in his mind. He had an affection for another woman. I could only secretly watch them from afar. I watched them practice swords, play, and embrace under the moonlight.”

“And because I secretly watched him from a distance, I saw him get killed by that woman in one strike. I rushed out desperately to stop it. But I was too late. I was helpless as I looked at him lying in his blood.”

“Even though 800 years have passed, I can still remember the scene. Every time it flashes through my mind, I'm overwhelmed with sorrow.”

“All of a sudden, we were forever separated from each other. Since then, my old friend has become a ghost.”

For some reason, Kong Lanyou told the secret deep in her heart to a junior, whom she had only met twice.

Perhaps, she was very lonely. For 800 years, she had had nobody to talk to. Until she met Zhang Ruochen, and blurted out the thoughts that had been buried in her heart for 800 years.

A long sigh came out in the air.

When Zhang Ruochen heard this, his eyes grew moist with tears. He did not want to hide the truth. He wanted to tell her his true identity. He wanted to tell her that her old friend was not dead.

However, when Zhang Ruochen fixed his eyes and looked over, she had already disappeared. He had no idea when she'd left the Half-Saint mansion.

Zhang Ruochen rushed out and shouted with Genuine Qi, "Lanyou, Lanyou..."

However, she had already left the East Region Saint City. She was 10,000 kilometers away and could not hear his shouting.

"All of a sudden, we were forever separated from each other. Since then, my old friend has become a ghost."

Zhang Ruochen recited her words and closed his eyes. It was like he could feel her years of anguish.

Zhang Ruochen had always treated Kong Lanyou as a little sister. He had never known she had an affection for him.

If Zhang Ruochen had known this before, he would not have hidden from her. He should not leave her in guilt, sorrow, and hatred. She should be happier.

"In the future, there will be opportunities to meet her again. For now, I need to practice harder. When my cultivation is stronger, I will be able to do more."

He put away the complicated thoughts in his mind and thought about how he could improve his cultivation quickly.

His enemy was the superior Empress Chi Yao. If he was not strong enough, he could not take revenge.

After drinking the Blue-sky Herb Tea, he had improved in both sword technique and martial cultivation. He had subtly contacted the threshold of the Final State of the Heaven Realm.

If he could break through the Final State of the Heaven Realm, his strength would be increased to a higher level. In that case, it would not be difficult for him to be ranked in the the top 30 on the Heaven Board.

Chapter 466 - The First Day of School

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

If he wanted to rapidly improve his cultivation, he could only resort to the Yin Yang Wooden Graph.

Only when the Yin Yang Wooden Graph absorbed enough Origin of Wood Spirit Qi, would the sacred prime tree be able to grow enough to hold up the inner world of the graph.

The time of internal space in the Yin Yang Wooden Graph was greatly different from that of the external world. Ten days inside was equal to one day outside.

In other words, if Zhang Ruochen could enter the Yin Yang Wooden Graph, his cultivation would speed up ten times.

“Tomorrow, I’ll go to the Book Collection Pavilion in the Saint Academy and find some books. I can probably find an Inferior Primitive World with a lot of Origin of Wood Spirit Qi.”

While considering the way to enhance his cultivation, Zhang Ruochen moved forward. He left the bamboo forest.

Nie Honglou stood outside the bamboo forest. When he saw Zhang Ruochen come out alone, he asked, “Where’s the predecessor?”

“She’s gone!” Zhang Ruochen answered.

Nie Honglou said, “Zhang Ruochen, I’m about to leave. Tomorrow when you enter the Saint Academy, I’ll go away.”

Over the past half a month, Nie Honglou had protected Zhang Ruochen at all times. Wherever Zhang Ruochen went, Nie

Honglou would follow. He protected him wholeheartedly.

It was quite amazing for such a top master like him to make it this far.

Zhang Ruochen did not intend to persuade him to stay. After all, Nie Honglou also needed to practice. He still had his own path of cultivation. It was impossible for him to spend all his time on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen thought about it for a moment. He took out a jade box and passed it to Nie Honglou. He laughed. “Over the last two weeks, if not for your protection, I would have been assassinated by masters of the Black Market. Brother Nie, you must accept this gift.”

Nie Honglou was a powerhouse at the Sixth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. His cultivation was much higher than Zhang Ruochen’s. He was too proud to accept Zhang Ruochen’s gift.

Just as he was going to turn it down, he suddenly stopped and observed a strange fluctuation in the box.

Was there an amazing treasure inside?

Curiously, Nie Honglou took the box and opened it.

Inside was a smooth black spinel with a thin layer of vapor. Using Spiritual Power to search, he found that pure Spiritual Qi of water was contained in the black spinel.

“This...this is the Black Glazed Spinel, one of the Five Elements Spirit Treasures, right?” Nie Honglou widened his eyes.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Yes.”

If it were any other treasure, Nie Honglou would definitely refuse it. But since it was a Black Glazed Spinel, there was no way he could turn it down.

He licked his lips, shook his head, and laughed. “Zhang Ruochen, you are making me owe you on purpose.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “If you don’t want it, I’ll take it back.”

“Yes, I definitely want it.”

Without hesitation, Nie Honglou took the Black Glazed Spinel.

With the Black Glazed Spinel, he could shorten his cultivation by ten years. It would be ludicrous to refuse such a treasure.

With the help of the Black Glazed Spinel, Nie Honglou was very confident that he would make further progress and realize the Seventh Change in the Fish-dragon Realm within a short time.

“Well, since you’ve given me this Black Glazed Spinel, I’ll protect you for another two weeks.” Nie Honglou did not want to owe him and intended to pay it back quickly.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Brother Nie, don’t hesitate. I am giving you the Black Glazed Spinel merely for being friend. I don’t mean anything else. Moreover, I am going to the Saint Academy tomorrow, so I don’t need your protection anymore.”

Nie Honglou laughed. “You really think that you’ll be completely safe once you enter the Saint Academy? The competition within the Saint Academy is more fierce than that in the external world. In particular, senior students take delight in bullying new students. And, descendants of Saint Gentries take delight in teasing juniors from humble families.”

“You rank first among the new students, so you’re in the teeth of the storm. Many people will want to achieve instant fame by bullying you.”

“With your strength, you don’t need to be afraid of any warriors at the Heaven Realm. However, you can’t deal with specially privileged people. They won’t dare kill you, but they can humiliate you. It’s hard to gain a firm foothold in the Saint Academy.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Nie Honglou. “Why do you know the Saint Academy so well? Are you also a saint at the Saint Academy?”

“Sort of! But, I haven’t been back for more than ten years. Many people might have forgotten me,” Nie Honglou joked.

Why had Nie Honglou joined the Mercenary Group to carry out risky tasks, instead of practicing in the Saint Academy?

Zhang Ruochen did not ask this question. After all, everyone had their own choices. Nie Honglou probably thought it would be more helpful to experience the Mercenary Group than to practice in the Saint Academy.

Zhang Rouchen returned to the Martial Market Courier Station, and then brought Concubine Lin, Kong Xuan, Blackie, Han Xue, and the monster ape to the Half-saint mansion to help them settle in.

Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Duanmu Xingling, and the others were saints at the Saint Academy, so they could live in the Saint Academy houses. It was unnecessary for them to live in Zhang Ruochen's mansion.

Zhang Ruochen did not go to bed until midnight.

With his current cultivation, he would not be tired, even if went without rest for ten to fifteen days. However, it was relaxing to sleep.

If a person was too stressed and exhausted, it was bad for cultivation.

The next morning, Zhang Ruochen got up and practiced sword technique before the day broke.

The Martial arts field of the Half-saint mansion was broad. It was 50 meters long and 40 meters wide. At its edge, a level five defense strategy was arranged. Zhang Ruochen was not worried about others getting injured accidentally by his sword breath.

He practiced sword techniques for an hour.

Finally, the sun rose. The sun's rays broke through the clouds and illuminated the earth.

Zhang Ruochen's robe was completely soaked with sweat.

He went back to the room and put on a military uniform specially made by the Saint Academy. He grabbed a token, walked out of the mansion, and went to the Saint Academy.

The military uniform of the Saint Academy was golden. Because it was knitted with specially made gold threads, it

could not be damaged by ordinary knives or swords. It was comparable to a Level Six Genuine Martial Arms.

In the Martial Market Bank, only a golden-robed Elder was qualified to wear such a golden uniform.

In other words, a saint could enjoy the same treatment a golden-robed Elder did.

If a saint ranked among the top 100 on the Heaven Board, he or she could wear a purple robe and enjoy the even better treatment.

When Zhang Ruochen arrived at the Saint Academy, ornate carriages were parked inside and outside the building. All the young warriors getting out of the carriages were specially privileged people at the Heaven Realm.

This time, a total of 13,478 students were becoming saints. Thus, the Saint Academy was overcrowded with people and vehicles on the first day of school. Boys and girls could be seen chatting everywhere. It was full of youth and vigor.

Zhang Ruochen saw a familiar beautiful figure in the crowd. The figure was tall and long-legged. It was Huang Yanchen.

Huang Yanchen also wore a golden robe and had tied a belt around her slender waist. The belt was gold inlaid with jade. It accentuated her curvy figure. Her royal blue hair hung down behind her like a waterfall. The front of her hair was drawn into a bun and fixed with a jade hairpin.

When she walked down from her gorgeous carriage, many young warriors were attracted by her beautiful appearance. .

“Gorgeous. Who is she?”

A young saint held a folding fan and stared at Huang Yanchen with a look of obsession.

“She’s from the Chens of East Region Saint Mansions. You’d better stop dreaming. She’s engaged to an amazing fiance.”

The young saint shook the fan, looking handsome and natural. He said in a haughty tone, “How amazing is he? If they aren’t married yet, I’ll be able to take her.”

“Haha! Her fiancé is Zhang Ruochen, one of the kings of the new generation of the Eastern Region. How do you dare to take his woman with your cultivation? Can you resist his ten strikes?”

“What? Her fiancé is Zhang Ruochen.” The young saint’s face changed, and he stopped coveting Huang Yanchen. He was no match for Zhang Ruochen.

Huang Yanchen felt a familiar aura. She immediately turned back and looked. At just the right moment, she made eye contact with her fiancée.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’ve become more and more famous. Have you already fought several hundred times in the Coliseum of the Martial Market? Do you want to fight with me? I’m curious about how many strikes I can resist.”

Huang Yanchen straightened her chest and looked frosty. She walked towards Zhang Ruochen, who was being envied by a group of saints.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Senior sister apprentice Yanchen, why bother? If you’re confident in your strength, you can go to the Coliseum of the Martial Market and challenge all the masters.”

“Do you think that I’m not qualified to be your opponent?” she asked.

He smiled. “Senior sister apprentice, if you want to fight with me, I have no objection. However, today is the first day of school, so we’ll have a lot of things to do. We’d better have a fight later. Right?”

Huang Yanchen nodded. “Okay! Let’s sign up for the Sword Technique Department first.”

This year, the Sword Technique Department had recruited a total of 6,000 saints. It had the largest number of people. It was divided into a hundred groups, with 60 saints per group.

According to the three rounds of assessment results, they were ranked from the top down.

All the students ranked in the top 600 were in the Half-saint groups, that is to say, ten Half-saint groups.

Low-ranking students were divided into Fish-dragon groups, that is to say, 90 Fish-dragon groups.

In the so-called half-saint group, saints were imparted with the way of practice by Half-saints.

In the so-called Fish-dragon group, saints were imparted with the way of practice by practitioners of the Fish-dragon Realm.

All the instructors at the Fish-dragon Realm were top-notch masters above the Seventh Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. But in comparison with Half-saints, they were inferior.

Therefore, it was a great honor for the saints to enter the Half-saint group. If they performed well enough, they would have the chances to become descendants of half-saints.

Chapter 467 - The Battle over Group Leader

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen was assigned into the first of the Half-Saint groups. There were 60 Saints in his group, each of whom were elite men with cultivation exceeding the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

Moreover, all of them came from well-connected families.

Some were the descendants of the powerful Saint families, some the young masters of Suzerains, and others the children of imperial court officials.

The first group, also known as the “absolute Elite Group”, was composed of the 60 highest-ranked novices in the Sword Technique Department.

Duanmu Xingling was also assigned to the first group.

As for Huang Yanchen, she had ranked slightly lower after the three rounds of assessment. She was placed in the second group.

At the moment, everyone from the first group was gathered in an open martial-arts arena, standing neatly. They seemed youthful and energetic.

The men outnumbered the women; there were 38 men and 22 women.

“Look! It’s Zhang Ruochen, the young king of the new generation. It is said that few people are able to withstand three of his moves. If anyone survives ten of his attacks, he or she becomes famous overnight.”

“Is he really as strong as the rumors say?”

A glamorous woman with a pair of dragon horns on her head was gazing at Zhang Ruochen with doubt. She could not understand why he was so legendary.

Her name was Ao Xinyan, and she was a Divine Dragon half-human. She had a half-dragon body, meaning she had both the blood of human beings and the blood of the Dragon tribe. At the age of 24, her martial cultivation had reached the Final State of the Heaven Realm.

She had entered the first group in third place, next only to Zhang Ruochen and Duanmu Xingling.

However, it did not mean that Ao Xinyan was weaker than Zhang Ruochen or Duanmu Xingling. She just hadn't accumulated as many military merits as them during her experience in the Five Elements Primitive World.

Ao Xinyan had a perfect body. She had subtle curves and snow-white skin. Her head was dotted with colorful glazes and crystals. Even without running exercises, the mist between heaven and earth converged around her, making her appear infinitely pure like a holy jade lotus.

“Zhang Ruochen defeated the Sword Sanctum's Lu Fantian in eleven strikes, and the Orange Star Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall in ten. Don't you know that? That's quite the difficult achievement, even for his counterpart Luo Shuihan, a Saintly Being.”

“Zhang Ruochen will definitely be the Group Leader of the first group. And from now on, he is not only a benchmark to fight against, but also an example to learn from.”

The crowd was still bustling.

Ao Xinyan sniffed at this. A hint of cold sparkled in her eyes.

She had never seen Zhang Ruochen in battle before. She had no idea what his real power was.

But, she definitely believed in her own strength.

She had grown up never losing to her peers. Not even once. It was out of the question that she would show respect to them.

Over the years, in the Saint Academy, the Group Leader of the first group in the Sword Technique Department represented the highest level of disciples in their generation. Also, they had the opportunity to compete for the glorious position, “Young Master” of the Martial Market Bank.

The young master of the Martial Market Bank had a very high status and power. It was equivalent to that of the Demonic Son or the Saintess of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect. The young master dealt with worldly affairs on behalf of the Martial Market Bank.

Every season, the battle over Group Leader of the first group in the Sword Technique Department was always unprecedentedly fierce. Many people fought vigorously for the position.

This year, Zhang Ruochen completely outshone the other geniuses. No one dared to volunteer for the Group Leader.

However, there was one exception. Of course, it was Ao Xinyan.

Ao Xinyan walked up to Zhang Ruochen, puffing out her plump chest and raising her white chin. There was a callousness in her beautiful eyes. “Zhang Ruochen, if you want to be the Group Leader, you have to beat me first.” She said.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head and stared at her.

It was true that Ao Xinyan possessed surpassing beauty. She had refined features and a voluptuous figure. In particular, the white skin exposed outside her clothes was as silky and supple as a nephrite.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen looked at her without carnal desire, only appreciation. “I have never said that I wanted to be the Group Leader. If you are interested, just go for it. I will never compete with you,” he said.

Ao Xinyan sneered. “We all know the Group Leader of the first group has to be the strongest Saint. In other words, I can only be the Group Leader if I defeat you first. Enough talk,

Zhang Ruochen! If you're a real man, draw your sword and fight with me."

"Today is the first day of school. I don't want to cause trouble," Zhang Ruochen responded.

If it they hadn't been meeting the lecturer of the first group, Zhang Ruochen would have already gone to the Pavilion of Book Collection. He would never stay here, wasting time.

"Admit it, you just don't have the guts to fight with me! You are afraid of losing to me and losing the opportunity to be the Group Leader," Ao Xinyan jeered, aiming to enrage him.

"You're right, junior sister apprentice Ao. He must be afraid of failure. That's why he won't fight with you." A meddling woman said in a voice dripping with mockery.

Zhang Ruochen looked in the direction of the voice. It was another beautiful woman. She was a disciple of Saint Xi Gentry, Xi Yunxi.

Zhang Ruochen had once played against her on the Stairway to Heaven.

She was an eminent God's favored daughter. She had a sanctified left hand and strong power. She could not be underestimated.

Zhang Ruochen was not surprised at all to see her here.

A male Saint stood beside her. His eyes were glittering with a gleam of light. "In the Divine Dragon half-human clan, Ao Xinyan is regarded as an once-in-a-century Genius. Her cultivation is very powerful, she even defeated a Monk in the Fish-dragon Realm." He laughed. "Maybe Zhang Ruochen really isn't as good as her."

He was also a successor to a powerful Saint family. Perhaps he was one of her suitors, for he stood really close to her.

Ao Xinyan gave a short, derisive laugh. "The so-called king of the new generation is nothing but a coward. How disappointing!"

"Whatever!" Zhang Ruochen responded indifferently.

Ao Xinyan had wanted to provoke him with her words. Unexpectedly, he ignored her completely and had no intention of fighting.

“Since you won’t fight with me, from now on, you can’t call yourself the king of the new generation in public,” Ao Xinyan said.

Zhang Ruochen responded, “I never claimed to be the king of the new generation.”

Ao Xinyan glared. She was getting angry.

BANG! She suddenly shook her fingers, mobilized her Genuine Qi and pulled out the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword. She whammed the sword towards his heart.

She had failed trying to force him to attack mentally. She had no choice but to irritate him physically.

She was going to compete with Zhang Ruochen today. Only by overcoming him, could she become the Group Leader.

SNAP!

A translucent strength flew from a distance and hit the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword.

It was so strong that the sword vibrated violently, causing her fingers to go numb. Like she had hit a curtain of light, she bounced back.

“Who?” Ao Xinyan huffed grimly.

SWISH!

Above the crowd, a strong white light emanated. It formed into a light column that dropped down connecting the heaven to the earth.

An 10-centimeter woman in red fell from the sky.

She levitated two meters from the ground with a Five-colored Auspicious Cloud under her feet. She exuded a sacred aura all over her body.

It was the Demi-saint Lingshu. Zhang Ruochen had met her before.

“Half-Saint.”

All the Saints present knelt down on one knee, respectfully bowing to salute the Demi-saint Lingshu.

A Half-Saint was a kind of existence separate from mortals.

Even Monks in the Fish-dragon Realm needed to kneel and salute when encountering Half-Saints, not to mention these Saints.

“Half-Saint.”

When Ao Xinyan realized it was actually the Half-Saint, she was shocked. She immediately knelt on one knee and stopped challenging Zhang Ruochen.

Demi-saint Lingshu gazed at the 60 Saints. “From now on, you are the Saints of the Half-Saint group of the Sword Technique Department. And I am your lecturer. You can call me Master Lingshu, or Demi-saint Lingshu.”

“Yes, Master Lingshu,” all the disciples shouted together.

Many of them were excited. From now on they would be Half-Saint students.

She continued, “Half-Saint groups are different from Fish-dragon Realm groups. Saints who make it to Half-Saint groups are the elite of the elite. You are the most outstanding people in the entire Eastern Region. Therefore, I won’t do a step-by-step guide. It is more necessary for you to perceive and practice yourself. Of course, if you come across something intractable, you can always come to me.”

“As Saints in the first group, you must be strict with yourselves.”

“I have only two requirements for you. First, you must enter the top 200 of the Heaven Board within five years. Secondly, your cultivation must break through the Fish-dragon Realm within ten years. Those who cannot make it will be kicked out of the group.”

BOOM!

Her words delivered a shocking blow that woke the Saints up completely.

Demi-saint Lingshu's two requirements were abnormally difficult.

The truth was, it was already extremely difficult to enter the top 200 on the Heaven Board, let alone to do it within five years.

Five years was either too short or too long.

Demi-saint Lingshu turned a blind eye to their anxious reactions. "Five years, it's long enough for you to fight into the top 200 of the Heaven Board. You have two choices. You can either go to the Coliseum of the Martial Market and challenge the top 200 masters on the Heaven Board. Or you can go to the Battlefield of the Primitive World and accumulate sufficient military merits. So choose."

"Of course, my requirements to the Group Leader will be more stringent. This person must enter the top 10 within three years. If you fail, I will find a replacement." She looked out over the Saints.

"Now, I want to know, who wants to be the Group Leader?"

Chapter 468 - Elder Xuanji, Imperial Edict

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The leader had to enter the top ten of the Heaven Board within three years.

Even Ao Xinyan, who was very confident about her own strength, would not dare to say that she could achieve the goal.

Other people were even less likely.

It was too difficult!

Demi-saint Lingshu glanced around. “Since none of you wants to be the Group Leader, I will appoint a leader for you. Zhang Ruochen, do you have confidence you will enter the top ten of the Heaven Board within three years?”

Zhang Ruochen answered, “Yes.”

Demi-saint Lingshu nodded. “Great! Well then, you are the Group Leader of the first group from now on. When I’m away, you will take charge of all the Saints in the first group. Of course, as a leader, you should really take the lead. Urge your group members to practice hard and provide guidance regarding their practice.”

Many of the Saints revealed looks of dissatisfaction.

Each of them was a God’s favored son. They were proud and not willing to obey anyone’s order. They were all aggrieved to hear that they had to follow Zhang Ruochen’s instructions.

Zhang Ruochen was only a bumpkin whose strength was slightly more powerful. How could he be compared with them?

However, none of them dared to be the Group Leader of the first group. If they objected to the appointment of Zhang Ruochen, Demi-saint Lingshu would definitely be unpleasant.

Therefore, they had to forbear their objection.

Demi-saint Lingshu continued, “Zhang Ruochen, come with me. The rest of you are dismissed. You can familiarize yourself with the Saint Academy or go to the Pavilion of Book Collection and read some rare books on exercises.”

Zhang Ruochen followed Demi-saint Lingshu to the center of the Saint Academy.

The students began to discuss what had just happened.

“I detest having to take orders from Zhang Ruochen. He is just a bumpkin from Omen Ridge. He’s nothing!” A rather unconvinced disciple of a Saint family complained.

His name was Zuo Qiuling and he was the disciple of Saint Zuo Gentry. His cultivation had reached the Final State of the Heaven Realm and his comprehensive strength ranked 17th in the first group. He was definitely an outstanding figure.

He was also one of Xi Yunxi’s pursuers. Therefore, he was quite hostile towards Zhang Ruochen.

Xi Yunxi stared at Zhang Ruochen’s back. “I think the reason Master Lingshu appointed him as the Group Leader is because she wants to take him as a disciple.”

“Definitely,” Zuo Qiuling agreed.

Among all the people present, only Duanmu Xingling, who remained silent, knew that the person who wanted to take Zhang Ruochen as his apprentice was not Demi-saint Lingshu, but the second headmaster, Elder Xuanji.

Demi-saint Lingshu was supposed to bring Zhang Ruochen to Elder Xuanji.

She took him to the center of the Saint Academy, Saint Mountain.

From afar, Saint Mountain was like a dark blue dragon lying on the horizon. It was 8,000 meters high. Numerous peaks

stood among the mountain. The snow-capped and mist-shrouded mountaintop was like a retreat for immortals.

Zhang Ruochen felt an unusually rich Spiritual Qi blowing before he entered Saint Mountain.

“Saint Mountain is ahead. When you become a Half-Saint, you will be able to open up an abode to practice in Saint Mountain,” Demi-saint Lingshu explained to him.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Legend goes that a holy meridian that has been deposited for billions of years lies beneath Saint Mountain. The holy meridian releases thin Holy Qi. If a warrior in the Heaven Realm practices in Saint Mountain, his practice speed can be ten times quicker than usual.”

“That’s right. There is a holy meridian at the bottom of Saint Mountain. Tenfold speed is an exaggeration, but a warrior can expect his practice speed to increase at least five-fold.”

Demi-saint Lingshu stared at Zhang Ruochen. “Actually, saints of the Saint Academy can enter Saint Mountain to practice for one day if they accumulate 10,000 merits.”

“The merits can be exchanged with military merits. I suggest you gain experience in the Battlefield of the Primitive World for a period and try hard to reach the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm.”

“Although the Battlefield of the Primitive World is extremely dangerous, it’s also a good place to exercise. Even if you can’t reach the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm, getting some experience will also be beneficial for you to break into the Fish-dragon Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen replied, “Thank you Master Lingshu, for your advice.”

“You don’t have to call me master. Perhaps you will soon call me Senior sister apprentice. Let’s go. Follow me to Headmaster Xuanji.”

They entered Saint Mountain and came to a valley filled with pear trees.

The woods were filled with pear flower blossoms. The petals were white and flawless, emitting a light fragrance.

A thick layer of petals covered the ground like snowflakes.

Zhang Ruochen circulated his Genuine Qi into his leg Meridians. A Qi billow soon appeared under his feet. He stepped on it, just above the ground so as not to step on the petals. He looked at the surrounding pear trees in shock. “Are these pear trees the legendary Spiritual Crane Pear?”

Demi-saint Lingshu looked at Zhang Ruochen with surprise, then she smiled. “You do know something. Yes, the Spiritual Crane Pear Garden has 3,600 Spiritual Crane Pear trees in total.”

“The tree needs 300 years to blossom, 300 more years to bear fruit and another 300 years to ripen. Taking a Spiritual Crane Pear cannot only promote cultivation and open the spiritual intelligence of a Monk, it also adds 30 years of life expectancy. When I reached the Half-Saint realm, the Master gave me a Spiritual Crane Pear.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded, amazed.

There was an abundance of Spiritual Crane Pears in the Saint Academy. This was why the Martial Market Bank was far more powerful than other Suzerains and families.

Through the pear garden, a steep black cliff appeared in front of them. On the cliff was a waterfall, like an extremely long white silk leaping down from the Nine Heavens above.

Under the cliff, a white-bearded white-haired elder in a white robe sat cross-legged on an irregular stone table. His wrinkled and old hand was holding a bronze pen and writing something.

Demi-saint Lingshu knelt on one knee and bowed to the elder. “Master.”

“So this is the famous Elder Xunaji, one of the Three Great Sword Saints in the Eastern Region.”

Zhang Ruochen promptly knelt down and saluted Elder Xuanji. He did not dare to be disrespectful.

“Haha! Get up!”

Elder Xuanji laughed brightly and stopped writing.

He seemed to make Zhang Ruochen and Demi-saint Lingshu stand up automatically without showing any means.

SWISH!

When he stopped writing, the sheet of silk cloth on the stone table began to give off a dazzling light and turned into an imperial edict.

This was a real imperial edict. It contained the Saint Power of the Saint and represented the volition and decision of the Saint.

Elder Xuanji looked at Zhang Ruochen and nodded with a smile. He said, "Great, absolutely great. Your sword technique realm has almost reached the Intermediate Stage of the Heart Integrated into Sword."

Demi-saint Lingshu knew that Elder Xuanji did not compliment disciples easily, but today, he had praised him twice. This showed that Zhang Ruochen's talent was indeed brilliant.

Zhang Ruochen just stood and listened quietly.

Elder Xuanji suddenly became serious and asked, "I have accepted five disciples. Even Ling Shu, whose cultivation is the weakest, has already reached the Half-Saint realm. Zhang Ruochen, would you like to be my sixth disciple?"

"I would."

Zhang Ruochen did not refuse. He knelt down again and kowtowed to Elder Xuanji. "I bow to my Master," he said.

Elder Xuanji stood up. He laughed loudly and said, "Since you agree, take the edict."

With a sweep of the arm, the blue imperial edict flew from his hand and landed in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen stretched out both hands to receive the imperial edict, then held it in his hands.

The imperial edict recorded that Elder Xuanji would formally accept Zhang Ruochen as his apprentice. The words on it

glittered. They contained the volition of a Saint.

Accepting an apprentice was not a simple process; it was a very important decision for a Saint. He needed to issue an imperial edict to affirm the identity of the disciple.

Only Monks who had the imperial edict could be called “disciples of Saints”.

The imperial edict proved the identity of the disciple.

Elder Xuanji smiled. “The imperial edict contains a stream of my Saint Power. If you meet any danger that you cannot deal with, unfold it and the Holy Qi will carry you away thousands of kilometers, providing you an escape route.”

“Of course, if you use up the Holy Qi, it will lose its effect. Therefore, unless there is no other way, you should try your best to overcome difficulties on your own first.”

“I’ll follow your advice,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Elder Xuanji said, “Until you reach the Half-Saint realm, your fifth Senior sister apprentice, Ling Shu will replace me to teach you the means of practice. What do you think?”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Demi-saint Lingshu. “The fifth Senior sister apprentice has profound cultivation. Her sword technique realm has far exceeded mine. I will surely learn a lot from her.”

Elder Xuanji nodded. “Since it is so, you may leave. If you have anything important, you can hold the imperial edict and meet me at Saint Mountain. No one will stop you.”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt that Elder Xuanji had just hinted something.

“Right! He said that I can enter Saint Mountain freely with the imperial edict. Did he mean that I can enter Saint Mountain anytime to practice?”

Zhang Ruochen was happy. He suddenly felt it was extremely worthwhile to be Elder Xuanji’s disciple.

Other Saints needed to accumulate 10,000 merits to practice a day in Saint Mountain. He could enter Saint Mountain anytime

to practice without any merit. What a gain!

When Elder Xuanji saw Zhang Ruochen's eyes change, he knew that Zhang Ruochen understood his meaning. He really was a smart young man, well worth teaching.

“Ling Shu, stay here. I have something to tell you.”

Demi-saint Lingshu stayed with Elder Xuanji. Zhang Ruochen stepped out of the Spiritual Crane Pear Garden and walked toward the outside of Saint Mountain.

Just as he was leaving Saint Mountain, he ran into the God's favored daughter of Divine Dragon and half-human clan, Ao Xinyan.

Ao Xinyan had been accepted as a disciple by a Half-Saint. She was also on her way out.

When she saw Zhang Ruochen, she quickly chased him and shouted from a distance, “Zhang Ruochen, fight with me. Today, one of us must win.”

Chapter 469 - Martial Soul of Divine Dragon

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen stopped and looked at Ao Xinyan. Then he smiled. "I'm the Group Leader of the first group now, and you are a Saint of the first group. Is it suitable that you call me by my name?"

Ao Xinyan's bodily movement was very skillful. She barely touched the ground as she walked through the air. When she was 33 meters from Zhang Ruochen, she stopped. "If you can't defeat me, I will not accept you as my Group Leader and I will not follow your orders."

Zhang Ruochen did not really want to fight Ao Xinyan, but she was insistent. She was a real headache.

A man's voice suddenly sounded from a distance.

"Great. Strength is the most important thing in the Saint Academy. Zhang Ruochen, is your strength really that powerful?"

Another four men appeared.

Three of them were familiar to Zhang Ruochen, Xu Hai of Saint Xu Gentry; Xi Yunxi of Saint Xi Gentry; and Zuo Qiuling of Saint Zuo Gentry.

Zhang Ruochen did not recognize the other person.

However, he could feel his strong aura. Obviously, the man was a master.

It was Xu Hai who had spoken.

Zhang Ruochen glared at the four men. “The power of my strength is none of your business.”

Xi Yunxi smiled charmingly. “We are all Saints of the Sword Technique Department. And you are the Group Leader of the first group; you represent our Sword Technique Department. If you are weak, every Saint in the Sword Technique Department will lose their pride.”

Xu Hai nodded and said, “Junior sister apprentice Ao is the princess of the Divine Dragon and half-human clan. She has a half-dragon body and her sword technique realm is profound. I think she is qualified to fight with you. Zhang Ruochen. You are looking down on her if you refuse.”

Ao Xinyan said, “Zhang Ruochen, if you can defeat me, I will accept your position as Group Leader and follow your orders without a word of complaint.”

Zhang Ruochen stared deeply at Ao Xinyan and sighed. “Alright! Since all you want is a fight, let’s fight.”

Ao Xinyan was too simple-minded. She did not know that she was being manipulated by the disciples of powerful Saint families.

Zhang Ruochen had to fight with her, lest she continued to be used by them.

Her beautiful face revealed an expression of joy. She immediately circulated her Genuine Qi and pulled out the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword. She pointed it at Zhang Ruochen who was standing opposite.

The Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword appeared to be made of green crystal. The whole sword was transparent and green. Pieces of Dragon Scales on the surface of the blade made it unusual.

Zhang Ruochen did not despise Ao Xinyan. She had been able to enter the first group of the Sword Technique Department in third place. It showed she had powerful strength.

CLANG!

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew out of its sheath with a black light. It suspended in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Ao Xinyan's eyes constricted.

"He really has reached the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword."

Ao Xinyan activated inscriptions in the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword. Suddenly, waves appeared from the center of the sword and swooshed like a stream flowing around her body.

"From Sky to Earth."

She jumped and crossed the water curtain. Her sword broke through the air and attacked towards Zhang Ruochen's glabella.

She was displaying an Inferior Class Ghost Level sword technique, the Sky sword technique. It could be seen from the power of her sword movement that her Sky sword technique had already reached the succeed.

The power she showed was as strong as that of Lu Fantian and the Orange Star Emissary.

Zhang Ruochen looked very calm. With a flick of his arms, the Abyss Ancient Sword flew out.

SWOOSH!

The sword movement seemed to be casual. Yet, it actually took a mysterious sword technique skill that brought out the 36 sword shadows of sword Qi. Each shadow was a variable, which meant the sword itself contained 36 sword technique variations.

Zhang Ruochen broke Ao Xinyan's Sky sword technique.

Zhang Ruochen did not stop. He immediately executed a second sword technique.

He took a step forward. The Abyss Ancient Sword was already at Ao Xinyan's chest. It was easy to see the sharp sword Qi on its tip.

Ao Xinyan's facial expression changed. She immediately unleashed her Martial Soul.

“AWOO!”

A loud dragon's roar came from her body.

A blue light column rushed out of her head. It condensed into a dragon-like illusory image. Like a blue mountain, it wrapped around behind her.

Ao Xinyan's Martial Soul turned out to be the “Divine Dragon Martial Soul”.

Only a dragon from the Divine Dragon clan could cultivate a Divine Dragon Martial Soul.

It was impossible for the Divine Dragon or half-human clan to cultivate the Divine Dragon Martial Soul. And only a few from the half-human clan could practice the Flying Dragon Martial Soul or the Earth Dragon Martial Soul and cultivate it. Therefore, the power of Ao Xinyan's Martial Soul was incredibly unusual.

“What a powerful Martial Soul. Her Martial Soul is as powerful as the Martial Soul of a Monk at the Fifth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. Lu Fantian's Martial Soul and the Martial Soul of Sacred Tree are both weaker than hers.”

The blue dragon, more than 100 meters long, was lying behind her. It had a giant dragon head, sharp claws and ferocious eyes. Every respect of it radiated a strong and unparalleled momentum.

In the distance, Xi Yunxi and Zuo Qiuling were both shocked by the Martial Soul Ao Xinyan unleashed. They retreated backwards.

Xu Hai's eyes lit up. “It's the Divine Dragon Martial Soul. No wonder Ao Xinyan is called the Genius of the Divine Dragon and half-human clan that only appears once in a blue moon. It's possible she could defeat Zhang Ruochen.”

The Saint standing beside Xu Hai seemed to have reached his 30s. His face was pale and sallow. He said coldly to Xu Hai, “She can practice her Martial Soul into a level comparable to

the Martial Soul of a Monk at the Fifth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. It's really remarkable. When I was in the Final State of the Heaven Realm, my Martial Soul gained the power of the Fourth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm and reached its limit.”

“It's said that Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul is also powerful. Whose Martial Soul is stronger?” Xu Hai asked.

They stopped talking and watched the battle. They wanted to see if Ao Xinyan could force Zhang Ruochen to use all his strength.

“Traceless in the Sky.”

Ao Xinyan leapt up more than 33 meters. She held her sword with both hands and slashed ruthlessly to Zhang Ruochen.

The Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword made a harsh sound and its blade lengthened almost hundred meters. The giant blade seemed ready to tear the earth apart.

The giant blue dragon lying behind her also made a sudden attack. Its claw overlapped with the blade.

The scene before Zhang Ruochen vanished. He heard the sound of waves, like a sea of water was crashing over him. A blue Divine Dragon was swimming in the water brewing storms in rivers and seas. The dragon waved its claws to attack his head.

SWISH!

Zhang Ruochen released his Martial Soul.

His Martial Soul suspended above his head and mobilized the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. The Spiritual Qi gathered into his Martial Soul.

“Soul-slaying Sword.”

Zhang Ruochen had not practiced any Ghost Level sword techniques, so he could only use a Spiritual Stage Superior class sword technique, the Thirteen Swords Technique of Soul Chasing to defend against Ao Xinyan's attack.

Luckily, he had already practiced the Thirteen Swords Technique of Soul Chasing to the Perfection of Martial Arts, so he did not take a beating on sword movement.

“Zhang Ruochen is using a Spiritual Stage Superior class sword technique to defend against a Ghost Level Inferior Class Sky sword technique. The two sword techniques are not on the same level at all...” Xu Hai said.

Yet before he finished speaking, Zhang Ruochen had already broken Ao Xinyan’s sword movement. Then he launched a head-on attack at Ao Xinyan. Turning his sword, he attacked Ao Xinyan’s waist.

Ao Xinyan was surprised. She immediately erected her sword to block him.

CLANG!

The clash of the two swords broke into energy ripples. They turned into Qi billow and poured out in all directions.

Ao Xinyan flew back and fell to the ground. She continued to slide backwards, leaving a deep groove that stretched more than 33 meters.

Everyone was stunned.

The Spiritual Stage Superior class Thirteen Swords Technique of Soul Chasing had broken the Ghost Level Inferior Class Sky sword technique. It proved Zhang Ruochen’s strength indeed exceeded Ao Xinyan’s.

“Zhang Ruochen can’t be this strong just relying on the Heart Integrated into Sword,” Xu Hai exclaimed. “Is... is Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul stronger than Ao Xinyan’s?”

The man standing beside Xu Hai carefully observed Zhang Ruochen. “I can’t see through Zhang Ruochen’s true cultivation.”

Xu Hai also shook his head. “I can’t see it either. He is so unfathomable in the Heaven Realm. If he breaks into the Fish-dragon Realm, he will be even more incredible.”

As the two men discussed his abilities, Zhang Ruochen quickly caught up with Ao Xinyan. He displayed seven sword

techniques simultaneously, giving her no opportunity to breathe.

Ao Xinyan could only see sword radiance so dazzling that she could not open her eyes. She could only rely on her Spiritual Power to feel his sword movement.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen stopped his sword movement. His sword tip pierced through her Celestial Bodyshield and stopped in front of her heart.

Ao Xinyan was bound. Her body appeared to be sealed by the sword Qi; she could not move. She still refused to admit that she had lost to Zhang Ruochen, so she took steps to quickly retreat back.

The sword in Zhang Ruochen's hands was like a spiritual snake, always pointing at her heart.

If he wanted to, he could use the sword at any time to penetrate her heart.

In the end, Ao Xinyan realized the huge gap of power between her and Zhang Ruochen and she stopped dodging. She sighed. "I lost! I could only endure nine techniques. Am I weaker than both the Orange Star Emissary and Lu Fantian?"

Zhang Ruochen withdrew his sword. He realized that Ao Xinyan must have never failed. She also lacked control over her own volition, as she was extremely upset.

When such a person failed, they were unlikely to bounce back.

Zhang Ruochen was after all the Group Leader of the first group. He did not want to see a dimming Genius.

So he comforted her. "Actually, your strength is not weaker than that of the Orange Star Emissary or Lu Fantian. Your strength is stronger than theirs. But, I encountered something recently, so my sword technique and Martial Arts have improved since I fought with them."

What Zhang Ruochen said was true, he wasn't lying to her.

Zhang Ruochen's strength had increased considerably after drinking the Blue-sky Herb Tea.

Chapter 470 - The Pavilion of Book Collection

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Ao Xinyan shook her head and sighed with a struggling look. Obviously, she could not accept her failure.

She had always been highly praised as the best Genius. It was incredibly painful to taste failure for the first time. She even doubted her strength.

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything more.

There was something wrong with Ao Xinyan's mindset, and she had to overcome it herself. When it was all said and done, there was nothing else Zhang Ruochen could do. It was up to her to vanquish her inner devil.

If she could walk away from the shadow of failure, her Heart State and Martial Arts would surely scale new heights

However, if she could not step out of the shadow, the speed of her next cultivation would certainly be slowed down. What's worse, she might not be able to reach the Fish-dragon Realm.

Suddenly, a sound came out just as Zhang Ruochen was about to leave, "Hold on."

Zhang Ruochen turned and looked where the words came from. The man who had been standing by Xu Hai before came to him.

The man looked rather mature. He was tall and thin, and seemed to be in a poor mood. He faced Zhang Ruochen and said, "Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, my name is Pei Ji. I also want to try your sword techniques."

“Pei Ji, such a familiar name, you’re 41st on the Heaven Board, aren’t you? The Bloody Butcher?” Zhang Ruochen was slightly surprised.

“That’s me,” the man answered.

Zhang Ruochen carefully scrutinized Pei Ji. He had trouble associating the man before him with the “Bloody Butcher”. He looked more like a weak scholar.

Pei Ji, had earned an illustrious prestige in the Eastern Region, for making it as the 41st master on the Heaven Board.

Like Xu Hai, Pei Ji was also a returning student. He had been practicing in the Saint Academy for 10 years.

Even Ao Xinyan, who stood to the side in a daze, was shocked. She did not expect that Pei Ji, such a master who had been famous for years, would take the initiative to challenge a new generation Saint.

“Although Zhang Ruochen is very strong, he could never match a top master like Pei Ji.”

Ao Xinyan strongly suspected that Zhang Ruochen could be a match for Pei Ji.

There was a hint of complacency in Xi Yunxi’s eyes. “Xu Hai even sent for Pei Ji. Zhang Ruochen is going to have a rough time!”

“Within the boundaries of the Eastern Region, there are only a few people under the Fish-dragon Realm who can rival Pei Ji. Zhang Ruochen is nothing,” Zuo Qiuling concurred. He stood by, ready to watch with his arms crossed.

SWISH!

Behind Pei Ji, an illusory image of a scarlet demon began to form. It was about ten meters high and had three heads and six arms. Each of the heads began to roar, suddenly forming a fierce Fengxuan.

It was not Pei Ji’s Martial Soul, but a Ghost Level martial technique, the Blood-devil Image.

During the competition between Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan, Pei Ji had seen that Zhang Ruochen's Achilles' heel was that he had not practiced Ghost Level martial techniques.

No matter how exquisitely the martial techniques of Superior class Spiritual Stage were performed, they were not comparable to those of Ghost Level. Once Zhang Ruochen encountered a real superior, he would suffer considerably.

And Pei Ji, obviously, was a real superior.

“Blood-devil Image, Destruction of All Living Creatures!” Pei Ji shouted.

He stood in the distance, twisting his back and raising his arms. He struck a blow in the air with all his bones humming.

The Blood-devil Image, guided by his power, threw a huge scarlet punch. It was like a blood cloud sweeping towards Zhang Ruochen.

Though the force of the punch hadn't arrived yet, a hurricane was already sweeping through. It was so violent, it seemed like it would blow Zhang Ruochen away.

SWOOSH!

Suddenly, Nie Honglou flew in from afar and landed in front of Zhang Ruochen. He quickly stretched out his right arm and let out an energetic growl, “Break!”

The Blood-devil Image was instantly shattered by a powerful force. It turned into wisps of blood fog and returned into Pei Ji.

Pei Ji could not help but retreat 14 steps before barely steadying himself. He stared at Nie Honglou and said in a cold voice, “Who are you?”

Meanwhile, Xu Hai walked toward Nie Honglou. “Sir, your cultivation is powerful. But even so, you shouldn't intervene in this matter. It won't do you any good.”

Nie Honglou's lips curved, “What a shame! Senior Saints fighting with a new one; the big, strong and numerous bullying the small, weak and solitary. I'm certainly going to help him.”

Xu Hai laughed, “Pei Ji and Zhang Ruochen are both in the Heaven Realm. Why not?”

“Pei Ji entered the Saint Academy 10 years ago. He is nearly 50. Zhang Ruochen, on the other hand, just entered today and is only 20. Such a clean match!” Nie Honglou answered in utter scorn.

“Mind your own business.”

Xu Hai’s eyes were suddenly covered with a cold fury. He took out the two swords on his back and mobilized his Genuine Qi into blades.

The two combat swords contained different power; one emitted a glow of a flame and the other sent out a freezing Icing air. These two forces combined to form a giant sword technique circle aimed at Nie Honglou.

Xu Hai had broken through the warriors’ limit and reached the First Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, Innate Embryonic Breath.

The sword technique he was performing was of the Inferior Class Ghost Level. However, the power it carried was more powerful than Ao Xinyan’s sword technique.

This did not mean the Sky sword techniques could never measure up to those Xu Hai performed, but her cultivation was not as strong as his.

Sword techniques of the same Inferior Class Ghost Level were different based on the performers’ cultivation.

Nie Honglou shook his head gently and reached out his glossy hand. He mobilized his Genuine Qi and then shot it out.

BOOM!

Xu Hai spat out a mouthful of blood and hurtled backwards.

With a bang he fell more than 33 meters away. His whole body in was in pain.

His skin even cracked, bursting out more than a dozen long cuts. If Nie Honglou had attacked just a little bit harder, he might have been crushed.

Pei Ji, Xi Yunxi, and Zuo Qiuling all changed their faces and stared at Nie Honglou with shock.

They had no idea of Nie Honglou's strength, but they did know Xu Hai's.

Xu Hai had entered the top 100 on the Heaven Board when he was still in the Heaven Realm. Now that he had broken into the Fish-dragon Realm, his cultivation must have been even more unfathomable.

However, Nie Honglou had just defeated him. Easily.

It was too difficult to guess the upper limit of his strength.

Nie Honglou withdrew his hand and stared at Xu Hai, who was trembling and twisting on the ground. "You are not qualified to fight with me. Unless the Saintly Being of Saint Xu Gentry releases himself from refining, you'd better restrain yourselves. Next time, I won't let you go."

"You... who the hell are you?" Xu Hai struggled to his feet with both hands supporting the ground.

"Nie Honglou." He responded.

Nie Honglou and Zhang Ruochen turned and left.

"Nie Honglou... Nie Honglou... Is it him?"

Pei Ji grew pale. He turned and made eye contact with Xu Hai.

Xu Hai nodded with one hand on his chest. "In view of such a powerful strength, it must be him! He was one of the last Saints. 20 years ago, even though he was the youngest Saint in the first group of Sword Technique Department, he could already rank in the top 10 of the first group. It's said that he left the Saint Academy over a disagreement with the Group Leader. I can't believe he's back!"

Xi Yunxi asked, "Elder brother Xu, what should we do now? If Nie Honglou is helping him, no one in Saint Academy can take Zhang Ruochen down."

"There is nothing to worry about," he replied. "The Saintly Being of our Saint Xu Gentry is going to release himself from refining. By then, even 10 Nie Honglou will fail to protect

Zhang Ruochen. For now, even if we cannot kill Zhang Ruochen, we can humiliate him severely. At that time, what qualification will he have to compete for the Young Master position?”

“That’s great!” Pei Ji said. “I heard that the Saintly Being of Saint Xu Gentry is secluding himself for refining, trying to attain the Ninth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. Once he succeeds, he will definitely be invincible among Saints.”

“Xi Yunxi, Zuo Qiuling, you two keep monitoring Zhang Ruochen’s every move.” Xu Hai added, with gloomy seriousness, “I assume that Zhang Ruochen will surely go to the Battlefield of the Primitive World and strive for the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm. If we can take this opportunity to eliminate him, why even bother the Saintly Being?” #

Xi Yunxi and Zuo Qiuling nodded and left immediately.

Zhang Ruochen left Saint Mountain for the Pavilion of Book Collection in the Saint Academy.

Instead of joining him, Nie Honglou went to visit some old friends in the Saint Academy.

They parted temporarily.

The Pavilion of Book Collection was built underground as an inverted tower. It had 13 floors.

The Pavilion of Book Collection had a long history and various books. Its countless collections included books on multifarious materials, such as bones, iron rolls, Jade Books, bamboo slips, and so on.

Rare books such as ones about exercises, unique martial techniques, a Catalogue of Arrays, methods of controlling beasts, human geography, all could be found here.

Zhang Ruochen did not come here for these rare exercises books or unique martial techniques, but for books about the Primitive World.

This kind of book was filed under Human Geography on the first floor of the Pavilion.

There were many new Saints in the Pavilion of Book Collection with a strong desire for knowledge.

However, they were looking for books on unique martial techniques. Most of them went directly to the second or third floor. Only a few would stop on the first floor.

After all, books here were mostly about basic knowledge.

There was the

Ten Forbidden Areas of Kunlun's Field

, the Collection of Overseas Islands, the

Eight Sacred Earth Aristocratic Families in the Middle Ages in the Eastern Region

, and so on.

Zhang Ruochen searched for about an hour and finally found a copy of the

Brief of the Three-thousand Primitive Worlds.

The book was quite thick, and the text was very small. If you did not infuse Genuine Qi into your eyes beforehand, you could only see black dots on the pages.

Obviously, the predecessor who wrote this book was also an outstanding master.

Chapter 471 - Another Stormy Situation

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The saints who came to the Pavilion of Book Collection were obviously not interested in books of human geography.

Therefore, when Zhang Ruochen took

Brief of Three-thousand Primitive World

from the bookshelf, the book was covered with dust.

He wiped the dust off the cover with his sleeves before he slowly opened the book.

Using the catalog, Zhang Ruochen quickly found a suitable primitive world in the book.

“Primitive World of Wood Spirit is an inferior primitive world with a strong sense of spiritual Qi of wood nature. The primitive world is full of green grass and trees. There’s plenty of spiritual Qi and countless rare spiritual doses and ancient rare plants.”

“The primitive world is extremely dangerous. Flowers, grass, trees, and wood can all become mighty elves that devour humans and beasts.”

Zhang Ruochen’s face lit up with pleasure, saying, “Well! That’s it!”

The primitive world was full of spiritual Qi of wood nature, therefore there must be powerful Qi of Origin of Wood Spirit.

If the Qi of Origin of the Primitive World of Wood Spirit was found and then absorbed by the Yin Yang Wooden Graph, the

sacred prime tree would surely be able to grow and support the inner world of the scroll.

At such a point, Zhang Ruochen would be able to enter the inner world of Yin Yang Wooden Graph to practice. His cultivation would speed up ten times.

Zhang Ruochen quickly read another passage on the scroll. “The Primitive World of Wood Spirit is a splendid environment for the growth of spiritual doses. As a decree issued by the First Central Empire, practitioners above the Fish-dragon Realm are not allowed to enter the Primitive World of Wood Spirit so as not to destroy its natural ecology.”

Practitioners at the Fish-dragon Realm were too destructive to enter the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.

Actually, warriors of the Heaven Realm could enter the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. However, the elves in the primitive world were extremely powerful; ordinary warriors were doomed to die in the primitive world.

Zhang Ruochen originally planned to ask Nie Honglou to go into the Primitive World of Wood Spirit with him.

Nie Honglou’s strength was enough to eliminate the dangers in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit, making it easier to find the Qi of Origin. However, it was not possible to go into the primitive world together with him, therefore, Zhang Ruochen could only depend on his own strength.

In the book, the map of the Primitive World of Wood Spirit was drawn and some major place names were recorded.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his Spiritual Power to store the map in his mind.

“Let’s go now.”

He closed the book, put it back on the shelf, and prepared to go to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.

A delicate lady suddenly appeared from behind the bookshelf, a faint fragrance coming from her body. She stood opposite Zhang Ruochen and said, “Zhang Ruochen, I’ll go with you.”

Zhang Ruochen had been completely engrossed in his reading; he did not notice that there was someone behind the bookshelf.

He could not see her face clearly in the dim light until she took the initiative to come out.

It was Ao Xinyan, the princess of the half-dragon half-human clan.

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, "It's very dangerous there. You'd better stay here."

"If it's so dangerous, why are you going?" Ao Xinyan asked.

"I have something important to do there. You'd better stay here. If you die there, the royal family of the Divine-dragon Half-human Clan will ask me to give an account. So, I do wish you'd spare me the trouble."

Zhang Ruochen walked past her and went out.

Ao Xinyan turned and stared at Zhang Ruochen's back. She clenched her white teeth and said firmly, "There has been a flaw in my heart state ever since I was defeated by you. It could be made up only if I defeat you; I will follow you everywhere you go until I do."

"Really? I doubt if you can keep up with me."

Having said this, Zhang Ruochen shook his body and disappeared.

Ao Xinyan snorted and immediately used her martial arts to pursue him.

However, once she was out of the Saint Academy, she lost Zhang Ruochen, who had disappeared without a trace.

"Damn, how can he be so fast?"

Ao Xinyan stomped her feet hard and looked around. She mobilized Genuine Qi and shouted, "Zhang Ruochen, since you prohibited me from following you, I will ask more people to pursue you. You will finally know what real trouble is. Just wait and see."

Zhang Ruochen stood on the top of a grey-tiled pavilion in the distance, with his hands behind his back. He faced the Saint

Academy and clearly heard Ao Xinyan's words. He shook his head and smiled. He did not take her words seriously.

Swoosh!

He moved quickly and disappeared again.

After two hours, Zhang Ruochen and Blackie set out and left East Region Saint City.

Not long after, a message began spreading in the Seventh District. Moreover, it was spreading extremely quickly.

“Zhang Ruochen, one of the six kings of the new generation, left for the Primitive World of Wood Spirit from the East Region Saint City today. It is said that he is going to deal with an important matter.”

“What important matter? In my opinion, Zhang Ruochen is going there because he knows that there are some amazing treasures in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.”

“It is said that there are many spiritual doses there. If one is lucky, he'll be able to pick up the holy medicine.”

“Oh my God! In this case, the Primitive World of Wood Spirit is awash with treasures. So what are we waiting for?”

...

The Primitive World of Wood Spirit became well-known because of Zhang Ruochen's journey. In less than a day it rose to fame and was recognized by countless young warriors.

Moreover, its reputation became more and more magical. Someone claimed that they had picked up holy medicine there.

Therefore, on that very day, a large number of masters of the Heaven Realm and groups of mercenaries left the East Region Saint City. They took ships through the wormhole and went to Chaotic Millionverse Mountain. Everyone wanted to go to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.

Xi Yunxi and Zuo Qiuling immediately returned to the Saint Academy and relayed the information to Xu Hai.

Xu Hai, who was recovering from serious but nonfatal injuries, was very excited. He laughed loudly and said, “That's

great! Zhang Ruochen has a death wish. Only warriors below the Fish-dragon Realm can enter the Primitive World of Wood Spirit so Nie Honglou can't go in. Without the protection of Nie Honglou, Zhang Ruochen can do nothing. Hurry up! Hurry and get Pei Ji. This time we must do everything to get rid of Zhang Ruochen.”

Before long, Pei Ji, Xi Yunxi, and Zuo Qiuling had already selected 18 masters from Saint Xu Gentry, Saint Xi Gentry, and Saint Zuo Gentry at the Completion of Heaven Realm. At their highest speed, they hurried to Chaotic Millionverse Mountain.

In the Jinhong Mainland of the East Region Saint City, there was a sacred mountain surrounded by white mist.

In the mountain, there was an Academy.

At that moment, the sun was shining and the clouds were clear.

Di Yi held a scroll of bamboo slip and sat under a cherry tree. He was reading the bamboo slip.

“Swish!”

From the distance, Orange Star Emissary turned into a shadow and flew in. She passed through the vermilion palaces and appeared in front of Di Yi.

Suspended in midair, she said, “Young master, Zhang Ruochen has left East Region Saint City. It is said that he has gone to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.”

“Oh!”

Di Yi laid down the bamboo slip and lifted his brow slightly. He deliberated for a minute before saying, “Do you know who released the information? Is Zhang Ruochen deliberately mystifying to trap our Black Market?”

Di Yi always did things with caution. Ever since he was defeated by Zhang Ruochen, he dared not underrate him.

Orange Star Emissary said, “It was Ao Xinyan, a saint of the Saint Academy.”

“Ao Xinyan, isn't she the princess of the half-dragon half-human clan?”

“Yes, she is,” said Orange Star Emissary.

The corners of Di Yi's mouth lifted as he smiled and said, “How could Zhang Ruochen offend her?”

Ao Xinyan was highly talented. As one of the geniuses of the Saint Academy, she also needed to be stifled in the cradle. She had already been listed by Di Yi.

“It is said that she was defeated by Zhang Ruochen not long ago. Moreover, Zhang Ruochen only used nine movements,” Orange Star Emissary said.

Di Yi contemplated for a moment, saying, “In that case, this is not Zhang Ruochen's trap.”

“I have some knowledge of the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. It is said that only warriors below the Fish-dragon Realm are allowed to enter. Seeing that Zhang Ruochen has gone there, this is a good opportunity for us.”

Orange Star Emissary asked, “Young Master, are you going there yourself?”

Di Yi shook his head and said, “I'm at the critical period of breakthrough. I can't go there right now. If I have enough time, I shall go there immediately after breakthrough.”

Orange Star Emissary said, “Since that is so, I'll lead the Glazed Knight to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. This time, I'll surely be able to kill Zhang Ruochen. I won't give him any chance.”

“No, you're not his opponent.”

Di Yi tapped his fingers softly on the table, saying, “Red Wish Emissary might have refined the Blood Spirit Elixir. Her strength now is not inferior to yours. Both of you, lead a team of Glazed Knight and a set of Nine Star Formation Flag to Chaotic Millionverse Mountain.”

Orange Star Emissary said, “Is it necessary to deal with Zhang Ruochen with a Nine Star Formation Flag? Even with two sets?”

Di Yi answered, "I want you to attempt to capture Zhang Ruochen alive. Of course, if you can't catch him, you can kill him. A person like Zhang Ruochen shouldn't be alive."

Orange Star Emissary knew clearly that Di Yi had always wanted to capture Zhang Ruochen and use him to practice shadow.

If Zhang Ruochen died, Di Yi would go after the second best choice: Bu Qianfan.

Bu Qianfan's figure flashed in Orange Star Emissary's mind. There was a look of struggle in her eyes. She bit her lip and made a decision that she would capture Zhang Ruochen at all cost.

Now, Zhang Ruochen could not die.

Di Yi looked at Orange Star Emissary's back as she left, and his eyes sparkled with an evil smile. He ordered, "Black Heart, come out!"

A black-clothed man appeared in front of Di Yi and got down on one knee. He said, "Young Master, what is your command?"

"Yellow God Emissary should be getting experience for himself in the Primitive World of Xuan Wu. Pass down my orders to ask him to go to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit."

"I want him to do two things. The first thing is to figure out why Zhang Ruochen went to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. The second thing is to capture Zhang Ruochen or kill him in any manner."

The black-clothed man hesitated and said, "Young Master, you've already sent Red Wish Emissary and Orange Star Emissary to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit to attack Zhang Ruochen. Is it necessary to ask Yellow God Emissary to take action personally?"

Di Yi laughed and said, "Red Wish Emissary and Orange Star Emissary are just the ones I openly sent there. Their combined strength is not enough to defeat Zhang Ruochen. Actually, Yellow God Emissary will be the one to deal with Zhang

Ruo Chen. Don't ask me any more questions, and go do what you should do."

"Yes, Young Master!"

The black-clothed man contorted and turned into a cloud of black fog, then he sank into the earth and disappeared.

Chapter 472 - Ten Thousand Fields Tavern

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen took a giant silver-white ship and set off from the East Region Saint City. He passed through the wormhole and came to Myriad Chaos Mountain again.

This giant ship belonged to the Ministry of War of the imperial court.

It started in the Seventh District, and its destination was Myriad Chaos Mountain.

It took a warrior 500 spiritual crystals to buy a one-way ticket.

Zhang Ruochen bought two one-way ship tickets to Myriad Chaos Mountain with 1,000 spiritual crystals.

Blackie needed a ticket, too.

He needed Blackie to help him to search for the Qi of Origin in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. Therefore, he needed to take the cat along.

After they stepped off the ship, Blackie rolled his eyes and said, "Zhang Ruochen, I feel funny. Why do I always feel as if someone is following us?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "Leave them alone. First, I'll register at the Ministry of War. "

The whole Myriad Chaos Mountain was managed by the Ministry of War of the imperial court.

Even those warriors who voluntarily rushed to the Battlefield of Primitive World were first required to go to the Ministry of

War to register and get tokens of identity.

Last time he was here, Zhang Ruochen did not need to register. The Martial Market Bank had an agreement with the Ministry of War that the Saint Academy could send students directly to the Five Elements Primitive World for examinations.

This time, Zhang Ruochen came alone to the Myriad Chaos Mountain. So, he needed to register.

Ministry of War.

The government official responsible for registration was a gaunt man over 60 years old. He looked at Zhang Ruochen and said in a hoarse voice, “You need to pay one spiritual crystal to register as a soldier of Primitive World.”

The old man looked at Blackie behind Zhang Ruochen and added, “Savage beasts and war pets don’t need to register.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a spiritual crystal and placed it on the counter.

“Name?”

“Zhang Ruochen.”

“Age?”

After registration, the old man threw a black token to Zhang Ruochen and said, “Keep in mind that you must wear this token all the time. It proves your identity. If you lose it, there will be consequences.”

“What are the consequences?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The old man glanced at Zhang Ruochen and grinned. He said coldly, “A person without a token is no different from creatures in the Primitive World. The Ministry of War won’t send a boat to fetch him.”

“I see. Thank you for the information.”

According to the old man’s instructions, Zhang Ruochen dripped a drop of blood on the surface of the token.

“Whoosh!”

The blood was absorbed by the token, and it disappeared.

In the future, the token symbolized Zhang Ruochen's identity. It could show that he was a soldier of the Primitive World in Kunlun's Field.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Where can I catch the warship to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit?"

The old man rolled his eyes and said, "The Primitive World of Wood Spirit is protected by the imperial court. It doesn't belong to the Battlefield of the Primitive World. Therefore, no warship will go there."

"How can this be? I heard that warriors below the Fish-Dragon Realm are able to gain experience there." Zhang Ruochen frowned.

The old man stared at Zhang Ruochen and smiled slyly, saying, "Exactly. Warriors below the Fish-Dragon Realm can go to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit to gain experience. However, not all those warriors are qualified to go there."

"What do you mean?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The old man replied, "The Primitive World of Wood Spirit is a small world in which the imperial court cultivates spiritual medicine. Only titled nobility is allowed to gain experience there. Of course, if you really want to go, it's not impossible."

"Do you have any idea?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The old man had a smile on his wrinkled face. He stared at Zhang Ruochen's backpack.

Zhang Ruochen immediately understood what he meant. He opened the bag, took out a head-sized red spiritual crystal, and placed it in front of the old man.

This spiritual crystal was not only huge, but also of excellent quality. It could be divided into one hundred parts.

The old man's eyes flashed, and he immediately put it away. He whispered, "Rules are dead, but people are alive. If you want to risk your life in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit, you can sneak into it."

"How can I sneak in?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The old man smiled and said, “For the sake of the spiritual crystal, I’ll give you some advice. There’s a place called the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern in Myriad Chaos Mountain. When you arrive there, go to find Chief Steward Qi. He’ll help you to sneak in the warship to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.”

“The Primitive World of Wood Spirit is a good place for its plentiful spiritual medicine. Every month, many young men want to go there to try their luck. It won’t be long before a boat is full of people.”

Obviously, the old man had made such deals before. Apparently, he had a kickback arrangement with Chief Steward Qi.

After leaving the military camps of the Ministry of War, Zhang Ruochen went straight to the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern.

It was the largest tavern on Myriad Chaos Mountain, and it had a good reputation. Therefore, it was not hard to find.

Many warriors who had experienced life and death on the Battlefield of the Primitive World would go to the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern to have a drink. In doing so, they relieved the high pressure and alleviated tiredness.

In the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern, warriors could drink the best booze. Also, they could enjoy the company of the beautiful tavern girls, as long as they had enough spiritual crystals.

A short, thin man in gray welcomed Zhang Ruochen. He smiled and bowed, asking, “Master, did you just return from the Battlefield of the Primitive World? Have you found anything good? The Tavern can offer a high price.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the man and discovered that he was at the Mid Stage of the Earth Realm.

He sighed at the thought that the Myriad Chaos Mountain was really out of the ordinary. Even the lowest-ranked person had uncommon martial strength.

In Yunwu Commandery, a person who reached the Earth Realm could be a rare master.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I want to see Chief Steward Qi."

The small man suddenly understood and whispered, "Master, which primitive world do you want to go to?"

"The Primitive World of the Wood Spirit," Zhang Ruochen said.

"All the warriors who are going to the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit are gathering in the Star Hall. Tonight, Chief Steward Qi will count up the number of people. Tomorrow, you can all go there by ship."

Following the man, Zhang Ruochen came to the Star Hall.

The Star Hall occupied a small piece of land in the backyard of the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern. It had two floors. Many young warriors had already been there.

All of them would sneak into the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit. Therefore, they had all gathered that night.

Zhang Ruochen's arrival drew no attention.

He went to the second floor and found a seat to the side. He ordered a pot of rice wine and waited quietly.

Blackie also climbed on the seat and sat opposite Zhang Ruochen.

Three men sat on Zhang Ruochen's left. All of them had reached the Heaven Realm. Zhang Ruochen was attracted by their conversation.

"Huang Shenyi's military merit increases so fast. He has already exceeded 10 million points."

"Huang Shenyi has ranked first on the Heaven Board for four years. He grows more and more powerful. He's likely to advance to the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm. Therefore, he hasn't broken through the Fish-Dragon Realm."

In the Star Hall, almost all the warriors were at the Heaven Realm.

Few warriors of the Heaven Realm did not want to be ranked on the Heaven Board.

Therefore, when people mentioned “Huang Shenyi,” everyone was excited. Many stories were told about him.

“Huang Shenyi,” Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Actually, Huang Shenyi was a Yellow God Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall. His strength was legendary. In terms of aptitude, he absolutely could be ranked among the top three of the Seven Star Emissaries.

At that moment, the whole hall suddenly became quiet. All the people looked towards the gate.

A leggy woman walked through the gate. Her appearance was stunning, with white skin and bright eyes.

Her beauty caught everyone’s attention as she came in.

It was rare to see such a beauty on the Myriad Chaos Mountain.

Zhang Ruochen felt the room shift, and he followed everyone’s gaze. But when he saw the woman who walked in, he knit his brows.

It was none other than Ao Xinyan, the princess of the half-dragon half-human clan.

“How can it be her again?”

Ao Xinyan saw Zhang Ruochen sitting on the second floor. With everyone watching, she gracefully went upstairs and casually sat beside Zhang Ruochen.

Her eyes were like clear water, fringed with luscious lashes. She stared at Zhang Ruochen and said with a smile, “I finally caught up with you.”

Zhang Ruochen lifted his glass and took a sip. He said, “The Primitive World of the Wood Spirit is dangerous. Myriad Chaos Mountain isn’t safe. I suggest that you leave.”

Ao Xinyan lifted her chin and squared her shoulders, saying willfully, “Hum! Even if you’re the Group Leader, you’re not entitled to interfere with me. Also, based on my cultivation, I should come to the Battlefield of the Primitive World to gain experience.”

It could not be denied that Ao Xinyan was definitely a dangerous beauty. Every twinkle and smile could capture a man's soul.

But Zhang Ruochen was not attracted to her good looks.

However, other warriors leered at her. Many of their eyes gleamed lust, and they were anxious to fling themselves upon her.

“She is so hot! I would give ten years of my life to spend one night with her.”

A burly, bearded warrior at the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm fixed his eyes on Ao Xinyan. He was burning with eagerness. He rubbed his hands together, arose from his seat, and walked to Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan.

“Little girl, that guy looks worthless. You should follow me rather than him. I promise that I'll take good care of you when we reach the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit.”

The big man smiled evilly and stretched out his big hairy hand to touch Ao Xinyan's pert behind.

Chapter 473 - The Four Wei Brothers

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Ao Xinyan's look turned cold, and she placed her white hand on the hilt of her sword. With a swish, a sword radiance suddenly flashed across the hall.

In the next moment, the big, curly-bearded man's arm separated from his body. It arced through the air with a splatter with blood.

“Ahh... My arm...”

The man clutched his bleeding shoulder and stepped back three steps. His face was painfully distorted, and a scream came out of his mouth.

However, as a master of the Heaven Realm, he quickly suppressed the pain and immediately summoned Genuine Qi to block the blood vessel of the severed arm to prevent further blood loss.

“Bitch, you dare to hurt the youngest brother. I'll make you beg for death when I get ahold of you.”

“Pow!”

In the back of the room, three tall warriors of the Heaven Realm suddenly stood up. One lifted the table and smashed it with a punch.

All the three men were tall and robust, looking even stronger than the bearded man.

He had become more cautious after Ao Xinyan removed his arm, and he retreated behind the three men. He warned, “First

brother, second brother, third brother, this little girl's sword training is advanced, with profound sword skills and incredible speed. You must be careful!"

His second brother glanced at Ao Xinyan with a look of disdain, saying, "Fourth brother, you're overanxious. Our eldest brother reached the Completion of Heaven Realm ten years ago. Now, he has become a master on the Heaven Board. With such profound cultivation, he can easily cope with the little girl."

All the warriors in the Star Hall were surprised at the second brother's words.

Everyone looked at the eldest Wei Brother.

"Unbelievable! He's a master on the Heaven Board!"

Even the lowest ranked warrior on the Heaven Board could fight alone with three or four common warriors of the Completion of Heaven Realm.

Millions of warriors at the Heaven Realm had been listed on the Heaven Board. However, Kunlun's Field had vast territory and abundant resources. The warriors were beyond count. Actually, each warrior on the Heaven Board was a top-notch talent in each place. Although they were below the Fish-Dragon Realm, they could absolutely be counted as masters.

The eldest Wei was 2.6 meters tall and had bronze skin. His arms, chest, and legs bulged with massive muscles. At a glance, he looked like a huge human-shaped copper tower.

Even just standing there, he radiated a sense of power that could split mountains or tombs at any moment.

"The Wei family is a Fourth Class family. A thousand years ago, a half saint was born in the Wei family. It can be counted as a half-saint family. "

"Those two are so unlucky. The people they offended were the four Wei brothers. The oldest Wei's not somebody to mess with."

"Beauty is so dangerous!"

“Aha! Who cares about the man? The woman is petite and stunning. Once she’s caught by the rude Wei brothers, she’ll become miserable.”

...

All the warriors in the Star Hall watched heartlessly from the sidelines.

Of course, some people secretly sighed, and some felt pity for Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan. However, they could not afford to provoke Wei brothers, so they did not dare to speak out.

The third Wei brother’s mouth stuck out over a chin like an ape’s. He stared hungrily at Ao Xinyan’s body. He laughed loudly and said, “Eldest Brother, you are overqualified to deal with a little girl. I can also take care of her.”

The third brother walked three steps around Ao Xinyan. Suddenly, he sank his legs and bent his knees, lowering his body’s center of gravity. His fingers bent into claws.

“Huaa!”

The Genuine Qi inside his body moved quickly across his meridians. His fingers flashed with golden light.

The air around his fingers was distorted, vibrating slightly.

He was not really distorting space. It was an illusion created by the surge of Genuine Qi.

“Heartsplit Eagle Claw.”

The third brother quickly rushed out and attacking repeatedly with both arms to form 16 illusory images of the claw. There was incessant explosive sound in the air.

This Wei brother also had deep cultivation. He had reached the Final State of the Heaven Realm, one step away from the Completion of Heaven Realm.

He was using the Nine Ways of Heartsplit Claw, a superior-class martial technique of the Spiritual Stage. The Heartsplit Eagle Claw is just one of the nine. He had practiced this martial technique to perfection.

He had a frightful presence, like an eagle taking prey. Strong Qi formed around his arms. However, the man, woman, and cat sitting beside the table were calm.

At lightning speed, his hand touched Ao Xinyan's neck.

When Ao Xinyan was almost caught, the stunning beauty flashed and disappeared under his claws.

“Fuck off!” a voice shouted.

In the next moment, everyone saw that the third Wei had flown backward and dropped to the floor more than ten meters away. He uttered sad, shrill cries. “My eyes ... my hands ...”

Both hands were cut off and his eyes had been plucked out. He stood up from the ground and fumbled around blindly. Finally, he ran into the wall, fell down to the first floor, and went faint.

The whole Star Hall became completely quiet.

Everyone stared at Ao Xinyan.

Such a beautiful and delicate woman had turned out to be a martial arts master. Unbelievably, her casual stroke destroyed the third Wei brother.

How powerful she was!

Any weathered man would know that this woman should not be offended.

The oldest Wei brother looked solemn, but soon he squeezed out a smile. He walked toward Ao Xinyan and apologized in a humble way, saying, “My brother offended you in his ignorance. I'm willing to make an apology to you. Please don't be angry and forgive us!”

Ao Xinyan was somewhat proud, and she said sarcastically, “Aren't you a warrior on the Heaven Board? How can you ask for mercy when we haven't fought?”

He took another step forward and bowed respectfully. He smiled apologetically, saying, “How can I be your opponent with my cultivation? Even if I practiced for another decade, my cultivation would still be far away from yours.”

Ao Xinyan was a haughty woman. Hearing this flattery, she was pleased, and she nodded and smiled. She said, "Since you're observant and sensible, today, I'll spare your life. Next time, you won't be so lucky."

"Thank you, lady. Thank you, lady," the eldest Wei brother repeated.

He bowed in deep gratitude.

But the moment he looked down, a cunning look passed his eyes.

Between two fingers of his right hand, a cyan ox-hair needle appeared without a trace. He silently pushed it into Ao Xinyan's lower abdomen.

"Chh!"

The cyan ox-hair needle directly hit a meridian that crossed her stomach.

The poison of the needle poured out, went into the meridian, and quickly blended in with the Genuine Qi across her body.

Ao Xinyan was a genius, but she had never experienced any setbacks. She did not realize how wicked people could be.

Especially in the Battlefield of the Primitive World, people needed to understand the way of survival. They had to be careful to maintain the highest vigilance.

If not, even with higher cultivation, they would be killed by someone with inferior cultivation.

"Damn, you dare to attack secretly."

Ao Xinyan's eyes widened as her anger grew.

She ran Genuine Qi across her whole body quickly, ejecting the cyan ox-hair needle. Ao Xinyan placed her fingers on the hilt again. With a swish, her Blue Water Dragon-Patterned Sword flew out of its sheath.

When she was ready to stab, she felt a stabbing pain in her lower abdomen. Her Genuine Qi was blocked by an invisible force, and all her meridians convulsed.

“Crash!”

Her body was weak and her arms became powerless. The Blue Water Dragon-Patterned Sword fell to the ground.

After seeing Ao Xinyan fell on the ground, the eldest Wei brother laughed loudly. He said, “You’ve been pricked by my Phoenix Needle. If you want to fight with me, you’re asking for trouble.”

The Phoenix Needle was a tenth level Genuine Martial Arm. It was his ace in the hole. It was highly toxic. It could even break through the Celestial Bodysield of a warrior of the First Change in the Fish-Dragon Realm after an inscription in the needle was activated.

Every time the eldest Wei met a stronger opponent, he would use the Phoenix Needle to launch a surprise attack. It was a time-honored method.

With such a treasure in hand, he could easily deal with a little girl.

At his age, Ao Xinyan was only a fledgling girl to him.

He withdrew the Phoenix Needle. Then, he picked up the Blue Water Dragon-Patterned Sword. He held it in hands and observed it carefully.

Suddenly, he was stunned. He said ecstatically, “Is this ... This is a ...”

He could clearly feel that the blade of the sword emitted some faint Spiritual Qi. Because of this, he said nothing more.

Was this a Holy Sword?

How precious was a Holy Weapon! Once it was born, it would definitely cause a bloody battle.

The Wei family was known as a Fourth Class family. The Wei’s had only one holy weapon. It was a Family Treasure, which could be used by the family leader.

If this really was a Holy Sword, it would be a huge windfall for them.

Wei's eldest son was thrilled. His hands were trembling and his blood was boiling.

The second and fourth brothers did not know that the oldest had obtained a Holy Sword. They stared at the paralyzed Ao Xinyan with evil smirks on their faces. They came over to carry her away.

“Hoho! The Wei family is at least a Half-Saint family. It's to be regretted that it'll be exterminated. It's a pity! It's a pity!”

The voice of a charming woman rang in the hall. She sighed again and again.

The second and fourth brothers, who had already gone, stopped when they heard the voice. They looked back angrily.

They wanted to see who dared to talk so wildly.

Chapter 474 - Red Wish

Siren

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

When they looked over, they were stunned. They were no longer angry but obsessed.

In the corner of the second floor of the Star Hall, there was an enchanting woman wearing sheer red gauze.

Her snow-white feet were bare as she sat on a chair, revealing her slim calves and round thighs, looking very sexy.

She was the one who had just spoken.

The red gauze was so thin, her snow-white skin and graceful figure could be seen faintly. It was very seductive.

In terms of beauty, she was equally matched with Ao Xinyan.

However, when Wei Second Son and Fourth Son looked at her, they found it impossible to look away – as if she had taken their souls.

Wei Eldest Son's will was a little stronger so he remained rational, with a flicker of doubt in his heart.

“When did this woman come to the Star Hall?”

Wei Eldest Son was absolutely sure that there was nobody sitting there when he had thrown the Phoenix Needle at Ao Xinyan.

In a flash, she had mysteriously appeared in front of the crowd without anyone noticing.

“What terrifying cultivation is this?”

Wei Eldest Son pulled back Wei Second Son and Fourth Son who were walking toward the woman in red, fearing they would offend her.

Wei Eldest Son stared at the woman with fists clenched, saying, “What did the lady mean just now?”

She blinked her eyes and chuckled, saying, “Don’t you know that the man and the woman sitting before you are Saints of the Eastern Region Saint Academy?”

Zhang Ruochen looked at her and mobilized his Spiritual Power to open his Sky Eye and see through her sorcery.

“Red Wish Emissary. Why did she come to the Myriad Chaos Mountain?”

Zhang Ruochen closed his Sky Eye and pondered.

This enchanting woman sitting in the corner was the youngest Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall, Red Wish Emissary.

Although she had concealed her true appearance with sorcery, she didn’t fool Zhang Ruochen.

“They are Saints?”

Wei Eldest Son was very shocked.

Saints were the most outstanding talents trained by the Martial Market Bank. They would become its high-level leaders in the future.

Provoking the powerful and influential Martial Market Bank was something the Wei family could not afford to do.

As Red Wish Emissary had implied, if they dared to sleep with a Saint, they would bring disaster to their family.

Cold sweat gathered on Wei Eldest Son’s forehead and he began shaking. He looked at the Holy Sword in his hands, ready to give it back.

Red Wish Emissary suddenly sneered and said, “Don’t you think it is too late to return the Holy Sword by now?”

“Then ... what can I do?” Wei Eldest Son said with fear.

Red Wish Emissary laughed. “Don’t be afraid. If the Wei family seeks refuge with me, I can protect you from the Martial Market Bank. You will not only obtain a Holy Sword, but also a beauty and a powerful backer. It’s a big win for the Weis!”

Wei Eldest Son looked at Red Wish Emissary and asked, “Are you strong enough to fight the Martial Market Bank?”

“Of course.”

“Why should I believe you?”

“Because of this.”

The expression of Red Wish Emissary’s eyes became sharp and her body exuded a strong aura. She took out a scarlet token and placed it on the table.

“Black Market Excellence Hall.”

Seeing the words on the token, Wei Eldest Son, Second Son, and Fourth Son all trembled and knelt on the ground.

Warriors were more afraid of the Black Market than the Martial Market Bank.

After all, the Martial Market Bank was a righteous force. No matter how strong it was, it would consider the consequences and leave some room to maneuver whenever it did anything – they would not go overboard.

On the other hand, the Black Market had no scruples. For those who offended it, death was the kindest sentence. They had so many more punishments worse than death.

Red Wish Emissary said, “The person you just plotted against isn’t an ordinary Saint. She’s not only a Half-Saint disciple of the Saint Academy but also the princess of the Divine Dragon half-human clan. You really have no other way to go but to seek refuge with me. Do you have any objection?”

The three Wei brothers looked at each other and saw the fear in each other’s eyes.

Finally, they kowtowed and said, “We would like to pledge our loyalty to you.”

“Rumble!”

The deafening sound of iron heels was heard from outside the Star Hall.

Eighteen Glazed Knights came to a stop outside the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern and jumped from savage beasts' backs with Dragon Bone Spears in their hands. They walked into the gate one by one and entered the first floor of the Star Hall.

“All hail, Red Wish Emissary.”

All the 18 Glazed Knights were in the Completion of Heaven Realm. They wore colored glaze armors that allowed them to burst out with the power of cultivators of the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

They knelt down simultaneously and shouted with one voice.

“What? She is the Red Wish Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall!”

“Why did she bring 18 Glazed Knights here? What on earth is happening?”

The impact of the 18 strong auras left all the warriors in the Star Hall feeling suffocated. They knew that for the people of the Black Market Excellence Hall to come here, there was something strange afoot.

The three Wei Brothers were also surprised. They never thought that the woman in front of them could be so important. No wonder she claimed that she could contend with the Martial Market Bank.

At the same time, they were also quite excited.

If the Wei family could seek refuge with the Red Wish Emissary, would they still be afraid of not being able to prosper in the future?

Red Wish Emissary smiled winningly. “Get up, everyone. Wei Eldest Son, the Holy Sword can be yours, and the woman on the floor, you may take away. But, whether you can take the sword and the woman all depends on your skills.”

She was looking at Zhang Ruochen as she spoke.

Wei Eldest Son followed her gaze. When his eyes fell on Zhang Ruochen his face became cold. “Your Excellency, Red Wish Emissary, rest assured. He’s just a young Saint! I, Wei Eldest Son, can deal with him.”

With the support of Red Wish Emissary, Wei Eldest Son feared nothing.

As long as he killed the man, he could take the Holy Sword and the beauty. Was there a better deal in the world?

Red Wish Emissary laughed and said, “Don’t say I didn’t warn you that the man sitting before you is the No. 1 of the Eastern Region Saint Academy this year. Known as the king of the new generation, he is called Zhang Ruochen.”

Wei Eldest Son was not an Eastern Region warrior, so he was not familiar with Zhang Ruochen’s name.

In his point of view, no matter how talented he was, Zhang Ruochen was still just a 20-year-old man. How strong could he possibly be?

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Wei Eldest Son and sighed, saying, “Red Wish Emissary, why do you want to bring me into this??”

Red Wish Emissary laughed and said, “Zhang Ruochen, if Wei Eldest Son wants to take away the woman on the ground, will you stand idly by? She came to the Myriad Chaos Mountain chasing you.”

“You’re right. I can’t just stand by.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at Ao Xinyan on the ground and discovered that her lips had turned pale blue, an indication that she had been deeply poisoned. From a distance, he stretched out one hand to condense a current of Genuine Qi and exerted power on her back to roll her up.

Although she was poisoned and could not move, she had not passed out and her mind was clear.

“Zhang Ruochen, I ... I don’t need you to save me!”

Ao Xinyan's face was pale, but she was still very arrogant.

As he lifted her up, she kept struggling, wanting to use her own power to refine the poison herself.

Zhang Ruochen had known she would be like this, which was why he didn't try to be nice and help her earlier.

He wanted to see if she could refine the poison by herself.

However, he discovered that she had not only failed to refine the poison in her meridians, the toxicity had gotten worse. The current of poisonous gas had already rushed to her brain and was about to enter her Qi Sea.

Once the poisonous gas entered her Qi Sea, she would lose all her cultivation.

Therefore, despite her ungratefulness, he still lifted her up and prepared to cure her.

"Zhang... Zhang Ruochen ... you ... if you dare ... touch me ... I'll cut your hand off ..." Ao Xinyan said feebly.

She had resented Zhang Ruochen and had seen him as an opponent ever since she lost to him. Even in her desperation, she would not let him help her.

Ignoring her words, Zhang Rouchen put his index finger and middle finger together and struck the junction of Ao Xinyan's nine meridians.

Meanwhile, golden Qi of Saint Dragon flew from his fingertips and turned into nine filaments of light, attacking the nine nodes.

The Qi of Saint Dragon refined the poison.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was helping Ao Xinyan refine the poison, Wei Eldest Son's face lit up and he grinned hideously. "Faced with impending death, you still want to be the hero and rescue the beauty. Second and Fourth Brothers, let's handle him together."

They attacked almost at the same time, hitting Zhang Ruochen's head, chest, and legs respectively.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at them and released the Celestial Bodyshield, forming a five-meter-diameter green ball.

The three Wei Brothers hit the green ball and were thrown back by the Genuine Qi.

Wei Eldest Son was strong enough to resolve the power with just a step backward, however, the power of the Celestial Bodyshield sent Wei Second Son and Fourth Son flying through the air, falling embarrassingly.

Zhang Ruochen said, “If you don’t want to die, get the hell out of here.”

“Not bad, boy.”

With a sullen look, Wei Eldest Son held the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword tightly and injected his Genuine Qi into the blade to activate the inscription.

“Go to your death!”

With a roar, he grabbed the sword with both hands and thrust it out. Using the mighty power of the Holy Sword, he pierced through Zhang Ruochen’s Celestial Bodyshield and stabbed toward the heart.

Chapter 475 - Courting Death

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

One of Zhang Ruochen's hands pressed against Ao Xinyan's body while he stretched out two fingers of the other.

Under the power of the Qi of Saint Dragon, fine gold dragon scales grew on the skin of his two fingers. They extended quickly and clasped the point of the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword.

Then, he snapped his fingers.

A powerful force passed from the tip of his fingers into the blade of the sword, and then finally into the arm of the Wei's eldest son.

” Chh!”

The gap between his index finger and thumb seemed to split open and it felt like all five of his fingers had been broken. The Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword fell from his hand.

But Wei's eldest son was a warrior on the Heaven Board. He had a wealth of fighting experience. After being forced back, he did not stop fighting. Instead, he immediately sent out the Phoenix Needle towards the center of Zhang Ruochen's back.

Zhang Ruochen rolled up the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword with his Genuine Qi and held it in his hands. With a swing of his arm, a streak of Sword Breath flew out.

“Snap!”

The Sword Breath struck the Phoenix Needle and turned it around. It struck Wei's eldest son between his eyes and left a

tiny spot of blood. The needle flew out of the back of his head and landed in a wooden column.

The tip of the needle was still dripping blood.

Wei's eldest son held his head in his hands and knelt on the ground as he screamed in pain.

Before long, his head had turned blue. Blood flowed from all seven apertures of his head, and he died on the spot.

Ao Xinyang sucked in a cold breath as she watched Wei's eldest son's grotesque death. She secretly congratulated herself that fortunately, Zhang Ruochen had helped her refine the poison. Otherwise, the person now lying on the ground would have been her.

Although, Ao Xinyan still had an ungrateful expression on her face.

However, in her heart, she was very grateful to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen did not pull his palm away until the Qi of Saint Dragon had refined most of the poison in Ao Xinyan's body.

"Eldest Brother, eldest brother..."

Wei's second and fourth sons saw their dead elder brother, and their faces immediately turned deathly pale. They immediately knelt in front of the Red Wish Emissary and begged, "Your Excellency, you must avenge our brother."

The Red Wish Emissary's red lips curved, and she smiled wickedly. "It was you brothers who angered your enemy. What does it have to do with me? Since the eldest of you has already died, now, it is your turn! As long as you kill Zhang Ruochen, the Holy Sword and the beauty are all yours."

Having seen Zhang Ruochen's terrifying strength, how could the second and fourth Wei dare to fight with him?

With sorrowful faces, they said, "Your Excellency, Zhang Ruochen is too powerful. If we try to fight him, how is that different from death?"

A cold smile stretched across the Red Wish Emissary's face. "If that's the case, then what use do I have for you two lumps of crap?"

The Red Wish Emissary extended a long, slender finger and waved it in front the Wei brothers. Then, she lifted it up.

"Oh...uh...help..."

Suddenly, the two brothers went mad and squeezed each other's necks tightly.

In the end, their necks became as thin as a red wine glass. Fresh blood flowed from the corners of their mouths as they fell to the ground together.

The deaths of the second and fourth Wei brothers were so strange. They actually choked each other to death! The hackles of all the warriors in the Star Hall rose as they stared in horror at the Red Wish Emissary.

This siren was even more dreadful than a demon.

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Red Wish Emissary had used sorcery to make the Weis hallucinate. Thus, they went crazy and choked each other to death.

No one could deny that those who practiced sorcery were truly very terrifying.

Regardless of how high a warrior's cultivation, as long as his Spiritual Power was weaker than the Red Wish Emissary, he could fall prey to her sorcery.

Zhang Ruochen could see that the Red Wish Emissary's Spiritual Power was very close to the 40th level.

In terms of Spiritual Power, many monks in the Fish-Dragon Realm could not compare with her.

A sudden shout rang out in the Star Hall, "How dare you! The imperial court's Ministry of Way has clear orders. If someone dares to kill people on Myriad Chaos Mountain, they will be severely punished."

"Tap! Tap!"

A string of footsteps rang out.

Immediately after, Chief Steward Qi of the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern came in, leading four warriors wearing armor.

“Chief Steward Qi is coming!”

“Chief Steward Qi has finally arrived!”

...

Zhang Ruochen glanced towards Chief Steward Qi. This man looked to be about 40 years old. He wore armor, with straight brows and keen eyes. His figure was tall and sturdy. It was clear that he was an important figure.

Then, Zhang Ruochen took a look at the four warriors in armor following Chief Steward Qi. He thought to himself that it was no wonder Chief Steward Qi could help warriors secretly cross into the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. Turns out that the man himself was a high official in the Ministry of War.

The Red Wish Emissary stood up and gave a tinkling laugh. “Everyone saw that the second and fourth Wei brothers strangled each other. It has nothing to do with me at all. Chief Steward Qi, you cannot accuse me unjustly. I am quite a well-mannered person.”

Chief Steward Qi glanced towards the Red Wish Emissary, and then he looked at the 18 Glazed Knights and cursed secretly in his mind. Why were people from the Black Market Excellence Hall also sneaking into the Primitive World of Wood Spirit?

The imperial court had long supported the Martial Market Bank and suppressed the Black Market. But that was in Kunlun’s Field, while this was the Myriad Chaos Mountain.

Empress Chi Yao had ordered that whoever wished to go to the Battlefield of Primitive World to expand territory for mankind, regardless of whether they were warriors from the Black Market or the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, could all come to the Myriad Chaos Mountain. The Ministry of War was not to give them any difficulties.

Although Chief Steward Qi was not afraid of the Red Wish Emissary, he did not dare to offend the Black Market

Excellence Hall. Thus, he only mentioned it and spoke no further.

Then, his gaze fell on the body of Wei's eldest son. He asked, "Who killed him?"

Calmly, Zhang Ruochen said, "He was killed by his own Phoenix Needle."

Chief Steward Qi looked at Zhang Ruochen.

Chief Steward Qi already had a general understanding of what had happened before he even came through the door. Thus, he knew about Zhang Ruochen's identity as a Saint of the Saint Academy, and about the disciple of Sword Saint Xuan Ji.

Although Chief Steward Qi was an official of the Ministry of War with the support of the imperial court at his back, when he met a disciple of a sword saint, he still had to be extra polite. There was no need to offend the other party for the sake of a dead man.

In the end, he could only order people to carry out the three brothers' bodies. Of course, Wei's third son who had fainted earlier was also carried away.

Chief Steward Qi's expression was slightly dark, and he was clearly in a bad mood. He said, "This is the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern. Since you are here, I trust that you know about the identity of our boss and how much power he has."

"Regardless of whether it is Saints from the Saint Academy or Evil Warriors from the Black Market Excellence Hall, as long as you have come to the Myriad Chaos Mountain and to the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern, then you must abide by our rules. If anyone chooses to break the rules, regardless of who, they will suffer the consequences."

At that moment, even the Red Wish Emissary appeared grave. She said nothing.

It was clear that even with her status, she did not desire to offend the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen felt a light, fragrant wind coming in from a distance. Thus, he turned his gaze to look in the

direction of the window.

He watched as an orange and white shadow flew in through the window. It condensed into a veil-covered girl. It was the Orange Star Emissary from the Black Market Excellence Hall.

The Orange Star Emissary's beautiful eyes met Zhang Ruochen's gaze above her veil.

Then, she walked towards the Red Wish Emissary. They gathered together in conference.

“The Red Wish Emissary, the Orange Star Emissary, and 18 Glazed Knights had all come to the Myriad Chaos Mountain at the same time. It looks like their target truly is me.”

Zhang Ruochen secretly raised his guard.

If it was just the Red Wish Emissary, Zhang Ruochen could handle her. But dealing with the additional Orange Star Emissary would be more troublesome.

Most importantly, Zhang Ruochen did not know how many masters the Black Market Excellence Hall had dispatched in total.

Had only the Red Wish Emissary and the Orange Star Emissary rushed over?

Chief Steward Qi continued, “The warship heading toward the Primitive World of Wood Spirit is heading out tomorrow morning. Monks whose cultivations have reached the Fish-Dragon Realm, please make your own way. Although the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern can help smuggle you across, we will not break the rules of the First Central Empire.”

The Ten Thousand Fields Tavern could help smuggle warriors into protected Primitive Worlds or ones that were controlled by a powerful Saint family. As long as they did not take it too far, the Ministry of War would turn a blind eye if they discovered it.

However, it would be different if the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern smuggled Monks in the Fish-Dragon Realm into the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.

These monks could devastate the Primitive World of Wood Spirit, and then they would certainly be discovered by high-level officials in the Ministry of War. If that happened, even the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern would suffer.

Chief Steward Qi continued, “When you are in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit, you can stay as long as you want, or you can stay forever. It is up to you. At the beginning of each month, a ship from the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern will go at a certain time to a particular place in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. If you wish to leave, you only have to wait at the specified place. The ship will be able to bring you back.”

“Now, if you want to go, you may come to me to buy a ticket. Each ticket is 10,000 Spiritual Crystals.”

As soon as Chief Steward Qi finished talking, someone immediately exclaimed, “10,000 Spiritual Crystals for one ticket! It’s too expensive!”

Chief Steward Qi raised his voice and said, “If you can’t afford it, get out.”

It was truly extraordinarily expensive that a one-way ticket cost 10,000 Spiritual Crystals.

A lot of people had wanted to brave the dangers of the Primitive World of Wood Spirit, but after hearing the ticket price, they began to back down. In the end, a portion of the people left after balancing the losses and gains.

“Please give me three tickets, and you can keep the change!”

Ao Xinyan walked over, took out a green, superior quality Spiritual Crystal, and gave it to Chief Steward Qi.

One such superior quality, water nature Spiritual Crystal was worth at least 50,000 common Spiritual Crystals.

A smile appeared on Chief Steward Qi’s face, and he happily accepted the Spiritual Crystal. Afterward, he gave three tickets to Ao Xinyan.

Ao Xinyan came back, placed two tickets on the table, and said to Zhang Ruochen, “Earlier, you helped me to refine the poison, and now I have helped you buy a ticket. We’re even!”

Chapter 476 - Arrival at the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“If you say we are even, then, of course, we are even.”

Without hesitation, Zhang Ruochen took the two tickets.

An unnatural expression rose on Ao Xinyan’s pale face. It clear that she was slightly embarrassed.

After all, Zhang Ruochen had saved her life.

How could that be repaid with two tickets?

The Red Wish Emissary, the Orange Star Emissary, and the 18 Glazed Knights all proceeded to buy tickets.

“We would like to buy tickets, too.”

Another group of people came in.

Zhang Ruochen looked over and saw three familiar figures. They were Pei Ji, the 41st person on the Heaven Board, Xi Yunxi, a disciple of Saint Xi Gentry, and Zuo Qiuling, a disciple of Saint Zuo Gentry.

Other than them, 18 masters of the Completion of the Heaven Realm followed behind. One could tell just by looking into their eyes that they were not people to be taken lightly.

With Pei Ji in the lead, they went to Chief Steward Qi and bought tickets.

Afterward, Pei Ji, Xi Yunxi, and Zuo Qiuling came to the second floor and sat down at a table to Zhang Ruochen’s right.

In the next hour, another four groups of people arrived at Star Hall and bought tickets from Chief Steward Qi.

Most importantly, these four groups of people were all at the Completion of the Heaven Realm. The leaders of every group were all high ranking masters on the Heaven Board.

The Red Wish Emissary crossed her snowy white legs and elegantly lifted the jade cup. She stared at Zhang Ruochen and smiled. "It's becoming more and more lively!"

Chief Steward Qi also felt that something was not right.

The Primitive World of the Wood Spirit was only an Inferior Primitive World. Even though it had some rare Spiritual Medicines, in terms of danger and profit, it was incomparable to some of the other treasure worlds.

How could it attract so many masters?

Did the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit give birth to some incredible treasure?

Chief Steward Qi shook his head and felt that this was too unlikely. If the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit had given birth to a marvelous treasure, he would definitely be the first to know about it.

"I hope it won't cause too much of a ruckus."

Since he had already taken their money, Chief Steward Qi had to ensure they got to the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit, even if he felt like something strange happening.

On the contrary, Zhang Ruochen appeared unusually composed. He did not cower at the appearance of these masters.

Since he had already decided to retrieve the Qi of Origin of the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit, he had to push through regardless of the danger. Even if he chose another Primitive World, these people would still follow him.

At the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern, everyone respected the rules and did not immediately try to attack Zhang Ruochen.

This night appeared to be very calm.

The next day.

Chief Steward Qi indeed found a ship on time. With everyone on board, they passed through the wormhole and flew toward the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit.

Upon arrival at the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit, the ship stopped in an endless forest and hovered 30 meters above the ground.

Chief Steward Qi stood on the side of the ship and said, “We have arrived! You can now disembark. After a month, I will be here again. If you want to return to the Myriad Chaos Mountain...”

Suddenly, Chief Steward Qi’s voice stopped and his gaze fixed on the horizon. A few black spots appeared there.

Chief Steward Qi’s expression changed, and he cried, “Not good, it’s a patrol of guards responsible for this world! You have to get off now. Quickly! Quickly! Quickly!”

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ruochen jumped down from the ship. In a flash, he charged into the boundless ancient forest.

Blackie also jumped down and followed closely behind him.

“Zhang Ruochen, where are you going?”

Ao Xinyan was always at Zhang Ruochen’s side and thus, at the first moment, she followed him off the ship and stayed close behind him.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen jump down, the other warriors immediately caught up.

“Boom!”

A moment later, the ship, which had been hovering 30 meters above the ground, shot into the sky with an accompanying boom from the space fluctuation. It disappeared from the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit.

Zhang Ruochen pushed his speed to the limit and reached a speed twice that of sound. In the space of 10 breaths, he was already hundreds of kilometers away.

He paused briefly and looked toward the horizon, only to see 10 black dots flying in the direction of where the ship had been.

“Sky Eye.”

A spot of light rose between Zhang Ruochen’s brows and created a vertical Sky Eye.

With the power of the Sky Eye, he could finally see the 10 black dots clearly. They were actually 10 giant savage beasts, specifically Purple Tiger-Like Dragon Beasts.

It was a superior fourth class savage beast. Its fighting strength was above that of a warrior at the Completion of the Heaven Realm.

An armored soldier sat on the head of each of the 10 Purple Tiger-Like Dragon Beasts.

Of the ten soldiers, nine had a martial cultivation that had reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm. The person in the lead had already surpassed the Heaven Realm and had reached the Fish-Dragon Realm.

They were obviously the Ministry of War guards that Chief Steward Qi had noticed.

This was probably just a small team of them.

As Zhang Ruochen used Sky Eye to observe them, the leading soldier seemed to have felt something, and he turned his head. He stared in Zhang Ruochen direction, hundreds of kilometers away.

Zhang Ruochen immediately withdrew his Sky Eye and pulled the aura back into his body. He once again executed a bodily movement and flew into the distance.

“Captain, what’s wrong?” a patrolling soldier asked.

The patrol captain withdrew his gaze and his eyes were cold. He said, “The people who snuck in this time are quite powerful. Just then, I clearly felt a gaze observing us. However, when I looked in that direction, the gaze disappeared.”

“Was it a Monk in the Fish-Dragon Realm?”

The captain shook his head and said, “It shouldn’t be. Although the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern has some connections with a major figure in the Ministry of War. They do smuggle some people into the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit, but they don’t dare to overdo it. They probably wouldn’t smuggle in a Monk in the Fish-Dragon Realm. It should be a warrior on the Heaven Board.”

“What should we do now?”

“There’s no need to bother much about it. If we see any intruders we will seize all of them. If they dare to resist, then we kill them.”

The 10 Purple Tiger-Like Dragon Beasts rushed down and landed on the ground. The guards began to search for intruders.

An hour later, Zhang Ruochen was already far away from that patch of forest. He had arrived at the banks of a large river.

The river water was so clear that he could see the colorful rocks lying on the bottom.

Although the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit was an Inferior Primitive World, it was filled with Spiritual Qi. The air was very clean and giant ancient trees grew everywhere.

Various exotic plants and rare herbs of blue, green, purple, red, and thousands of other colors grew on the ground. They gave off a faint fragrance of flowers and Spiritual Medicine.

Zhang Ruochen did not have the time to pick any Spiritual Medicines. He looked behind him and saw Blackie, who had caught up. He asked, “How can I find the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit’s Qi of Origin?”

Blackie stood on his back legs and extended a paw. He said, “Give the Yin Yang Wooden Map to me. Only by using it can we find the Qi of Origin.”

“Huaa!”

A bright light flashed from between Zhang Ruochen’s eyes. The Yin Yang Wooden Map flew out and landed in front of

Blackie.

Blackie's slowly opened it.

Two gusts of Genuine Qi flowed out from his paws and entered the picture.

Some inscriptions on the picture flashed with a dark light and slowly flowed around. Immediately after, they flew out and charged into the ground.

With the scroll as the center, the black lights spread out in all directions like strands of thread.

A moment later, Blackie put it away and said, "The Map has already located the general direction of the Qi of Origin, we can head that way now. Of course, the Qi of Origin has spirituality, so it has probably already sensed the dangerous aura. It will certainly use some methods to try and fight us."

The Qi of Origin was the master of a realm. It was also known as the "Spirit of the World," "Heavenly Way," "Karma," and "Destiny."

It could decide everything in this world. In the darkness, it could control the destiny of every single thing.

If it felt that someone meant harm to them, then it would first take steps to use the rules of this world to get rid of the people that meant it harm.

Some powerful Qis of Origin could even use the power of thunder, fire, water, etc. It would use the power of heaven and earth to kill any living creature that threatened it.

"Zhang Ruochen, you cannot escape me." A sweet-sounding woman's voice came from the distance.

In the woods, a human shadow flashed by.

Ao Xinyan flew down from the top of the branches. Her long hair spread open in the air like a waterfall and her long, green skirt lifted up, revealing two pin-straight and slender legs.

As she landed on the ground, Ao Xinyan pushed out her full chest and raised her snow-white chin, staring proudly at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen and Blackie looked at each other.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Ao Xinyan, I am in the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit because I have something important to do. I urge you not to follow me. You might run into some unexpected calamities.”

Zhang Ruochen was not using his words to try and scare her. He was giving her honest advice.

Zhang Ruochen had come to the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit to defeat the Qi of Origin. In other words, he was going to make an enemy of the entire world.

It was impossible to guess what tricks the Qi of Origin would use to fight Zhang Ruochen, but one thing was certain. Zhang Ruochen could be in danger at any moment. He could face natural and man-made disasters. Traveling along with him was a very dangerous thing.

Ao Xinyan huffed coldly and said, “Stop threatening me. In any case, before I defeat you, don’t think you can leave my line of sight.”

Zhang Ruochen tried to convince her again. “If you keep following me, how will you have time to practice? If you don’t have time to practice, how can you defeat me? You should not have come here. I urge you to find a place to hide, and then leave on the Ten Thousand Fields Tavern’s ship after a month.”

“Do you look down on me?”

Ao Xinyan’s eyes turned to ice, and she said, “Given my power, do I need to hide in an Inferior Primitive World?”

Zhang Ruochen glanced behind Ao Xinyan and cried out, “Be careful!”

Chapter 477 - Heart Knot

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

There was a two meter tall rare purple herb behind Ao Xinyan. It was completely silent when all of a sudden, a vein pattern appeared on the leaves.

The leaf began to crack, revealing a large black eye, like that of a human. It was also like that of a monster.

“Be careful,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Ao Xinyan was astonished. She also sensed an incoming danger and she was about to dodge.

HUAA!

One of the leaves from the purple plant quickly rolled over and wrapped around Ao Xinyan’s body.

Both of her hands were bound. She could not pull out her sword. She could only relocate her Genuine Qi to both of her arms to shake off the plant.

However, it was quite resilient. No matter how much energy she used, the leaves remained unscathed.

Ao Xinyan began to panic. She inadvertently inhaled a horrible odor.

The gas was toxic. She began to feel nauseous. Numbness generated through her whole body, making it more difficult to reallocate her Genuine Qi.

“What a strong human being. After absorbing your Spiritual Blood, my cultivation will advance the equivalent of 100 years cultivation.”

The rare herb suddenly let out a human voice.

It had a total of seven leaves. One of them was wrapped around Ao Xinyan. The other six shifted into sharp tube-like objects that stabbed towards her body.

PHEW!

The sound of sword resounded.

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew out from its sheath and made a distinctive arc in the air.

The ancient sword created a sword breath. It cut through the plant, chopping down all six leaves.

Blood poured out from the broken leaves.

The rare purple herb let out a human-like screech. It fled, leaving only its leaf twined around Ao Xinyan.

“It can still move?”

Zhang Ruochen smirked. He pointed out his index finger. A flaming red sword wave attacked the herb.

It was struck by the sword wave and shattered into pieces.

The leaf caught fire, letting out a buzzing sound. It burned into black ashes that drifted in the wind.

Ao Xinyan was lying on the ground, her eyes closely shut.

Zhang Ruochen retrieved his Abyss Ancient Sword. He walked towards her and put two fingers on her neck.

He released Genuine Qi into her body.

A few moments later, he removed his hands. “The poison was not too overpowering. She is just unconscious temporarily. With her cultivation, she could wake up in half a day.”

“Hey! Zhang Ruochen, why are you causing such havoc? Why don’t we just leave her here and go collect the Qi of Origin first?” Blackie asked.

Zhang Ruochen hesitated. “We should take her along! She’s unconscious. If we leave her behind, there is a fair chance she could be devoured by the Wood spirit or Grass spirit.”

“How is that possible? Who will carry her?” Blackie asked.

“You of course.”

Zhang Ruochen repositioned his hands. He cast his Shadow of Royal Wind Dragon bodily movement and disappeared into the woods. The only thing left behind was his illusory image.

Blackie glanced briefly at Ao Xinyan. “What a trouble maker.”

It picked up Ao Xinyan and put her on its back. It turned into a black light shuttle and chased after Zhang Ruochen.

Soon after they left, a group of people arrived.

It was Pei Ji, Xi Yunxi, Zuo Qiuling and 18 masters at the Completion of Heaven Realm. They had been sent by the three Great Saints of the powerful families.

BUZZ!

Above Zuo Qiuling’s head, there was a swarm of bees flying around. Each bee was as big as a fist.

They were Swift Bees, a type of second-level savage beast.

Zuo Qiuling was not merely a Genius of Martial Arts, he was also a highly regarded Beast Trainer. He had the ability to control the Swift Bees to track Zhang Ruochen’s aura.

“Zhang Ruochen left 15 minutes ago. He went northeast,” Zuo Qiuling said.

With a skeptical look, Xi Yunxi said, “What on earth brings Zhang Ruochen to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit?”

Zuo Qiuling replied, “Zhang Ruochen’s journey to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit not only attracted our attention, it also attracted the attention of the people from the Black Market and the heresy. This primitive world must have something spectacular. Zhang Ruochen would not take such a humongous risk otherwise.”

Xi Yunxi said, “The Buddhist Emperor and the Golden Dragon must have told him something before they died. The secret probably lies here.”

Zuo Qiuling said, “This is possible.”

“Nothing will be done if we keep on making wild guesses,” Pei Ji said somberly. “When we catch him, we will find out his motives for coming here.”

Zuo Qiuling and Xi Yunxi nodded.

The Swift Bees continued to track Zhang Ruochen’s movement.

Dawn in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit was fairly long. It occupied two thirds of the day.

Night emerged. Two massive moons could be seen in the sky like two shiny jade plates clinging to a dark cloth. A few bursts of shiny light poured down.

Zhang Ruochen and Blackie stopped. They had found higher ground and paused for a brief break.

Ao Xinyan was awake. Although her cultivation had not fully recovered after taking the detoxification pill, she was okay.

However, she remained silent. She stood motionlessly under the moon.

She had always been a conceited and self-willed person. It was acceptable for her to lose to Zhang Ruochen, but after leaving the Saint Academy, she had gotten into trouble twice. If Zhang Ruochen had not bailed her out, she would have been dead.

How could this be?

Ao Xinyan was beginning to doubt her abilities.

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged on a white boulder to practice. He replenished his Genuine Qi, which had been consumed during the day. It was now completely recovered and he was once more in his Peak state.

The Final State of the Heaven Realm was within grasp. In just a few days he would likely achieve the breakthrough.

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and retrieved the Genuine Qi that was spreading throughout his body. He opened his eyes and realized that Ao Xinyan was still standing unmoved in the same spot.

She looked at him. “Zhang Ruochen, are you laughing at me?”

Zhang Ruochen replied, "Why would I do that?"

"I'm pretty sure you're laughing at me. You are laughing at my incapability, my arrogance and my overstatement. Perhaps you are right. I should just find a shelter to hide or I should leave and go back to the Saint Academy."

Her eyes were red and she looked like she was about to burst into tears at any moment.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Would you prefer the truth or a lie?"

"The truth."

Nervous, she held her breath.

It was pretty obvious that she was quite concerned about what Zhang Ruochen thought about her.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Your talent is undeniably high. I suppose it's incomparable. You are a Genius indeed. If you practice further, there is no doubt you will achieve a Saint status."

"You're lying to me." Ao Xinyan was doubtful.

"There is no reason to lie to you," he replied. "If you didn't have the talent, I would not waste my time telling you this much and ultimately, I would not have saved you twice."

"But..." Ao Xinyan replied.

Zhang Ruochen stood up and continued, "You are feeling lost now because you have never suffered such setbacks. Only through failure can people bounce back."

He went on, "You did not fall into the trap of Wei Eldest Son and the grass spirit because you have feeble strength. It is because you lack of experience, since you were little and you have never met any evil people. And, you overestimate your ability."

"The Battlefield of Primitive World is not a tournament arena. It is not easy to survive."

"Be optimistic. Try to train more, and experience and endure setbacks. In the future, you won't be as vulnerable as you are now."

Ao Xinyan listened quietly to Zhang Ruochen's preaching, like a little girl listening to her parents' advice.

Zhang Ruochhen told her a lot and she listened quietly. Her pretty eyes grew brighter. She looked at Zhang Ruochen with a new light in her eyes.

Four hours later.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I've told you everything I should tell you. Your happiness is up to you now."

Ao Xinyan's looked much more relieved. She smiled and said, "Group Leader, you said that one must suffer setbacks before he can actually bounce back. Do you mean that you actually fell into a similar vicious cycle?"

She addressed Zhang Ruochen as "Group Leader" now. It meant her Heart State had changed.

Zhang Ruochhen glanced at her. It seemed he was recalling something. Then he nodded. "Yes, of course. There was a very horrible one, which almost stopped me from standing up again."

"Impossible! With your super power and invincible reputation, how is it even possible that somebody was able to take you down?" Ao Xinyan was curious.

Zhang Ruochen answered, "No more questions! Even if you ask, I will not answer. In addition, I would like to advise you again to stop following me in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. It will not bring you anything good."

"Why? You want to refuse such a beautiful woman from accompanying you. You must know that many disciples of powerful Saint's families tried to ask me out and I refused them."

Ao Xinyan was much happier. Her mood was fine. She started to smile and made fun of Zhang Ruochen.

Under the moonlight, her skin was as pristine as jade. Her facial features were almost flawless, and she had very nice curves.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Because I want to be the arch rival of the whole Primitive World of Wood Spirit.”

“What?” Ao Xinyan asked.

“You won’t understand.”

Just as Ao Xinyan was pondering what Zhang Ruochen said...

Zhang Ruochen heard a sound. His eyes concentrated. He quickly turned backwards and looked towards the southwest.

“Such a strong murderous feeling, they are catching up!”

Chapter 478 - Archenemies Arrived

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Blackie also felt the incoming murderous feeling. He got up, looked at Ao Xinyan and said, “Our arch rivals are going to arrive. Trouble maker, you should leave.”

“Who are you calling trouble maker, fat cat?” Ao Xinyan glared at Blackie.

Blackie rolled his eyes as if to say,

“If it’s not you, who else then?”

Ao Xinyan gritted her teeth. If she had not also felt the incoming masters, she might have beaten the wretched animal.

Ao Xinyan walked towards Zhang Ruochen. She drew out her Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword. With a bit of remorse, she said, “Perhaps it is because of me, that these people have come to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. I’m sorry.”

“You think that they wouldn’t be chasing us if you hadn’t spread the news?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

As the pinnacle of the latest generation, Zhang Ruochen’s every move was under the surveillance of every major force. Even if Ao Xinyan hadn’t spread the news, those who had strong animosity towards him would surely know his whereabouts in a short time.

Ao Xinyan said, “This has something to do with me. I will help you.”

Zhang Ruochen could not persuade her to leave anymore. The masters were getting nearer and had begun to surround them.

It would not be easy to flee.

Blackie was on the ground. Its claws were scratching rapidly.

Every time Blackie slashed the ground, an Inscription of Array would be imprinted. The traces of the inscriptions crisscrossed and overlapped each other. Soon, it was a 12-meter-long circular Battle Formation.

Ao Xinyan was astonished. She had not expected the fat cat could make an array.

And, its speed of drawing the inscriptions was absolutely mind-blowing.

“Zhang Ruochen is indeed not a common person, even his pet cat is superb. The array it inscribed is full of complexity and depth, is it a Fourth Class array?”

Ao Xinyan’s mood was very complicated. It was unbelievable.

No matter how strong you were, there was always somebody stronger.

Array Masters had elite status in Kunlun’s Field.

Especially Array Masters who could form a grand array, they were regarded very highly, even equal to Half-Saints and Saints.

If a warrior could be assisted by a powerful array, his strength would be doubled, perhaps more.

The Saint Academy had an Array Department, too. However, there were only a few freshmen that could inscribe a Fourth Class array.

If the cat could create a Fourth Class array, wasn’t it better than the geniuses in the Saint Academy?

Blackie looked at the finished inscription. He shook his head and sighed, “Too bad, I can only create the Fourth Class array, Wild Wind and Broken Cloud Array. If my strength was slightly higher, there is a decent chance I could do a Fifth Class array.”

It took out a few Spiritual Crystals. It carefully buried them into the ground, then used the inscriptions to combine the

Spiritual Crystals with the array.

The Spiritual Crystals provided energy for the operation of the array.

Two beaming Shadows appeared, flying at an intense speed under the moon. They landed on the hillside.

The two Shadows stopped. The outline of a man and a woman could be seen.

The man was tall and handsome with nice eyes. The woman was tall and glamorous, a beauty like the moon.

They were Zuo Qiuling, from Saint Zuo Gentry and Xi Yunxi, from Saint Xi Gentry.

Xi Yunxi exposed two rows of perfect white teeth. She looked at Zhang Ruochen in the distance, and said with a smile, “You knew we were catching up, why aren’t you trying to escape?”

Zhang Ruochen answered, “You are Saints from the Sword Technique Department’s first group, and I am the Group Leader of the first group. I have no reason to escape from you.”

Zuo Qiuling and Xi Yunxi looked at each other. They burst into laughter.

Zuo Qiuling wiped the smile from his face. A look of animosity appeared. He said, “Zhang Ruochen, you think the Saint Academy rules apply here? A village boy from Omen Ridge wants to be our Group Leader. You think too highly of yourself.”

Ao Xinyan stepped forward and asked, “Zuo Qiuling, Xi Yunxi, why are you chasing us?”

Xi Yunxi looked at Ao Xinyan, as if she was an idiot. “We’re here to kill Zhang Ruochen of course. Why else would we be here? Thank you for your treachery of Zhang Ruochen’s whereabouts. Without it, we would not have arrived so fast.”

Ao Xinyan’s expression changed slightly. “But we are all Saints from the Saint Academy, how can we kill each other? Aren’t you afraid of being punished by the Saint Academy?”

“As long as Zhang Ruochen vanishes in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit, who will ever know? You know too much. You will accompany him to hell!”

“Let’s kill her first and deal with Zhang Ruochen afterwards.”

Simultaneously, Xi Yunxi and Zuo Qiuling cast bodily movements and rushed towards her.

POW!

Ao Xinyan swung his sword, executing an arc of sword Qi.

The palm power and sword Qi collided. Xi Yunxi and Zuo Qiuling were forced back and returned to their original location.

Their palms had been cut by the sword Qi, leaving a long bloody gash.

“You are too weak to fight with me. How can you possibly defeat the Group Leader?” Ao Xinyan questioned them.

“You think so?” Xi Yunxi smirked.

SWOOSH!

18 shadows jumped out from the bushes. Every of them had the cultivation of the Completion of Heaven Realm. They surrounded Zhang Ruochen, Blackie and Ao Xinyan.

The 18 people had been carefully selected by the powerful Saint families. They were all masters.

Although they were not warriors on the Heaven Board, they were just as powerful.

Even Ao Xinyan, who was overconfident, was not convinced she would be able to resist the siege of 18 warriors at the Completion of the Heaven Realm.

Xi Yunxi ran her Genuine Qi to flow in her palm and her injury soon recovered. She said, “No matter how strong you are, there is no way that you can resist the combined strike of 18 warriors at the Completion of the Heaven Realm.”

Ao Xinyan retreated two steps into the Wild Wind and Broken Cloud Array. She stood next to Zhang Ruochen and

whispered, “We will join hands and find our way out.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head gently. Focusing in the other direction, he said, “Since you are already here, Pei Ji, just show yourself.”

TAP! TAP!

Pei Ji walked slowly out from the bush. “Zhang Ruochen. I wonder, why don’t you stay in the Saint Academy? Instead you decide to come to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. Don’t you know that death is inevitable here?”

“Of course I have reasons to come here,” Zhang Ruochen replied. “Besides, I don’t think it’s rational to keep hiding in the Saint Academy for the rest of my life. One has to go out and experience life beyond the walls.”

Ao Xinyan was not as relaxed as Zhang Ruochen when she saw Pei Ji. Her face grew pale.

With Zhang Ruochen’s help, escaping from the 18 masters of the Completion of Heaven Realm was still a possible outcome. However, Pei Ji’s appearance was like a grim reaper, crushing their chance of survival.

He was the 41st warrior on the Heaven Board, the Bloody Butcher.

His fame and the rank revealed the ruthless battles Pei Ji had endured. It proved just how strong he was.

Warriors who were below the class of Fish-dragon Realm would certainly be bothered if they encountered Pei Ji.

Ao Xinyan clenched her lips. “It’s because I leaked your track that they are here. Just go, Group Leader, I’ll handle them.”

She exuded her Genuine Qi into the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword, triggering the Holy Sword’s inscription. She rushed forward.

“From Sky to Earth.”

It was an Inferior Class Ghost Level sword technique, the Sky sword technique.

Affected by the sword Qi, the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi turned into a wave. Alongside with her combat sword, it struck towards Pei Ji.

“How over-confident you are.”

Pei Ji shook his head. His Genuine Qi spilled out from his Qi Sea, flowing to his right arm and rushing out of his pores. It formed a circular flame.

“Flame Beast Power!”

As Pei Ji let out his palms, a savage beast’s roar could be heard from his arms.

It was as if there was a behemoth sealed in his arms.

Letting out his force, the palm power turned into an illusory image of a Flame Beast. Like a fire hurricane, it struck towards Ao Xinyan.

POW!

Ao Xinyan’s sword Qi condensed in thin air; it was destroyed by the Flame Beast’s illusory image.

Ao Xinyan then exuded her Genuine Qi into the glazed spinel on her wrist. It emitted a few lines of inscription and formed a light screen, shielding her entire body.

The illusory image of the Flame Beast collided into the light screen, pushing her back 33 meters.

Horrified, Ao Xinyan realized that Pei Ji was overpowering. If she had not triggered her amulet treasure’s protective power in time, she would have been heavily wounded.

Is this the power of the 41st master on the Heaven Board?

Pei Ji’s strength not only took Ao Xinyan off guard, it also amazed Zhang Ruochen.

Pei Ji immediately took his palm back and turned around as if everything was under his control. He said, “Fleeing is no longer an option. Zhang Ruochen, hand over the Dragon Pearl, at least I can provide you a mercy killing.”

Based on Pei Ji's cultivation, it was unnecessary to take orders from Xu Hai.

The reason he had been so eager to rush to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit to challenge Zhang Ruochen was the Dragon Pearl.

Acquiring the dragon pearl would not only increase his strength, it would also make it easy to become one of the top ten masters of the Heaven Board. Of course, breaking through to the Fish-dragon Realm would also become much easier.

"You want the Dragon Pearl, too," Zhang Ruochen said smiling.

Zuo Qiuling stood behind Pei Ji and spoke coldly. "Zhang Ruochen, if you knew what was going to happen, you would quickly hand over the Dragon Pearl."

"The Dragon Pearl is with me. If you want it, earn it." Zhang Ruochen said.

Zuo Qiuling smiled and said, "Okay, I'll show you my real strength."

Chapter 479 - Fierce Battle

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Some strange sounds were uttered from Zuo Qiuling's mouth.

After which, the sound of breathing immediately rang out from under the ground and in the jungle.

Suddenly, the ground cracked open, from which several savage beasts with strange bodies climbed out. The howls of the savage beasts resounded throughout the jungle.

Most of those savage beasts were only at the Inferior Stage, however, their numbers were very large. They rushed toward Zhang Ruochen like a tide of beasts.

“You're actually a Beast Trainer. I underestimated you!”

Zhang Ruochen propped up the Celestial Bodyshield and it formed a round, green ball.

Since he had the protection of the Celestial Bodyshield, Zhang Ruochen would no longer care about those savage beasts of the Inferior Stage. He mobilized his Genuine Qi, stretched out a finger, and pointed at Zuo Qiuling across the void space.

“Whoosh!”

A Sword Wave flew out of Zhang Ruochen's fingertip and formed a cold sword path that flew toward Zuo Qiuling.

“Whoosh!”

The Sword Wave contained an extreme Icing Air and left a thick layer of Icing Cold on the ground where it had flown over. It was unknown how many savage beasts of the Inferior Stage would be frozen.

Zuo Qiuling waved his arm and a triangular shield flew out from his sleeve.

In the center of the shield, a green light emanated and formed a triangular shield shadow that was eight meters in height.

This was a defensive 10th-level Genuine Martial Arm. Under Zuo Qiuling's power, the inscriptions were activated to give it great defensive power.

“Pow!”

The Sword Wave hit the triangular shield and the shield shadow was struck and then collapsed.

Under the impact of that great power, Zuo Qiuling trembled. He could not regain his balance until he had successively stepped backward more than 30 meters.

A layer of crystal-clear, transparent Icing Cold grew on the triangular shield, even Zuo Qiuling's arms were covered by a cold, white frost. But fortunately, he was able to ward off Zhang Ruochen's Sword Wave.

Zuo Qiuling said with a laugh, “Zhang Ruochen, what can you do to me?”

Suddenly, a black shadow flew up to Zuo Qiuling and condensed into the shape of a black cat.

That black cat quickly stretched out a claw and slid it across Zuo Qiuling's neck.

Completely out of the blue, three long bloody lines appeared on his neck.

Zuo Qiuling trembled and the sound of a dry cough came from his mouth. Then, those three bloody lines on his neck became three bloody gashes, continuously spilling out blood that dyed his clothes red.

“Pow!”

Zuo Qiuling's body slumped down and his head separated from his neck and rolled into the distance just like a ball.

“I especially hate these Beast Trainers.”

Blackie stood on the chest of Zuo Qiuling's corpse. It showed two snow-white teeth and a long howl was sent out from its mouth.

After hearing Blackie's howl, those savage beasts of the Inferior Stage were extremely frightened and retreated like a tide.

The successor of the Saint Zuo Gentry was unexpectedly killed by a cat.

Everyone present was stunned, except for Zhang Ruochen.

Pei Ji was the first one to realize it. His eyes darkened as he said, "How dare you! A beast dares to kill the successor of the powerful family of the Saint!"

He rushed in front of Blackie in an instant and quickly struck one palm out.

Blackie picked up that triangular shield to hide behind and it collided with Pei Ji's handprint.

The two powerful forces clashed together, creating a deafening sound.

Blackie flew backward and shouted, "It is so powerful!"

Pei Ji followed closely behind and struck a second palm out, which still had the Flame Beast Power. His palm power turned into a flame and condensed into the shape of a savage beast, which seemed to be able to kill Blackie with one palm.

"Whoosh!"

The Abyss Ancient Sword turned into sword radiance and, flying over Zhang Ruochen's back, it slashed toward Pei Ji's wrist.

If Pei Ji continued to strike out another handprint, his hand would be cut off by the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Pei Ji frowned. He quickly withdrew his palm and hurriedly stepped backward.

When Pei Ji was stepping backward, Blackie once again rushed forward and jumped up with its claws emanating the light of a thunderbolt as it struck toward his eyes.

“You are courting death!”

Both of Pei Ji’s palms pushed forward simultaneously.

Two mighty flame palm powers gushed out of his palms and turned into two fire pythons.

With a swishing sound, Blackie’s body flashed and went through those two fire pythons.

Pei Ji showed a little contempt. He stretched out two fingers and struck a finger power out toward Blackie’s stomach.

“Pow!”

Blackie once again used that triangular shield for defending. This time, however, it was hit and flung backward, leaving behind two long cat’s paw prints that were dug into the ground.

“Zhang Ruochen, this man is battle-seasoned and extremely powerful. We can’t be his equal even if we work together, so we’d better run!” Blackie said.

“All right!”

Zhang Ruochen retrieved the Abyss Ancient Sword. He turned around and flew off into the distance.

“Zhang Ruochen, you can’t run away!”

Pei Ji kicked with his legs and flew up toward Zhang Ruochen, catching up to him with the power of recoil.

However, the moment that Pei Ji landed back on the ground, many Inscriptions of Array appeared on the ground and wrapped him in the array.

“Swoosh!”

Many wind blades flew out from the array and overwhelmingly chopped toward Pei Ji.

The array that was under Pei Ji’s feet was the Wild Wind and Broken Cloud Array that Blackie had set previously.

Although Zhang Ruochen and Blackie said that they would run away, they actually wanted to coax Pei Ji into the array.

The Wild Wind and Broken Cloud Array could only temporarily trap Pei Ji, but it could not kill him. He could soon break the array with his cultivation.

“Should we get out while the going is good?”

“Let’s go,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Xi Yunxi’s eyes darkened and said, “You can’t run away. Embattle!”

18 masters who had reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm separately took out a jade stone and infused their Genuine Qi into it to inspire the Inscriptions of Array to form a Combined Attack.

Zhang Ruochen held the Abyss Ancient Sword and rushed toward them.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’re so arrogant. Do you want to fight against 18 masters who have reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm by yourself?” An expression of contempt showed on Xi Yunxi’s face.

Zhang Ruochen triggered the inscriptions in the Abyss Ancient Sword to inspire the power of the Holy Sword and chopped toward one of the warriors who had reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm.

It was a strike with Zhang Ruochen’s full strength. The power that erupted from the Holy Sword was enough to defeat those monks who had reached the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

The majestic Sword Breath that Zhang Ruochen had inspired shone with boundless radiance and formed a huge Sword Breath Light Ball.

Standing behind the 18 warriors who had reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm, Xi Yunxi also felt a powerful Sword Breath gushing toward her and a feeling of fear arose in her heart.

“This is Zhang Ruochen’s real strength. Can 18 warriors who have reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm truly stop him?”

Xi Yunxi could not help taking one step back.

A warrior who had reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm was standing in the forefront. He gathered the power of the 18 warriors and a silver light emanated from his body, which seemed to be cast by silver. Then, he struck out with one palm.

A huge silver fist print collided with the Abyss Ancient Sword.

“Boom!”

Round ripples of Genuine Qi emanated from the center of where the Abyss Ancient Sword and the fist collided and flowed out into the distance.

All of the plants and trees within the surrounding area of about 33 meters turned into sawdust, leaving behind bare ground.

The strong Qi billow of fist power hit Zhang Ruochen's body.

Zhang Ruochen's face changed. He immediately inspired the power of the Dragon Pearl to protect his body as he flew backward and returned to the ground.

“He is definitely powerful.”

As the Spiritual Blood churned in Zhang Ruochen's entire body, he felt a dull pain in his five internal organs and six hollow organs.

If he did not have the Dragon Pearl to protect his body, that strike would have seriously wounded him.

Seeing that the Combined Attack, which had been set by 18 warriors who had reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm, had repelled Zhang Ruochen, Xi Yunxi eventually relaxed and became confident again. He laughed and said, “Zhang Ruochen, let's see how can you escape today!”

Although the Combined Attack was powerful, it also had a great weakness, which was that it could not last too long. The attack would collapse onto itself when the Genuine Qi of the 18 Completion of the Heaven Realm warriors had run out.

However, Zhang Ruochen could not wait.

Because Pei Ji could rush out of the Wild Wind and Broken Cloud Array at any time, his strength was more terrifying than the combination of those 18 warriors.

“It’s not just a Combined Attack.”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and began to mobilize the strength of the Spiritual Power.

Suddenly, there was a mass of heavy clouds, which condensed from the sky. They multiplied and became thicker, wide enough to cover the two moons.

The entire world became so dark that one could not see his hand in front of his face.

“Swoosh!”

Purple lightning, which was as wide as the rim of a bowl, flew out of the dark clouds and broke through the sky, striking the heads of the 18 Completion of Heaven Realm warriors.

The 18 warriors immediately mobilized their power and struck toward the sky simultaneously to ward off the attack from that thunderbolt.

Thunderbolts fell down one after another. Like many sharp Heavenly Swords, they chopped from the sky and beat back the 18 warriors, who escaped in a hurry.

“What?! He’s a master of Spiritual Power and can mobilize thunderbolts?” Xi Yunxi was shocked once again and stared incredulously at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power had reached the 41st level. Therefore, with only his Spiritual Power, he was comparable to a monk who had reached the Peak of the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

If Zhang Ruochen could absorb the Qi of Origin in the Primitive World of the Wooden Spirit, his Spiritual Power would be expected to improve one more level and reach the 42nd level.

By that time, the power that was released by Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power would be enough to compete with a monk who had reached the Fourth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

The thunderbolts falling down from the sky hindered the 18 Completion of Heaven Realm warriors. So, Zhang Ruochen seized the chance and demonstrated his sword skill again to chop toward them.

If Zhang Ruochen only used Martial Arts or Spiritual Power, his power would only be comparable to a monk who had reached the Peak of the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

However, when Zhang Ruochen used the power of Martial Arts and Spiritual Power at the same time, his power could be comparable to the combination of two monks who had reached the Peak of the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

The Combined Attack, which was set by those 18 warriors, could ward off the attack of a monk who had reached the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm. But could it ward off the attack of two monks?

“Swoosh!”

The Abyss Ancient Sword penetrated the light of the array, dragged out a Sword Breath, and chopped at the bodies of those Completion of the Heaven Realm warriors.

With a thump, the Combined Attack broke in an instant and the 18 warriors were struck and flew backward.

Among them, there were seven warriors who were the first to bear the brunt of the attack. They were chopped down by Sword Breath and their bodies broke into two halves, spilling blood all over the ground.

The remaining 11 warriors were also hit by that Sword Breath and became injured.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen had broken the Combined Array, Xi Yunxi immediately demonstrated his bodily movement and turned around to flee.

“You can’t run away!”

Ao Xinyan ran after Xi Yunxi and wielded a sword to cut off her escape route.

How could Xi Yunxi be the match for Ao Xinyan? After many movements, she was struck by Ao Xinyan on the center of her back with one palm, causing her to spit out blood and fall to the ground.

“Zhang Ruochen, how can she be handled?” Ao Xinyan asked.

There was no expression on Zhang Ruochen’s face as he said, “Letting her live will only be a disaster. Kill her!”

Ao Xinyan was a little shocked. She clenched her fingers, but in the end, she did not kill Xi Yunxi. She said, “I... I haven’t killed anyone... Besides, she’s also a Saint of Saint Academy and is in the same group as us. Should we take her back and give her to the Law Enforcement Hall?”

Xi Yunxi at first thought that she would definitely be killed, but what Ao Xinyan said had given her hope to live. She said, “Right, you can’t kill me. Even if you want to, you should let the Law Enforcement Hall deal with me. If you were to kill me, you would be guilty of killing a disciple of the same gentry.”

If Xi Yunxi could return to East Region Saint City, she could be saved by the power of Saint Xi Gentry.

“Swoosh!”

As Zhang Ruochen swung his hands and slashed, a sword radiance flashed. Then, Xi Yunxi’s head flew away, creating a bloody column that was one meter high and gushing out of her neck.

An indescribably beautiful successor of the Saint Powerful Family just died in that way.

“There is no Law Enforcement Hall in the Primitive World of the Wooden Spirit,”

Zhang Ruochen softly said, casting a glance at Xi Yunxi’s corpse.

Ao Xinyan was totally dumbfounded when Xi Yunxi’s blood had splashed on her face, leaving drops of blood beads.

Usually, Zhang Ruochen seemed to be very gentle and elegant, as though he would let anything go with a smile if someone

were to offend him. However, when he killed someone, he was so cold, as if he had no feelings at all.

For the first time, Ao Xinyan felt that Zhang Ruochen was so terrifying.

Meanwhile, Ao Xinyan was also very frightened. Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen did not blame her for leaking out his whereabouts. Otherwise, she would have likely been killed.

“How could you... kill a beautiful girl...” Ao Xinyan stared at Zhang Ruochen with her legs trembling a little.

Zhang Ruochen said, “In my opinion, there are only people who should be killed and people who shouldn’t. We’d better go! The Wild Wind and Broken Cloud Array can’t trap Pei Ji for too long...”

The moment that he finished speaking, a loud bang was heard in the distance.

Pei Ji demonstrated the Blood-devil Image to condense into a huge bloody shadow with three heads and six arms. He broke the array and caught up with them from a distance.

“Zhang Ruochen, if you don’t give me the Dragon Pearl, I’ll personally take it.”

Pei Ji howled and all his hair stood on end, seeming to be an extremely high-handed Blood Devil.

(Thank you, readers, for “July”, becoming the fourth ally of “The God of the Ten Thousand Gods.” Today, the explosion of updates was completed. On the last day of the month, we look at whether there is a monthly ticket on the account! If you don’t vote, that will be a waste! Haha!)

Chapter 480 - The Nine Steps of the Setting Sun

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Blood-devil Image of Pei Ji was about 10 meters tall. It looked extremely ferocious and overlapped his body like a huge bloody ghost shadow.

Pei Ji jumped up and immediately rushed in front of Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan. He fully concentrated his Genuine Qi and struck out one palm with all his strength.

Driven by Pei Ji's power, the Blood-devil Image also struck out a palm, which formed a huge Spiritual Blood Handprint.

From the viewpoint of Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan, the handprint of the Blood-devil Image was falling out of mid-air like a bloody, five-finger-shaped cloud.

“Pow!”

Both Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan flew backward at the same time.

With a shriek, Ao Xinyan spat out blood and fell off in the distance, badly hurt.

Zhang Ruochen's strength was greater than that of Ao Xinyan. He could still stand as he landed stably on the ground, but he also suffered a slight injury.

“Ascendio.”

Ao Xinyan endured the pain of her injury and leaped with both legs, flying up to more than 33 meters high. She held the sword, broke through the air, and stabbed toward Pei Ji.

“Come back now!”

Zhang Ruochen shouted.

How could Ao Xinyan even be a match for Pei Ji? Her rushing forward to challenge Pei Ji face-to-face was no different from begging for death.

However, the sword movement had already been demonstrated by Ao Xinyan and could not be withdrawn again.

Pei Ji gave an evil grin and strode forward.

However, they did not know when Pei Ji had put five black iron rings on the five fingers of his right hand.

The iron rings were called Bloody Golden Rings, which were cast by extremely cold black gold.

A Bloody Golden Ring was a 10th-level Genuine Martial Arm.

And five Bloody Golden Rings were a set.

If the inscriptions on the five Bloody Golden Rings were triggered at the same time, they could erupt with power that was comparable to the power of an 11th-level Genuine Martial Arm.

Although Ao Xinyan held a Holy Sword, she could not exert its true power because of her low cultivation.

Moving his footsteps to the left, Pei Ji easily avoided the Holy Sword that was struck out by Ao Xinyan. Then, he triggered the inscriptions on the five Bloody Golden Rings and suddenly struck out one fist, aiming at Ao Xinyan's chest.

Ao Xinyan immediately mobilized her Genuine Qi and the glazed crystal that was infused into her wrist inspired the power of protection.

“Pow!”

The power of the five Bloody Golden Rings smashed that layer of the power of protection into light spots.

Pei Ji's fist solidly hit the chest of Ao Xinyan.

“Snap!”

The sounds of bones breaking came from Ao Xinyan's body as she trembled and was thrown upward like a loose kite.

Her chest was pierced by the five Bloody Golden Rings, leaving five huge bloody holes. Not only were three of her ribs broken but also her five internal organs and six hollow organs suffered serious injuries.

Ao Xinyan was nearly semi-wrecked.

“Only warriors who have reached the Fish-dragon Realm can truly exert the full power of the Holy Sword. It is simply a waste for a warrior in the Heaven Realm to wield the Holy Sword.”

Pei Ji picked up the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword and stroked the sword's body, which was crystal-clear and transparent like jade. He admired it, saying, “What a good sword!”

The Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword immediately uttered a dragon's roar when Pei Ji waved it.

A Holy Sword was enough to make numerous monks in the Fish-dragon Realm risk their lives to compete for it and was enough to create a disaster of killing an entire clan. For a monk, a Holy Sword was the most precious treasure.

Therefore, Pei Ji was excited upon obtaining the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword.

After that, Pei Ji's eyes sank. He waved the Holy Sword in his hand and chopped toward the neck of Ao Xinyan to kill her for good.

However, Zhang Ruochen quickly interfered. He struck the Abyss Ancient Sword out and lifted it. The Abyss Ancient Sword collided with the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword and warded off Pei Ji's killing movement.

Pei Ji held the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword and took a step back. He jeered and said, “If I were you, I would escape when I was about to kill her.”

Zhang Ruochen stood upright, holding his sword horizontally in his hands. He showed a leisurely smile and said, “If I want

to leave, I could do it anytime. You can't stop me."

"Really? You're so confident with your own strength," Pei Ji said with a laugh.

Zhang Ruochen looked to the side and glanced at Blackie, who was nearby. He said, "Blackie, take her away first."

"Swoosh!"

Blackie's body flashed and rushed over to the side of Ao Xinyan. It looked at her and said, "What a trouble maker!"

After that, it grabbed Ao Xinyan's clothes, hugged her with its two claws, and quickly rushed off into the distance.

"If you want to escape, you need to ask for my permission."

Pei Ji snorted and strode forward, demonstrating a kind of brilliant martial technique of bodily movement. Moving 33 meters with each step, he chased after Blackie.

No matter if it was Ao Xinyan or Zhang Ruochen, their identities were very significant.

If Pei Ji were to allow Ao Xinyan to flee back to Saint Academy, he would only be able to hide and even would not dare to return to Kunlun's Field in the days to come, even if he were to obtain the Dragon Pearl.

Therefore, Pei Ji had to root out and kill both Ao Xinyan and Zhang Ruochen in the Primitive World of the Wooden Spirit.

Pei Ji was so fast that he was within 10 steps of Blackie in almost an instant.

"Shuah!"

Zhang Ruochen demonstrated Space Moving and appeared in front of Pei Ji with just a flash of his body. He stabbed at Pei Ji's neck with his sword.

Sword Breath emanated from the sword body and turned into dozens of sword shadows. They stabbed at the same time just as if they were dozens of swords.

"It's so fast! Did he practice the bodily movement martial technique of the Ghost Level?"

Pei Ji had been putting his attention on Blackie and Ao Xinyan, therefore, he did not notice the subtle wave within the space, nor did he notice what Zhang Ruochen demonstrated was Space Moving. He thought that it was just a bodily movement martial technique.

Pei Ji's battle experience was rich, so he was very calm. Facing the unexpected attack from Zhang Ruochen, he quickly twitched his body and brought circles of waves of Genuine Qi, which was like a whirlpool, and he evaded the attack.

However, one of the Sword Breaths still went through Pei Ji's neck, leaving a light bloody mark.

Zhang Ruochen cast a glance at Pei Ji and was a little surprised. He thought,

“No wonder he is the master who is in the top 50. His reaction is so fast that it can even exceed many monks in the Fish-dragon Realm. Therefore, even if I demonstrated Space Crack, I am not sure that I would be able to hurt him.”

Not to mention Pei Ji, but even those warriors who were able to enter the top 1,000 on the Heaven Board, which one of them was not a sheer genius?

Like Pei Ji, not only was his qualification high, but he also had a firm will. One never knew how many storms he had endured.

It was impossible for anyone to use tricks to plot against him.

In just that instant, Blackie had already taken away Ao Xinyan and disappeared without a trace.

Pei Ji touched the bloody marks on his neck and coldly snorted. He said, “The realm of Heart Integrated into Sword is so terrific that it could hurt me. Unfortunately, the difference between us is so big that you won't have any chance today.”

“They've left and now so should I.”

Zhang Ruochen did not keep fighting as he knew that he was no match for Pei Ji. He immediately demonstrated the bodily movement of the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon and took nine steps. One step was equal to 500 meters, so he was standing 4,500 meters away after only nine steps.

However, Pei Ji was also fast.

Pei Ji cast the Nine Star Steps and followed closely behind Zhang Ruochen. After nine steps, Pei Ji caught up with him.

“Nine Steps of the Setting Sun.”

Zhang Ruochen looked back and recognized the bodily movement that Pei Ji had demonstrated.

The Nine Steps of the Setting sun was also a kind of bodily movement martial technique in the Superior Class of the Spiritual Stage. It was a unique skill of the Confucian Sect in the Central Region, which was almost the same as the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon that Zhang Ruochen practiced. As one of the three sects, the Confucian Sect was as great as the Thousand Buddhas Sect and the Taiji Sect. They were all inherited from ancient times and their disciples had spread all over the world.

From the three sects of martial arts that were all originated, various academic schools spread all over the world.

That Nine Steps of the Setting sun could be a unique skill because of its power. There was nothing more powerful than it under the bodily movement martial technique at the Ghost Level, and even the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon was slightly inferior compared to it.

As for the bodily movement martial techniques above the Ghost Level, they were close to a unique skill, which could fly into the sky and walk under the ground. Only monks in Fish-dragon Realm could demonstrate it.

“Although Pei Ji mastered the unique skill of the Confucian Sect, his behavior did not appear to be like that of a successor of the Confucian Sect.”

Zhang Ruochen was doubtful.

Although the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon could be on a par with the Nine Steps of the Setting Sun, Pei Ji’s cultivation was more profound than that of Zhang Ruochen. Therefore, they were getting closer and closer.

Zhang Ruochen could feel the strong scent of blood emanating from Pei Ji.

“Zhang Ruochen, you can’t get away!”

Pei Ji inspired the inscriptions on his five Bloody Golden Rings as he suddenly stepped on the ground fiercely and rushed out like an arrow that was released from a bow. His speed suddenly increased and he struck with one fist toward Zhang Ruochen’s back.

“Space Domain.”

Zhang Ruochen released the Space Domain and demonstrated Space Warps.

When Pei Ji’s fist was about to hit on the back of Zhang Ruochen, the space suddenly liquefied and twisted to suck Pei Ji’s fist into it.

“What happened?”

Pei Ji’s face darkened as he noticed that something was wrong.

“Shuah!”

Zhang Ruochen moved one step horizontally and appeared on Pei Ji’s left side, three steps away.

Now that Zhang Ruochen had decided to use space power, he should continue and try to kill him with one strike before Pei Ji realized it.

“Space Crack.”

Zhang Ruochen stretched out a forefinger and quickly slid in front of Pei Ji.

Space was cut open like a water curtain by Zhang Ruochen’s finger, revealing a huge crack more than six meters long.

Pei Ji felt a threatening death. His whole body seemed to be shocked by electricity and it quickly shrank. Although he was 1.8 meters in height, he instantly reduced his body down by 10 times and became a dwarf.

Pei Ji stepped in mid-air and was shot out like a ball.

“Swoosh!”

Falling more than 30 meters away, a cracking sound emanated from Pei Ji's body and it expanded again to return to its original size.

However, his left shoulder was still hit by the Space Crack, leaving a flat wound that was bleeding.

If Pei Ji had reacted slower, his whole left arm would have been swallowed by the Space Crack.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Pei Ji with surprise in his eyes. He asked, "Who are you actually?"

In the Martial World, there was indeed a martial technique called Bone Contraction.

However, no warrior could shrink his body by 10 times no matter how powerful he was.

If a warrior practiced the Ninth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, the Glazed Treasured Body, he could increase and reduce his body by 10 times. However, Pei Ji's cultivation was still far below the level of the Glazed Treasured Body.

Chapter 481 - Immortal Vampires

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Pei Ji sneered. "I would also like to ask who you are. You can control space to display space warps and space tears."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "If you can catch me, I will tell you."

"Do you think that since you can control the Power of Space, I can't deal with? You want to know my identity, right? I'll tell you now."

Pei Ji spread his legs and began to run his strength. The blood in his whole body quickly flowed and buzzed.

His skin turned completely blood-red.

All his bones protruded.

His fingernails became sharp claws, and two pointed fangs grew in his mouth.

SWOOSH!

Two bulges appeared on his back, stretching out to become a pair of giant Blood Wings.

When Zhang Ruochen saw Pei Ji's true body, he took a deep breath. "You are one of the Immortal Vampires."

"Haha! That's right, I'm an Immortal Vampire!" Pei Ji laughed.

Zhang Ruochen said, "If I remember correctly, the clansmen of the Immortal Vampires were all expelled to Chiji Island by Emperor Ming 800 years ago. Emperor Ming sent people to

seal the island. How could there be a clansman from the Immortal Vampires in Kunlun's Field?"

Immortal Vampires were not actually immortal, but they could absorb human blood to prolong their lives.

The average lifespan of ordinary people was only 60 to 70 years.

However, if an Immortal Vampire absorbed enough blood, it could expect to live 200 years. Legend went that once superiors of the Immortal Vampires absorbed enough Holy Blood, they could even live for 1,000 years.

Emperor Ming had expelled them to Chiji Island, a place far from Kunlun's Field, because he did not want to see innocent people die for their blood.

800 years had passed, and the clansmen of the Immortal Vampires had unexpectedly appeared again.

Pei Ji smiled. "You indeed are very knowledgeable. There's no harm in telling you. The Immortal Vampires have broken the seal of Chiji Island. And soon, we'll return to Kunlun's Field and find the people of Ming Hall. We will avenge ourselves for what happened eight hundred years ago."

Zhang Ruochen hummed coldly. "You are quite ignorant to oppose against Ming Hall."

"Ming Hall is tiny now. It is not the previous Sacred Central Empire that it once was. Even if the Sacred Central Empire hadn't been destroyed by Empress Chi Yao, as long as Emperor Ming is not here, Immortal Vampires can still destroy it." Pei Ji laughed evilly.

HUAA!

After morphing into his true Immortal Vampire body, Pei Ji's speed improved considerably. He flew over Zhang Ruochen's head in the blink of an eye and waved the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword to attack Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen exchanged a blow with Pei Ji and then turned backwards to flee into the distance.

"Haha! You can't escape!"

Pei Ji flapped his Blood Wings and laughed loudly. Soon, he caught up with Zhang Ruochen and pierced him with his sword.

Unavoidably, Zhang Ruochen had to fight with Pei Ji again.

BANG! BANG!

The two men began to fight and attack at an extremely fast pace.

Their every move sent out countless sword Qi. Some of them flew to the sky and other sword Qi slashed towards the ground.

At the same time, their movements were constantly changing, forming more than a dozen shadows.

After 23 strikes, Pei kicked Zhang Ruochen in the stomach.

There were five Bloody Golden Ring on Pei Ji's fist, and they left five holes in Zhang Ruochen's lower abdomen. Blood was flowing out from the wounds.

However, Zhang Ruochen was not injured under the protection of Dragon Pearl. The five blood holes were not deep and he did not suffer internal injuries.

"It was still the power of space that helps you escape my strike," Pei Ji snorted and said.

He had meant to hit Zhang Ruochen in the heart, but Zhang Ruochen had shifted so that the blow hit his lower abdomen.

"Let's fight again!"

Zhang Ruochen's eyes sank. He controlled the Abyss Ancient Sword using the Heart of the Sword to display the Sword Defending Technique. His sword turned into sword radiance and flew to Pei Ji.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen raised his arms and quickly played movements of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

"Elephant Galloping."

"Dragon in the Sky!"

"Dragon and Elephant Returning to Earth!"

“Dragon Shape and Elephant Shadow.”

“Nine-folds of the Elephant Power!”

“Divine Dragon’s Steal.”

The six handprints helped Zhang Ruochen inspire the power of the Dragon Pearl. His body was covered with golden Dragon Scales and a pair of golden dragon wings grew on his back.

SWOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen also flew up.

He controlled the Abyss Ancient Sword and displayed sword technique to contain Pei Ji. He mobilized his Spiritual Power and drew thunderbolts.

“Zhang Ruochen is both a cultivator of Heart Integrated into Sword and a Master of Spiritual Power. If I fight with him from a distance, it will be too difficult. I have to get closer to him and fight a quick battle to win.”

Pei Ji closed his wings and quickly fell to the ground. He rushed rapidly at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen fluttered his wings and flew further away. He did not give him the opportunity to come close.

In this way, the two men, one after the other, kept chasing.

Zhang Ruochen used Sword Defending Technique and the power of thunderbolt to contain Pei Ji from afar, so that he could never get close.

Time lapsed, they both rushed into a strange forest.

In the forest, the giant trees there were all black. The thinnest one was as thick as a bucket. The thickest one would need several people to get their arms around it.

On the trunks, were dense blue vines, like cobwebs, one attached to the other.

Zhang Ruochen realized that the situation was not good as he rushed into the forest. He wanted to retreat, but Pei Ji had already followed him. He could only bite the bullet and continue to rush further in.

SWOOSH!

A vine, as thick as a wrist, flew up from the thick fallen leaves. Like a viper, it wrapped around his feet and dragged him forward.

“Break!”

The Abyss Ancient Sword issued a sound and flew from above to cut the vine.

However, just as Zhang Ruochen stood up, all the vines in the forest moved quickly.

“Gosh!”

“Gosh!”

The facial expressions of both Zhang Ruochen and Pei Ji changed. They realized that they had entered a place where they should not be.

They stopped fighting. Simultaneously, they extended their wings and rushed towards the sky.

The giant 233-meter black tree next to them seemed to be alive. A huge mouth grew on its trunk. It began to speak. “Stupid humans. You want to leave after entering into the Blackwood Field?”

A stout branch, like a big hand, chopped towards them. It hit Pei Ji in the head and knocked him to the ground.

Another branch swept past Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen immediately exerted his Space Moving to jump forward. He passed through the branch and flew skyward. He rushed into the air and narrowly escaped the black forest.

“So this is the Blackwood Field.”

Zhang Ruochen had seen the “Blackwood Field” on a map. It was one of the most dangerous places in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.

In Blackwood Field, a large number of the indigenous inhabitants of the Primitive World of Wood Spirit, Blackwood

Spirits, lived here. They were also called “Blackwood Treemen”.

What Zhang Ruochen and Pei Ji had just encountered was a Blackwood Treeman who had grown for thousands of years. Its strength was parallel to the strength of a Monk in the Fish-dragon Realm. In Blackwood Field, Millennial Treemen could mobilize a large amount of the aura of wood nature and the power erupted was fairly horrible.

If a Monk in the Second Change of the Fish-dragon Realm encountered a Millennial Treeman, it would be hard for him to escape.

BOOM!

Zhang Ruochen saw the Millennial Treeman underneath actually fall down.

“Pei Ji is so powerful that he can cut down a Millennial Treeman.”

Zhang Ruochen did not stop. He flew away as fast as he could.

Shortly afterwards, Pei Ji rushed destructively out of Blackwood Field. He did not see Zhang Ruochen. He sniffed in the air, and soon smelled a hint of aura left in the air.

“Zhang Ruochen, you can’t escape!”

Pei Ji extended his Blood Wings to fly into the sky and chased after him.

Zhang Ruochen knew that Pei Ji would catch up to him.

After flying 50 kilometers or so, he returned to the earth. With a loud splash, he jumped into a large river in hopes of diluting his aura.

When he reached the bottom of the water, he entered the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel. He took a healing Pill and began to quickly run the Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Empyrean.

“Pei Ji is so strong! Only by breaking into the Final State of the Heaven Realm can I defeat him.”

Zhang Ruochen treated his wound while he broke through the realm.

The Time and Space Spinel followed the water flow and rushed downstream.

HUAA!

Pei Ji closed his wings and fell from the sky. He stood by the river and watched it roll by. He frowned. “Zhang Ruochen jumped into the water, it’s not easy to track him! Well then, I’ll go to deal with Ao Xinyan. Zhang Ruochen has saved her life twice already. If I capture her, Zhang Ruochen will definitely show up.”

Pei Ji left the river and went back the way he had come to track Blackie and Ao Xinyan.

Blackie and Ao Xinyan had long fled 500 kilometers away. They were recuperating in a tree hole.

Ao Xinyan slowly woke up. Just one move of her arm pulled her wound, and she felt a tearing pain in her chest and abdomen.

“Mmmm...”

She looked pale. Her muscles convulsed. She ran her Genuine Qi to cure the wound, but found that half of her Meridians were broken. She could not even finish a systemic circulation pathway.

She was almost a waste.

“How... could... could this happen...”

There was nothing but fear in her heart. It was as if her heaven had collapsed. She fell into despair.

Glittering tears flowed from her eyes. She began to cry bitterly.

For a warrior, especially a genius, becoming a waste was more anguishing than being killed.

At this moment, she heard a familiar voice, “Three ribs broken, a lung lobe punctured, the heart was wounded, and 17

Meridians were broken. Oh! You can survive after being severely injured like this, the half-dragon body is so amazing.”

Ao Xinyan opened her eyes and the big face of a cat came into view.

Her blouse had been unfastened by the fat cat. Her clothes, divided on both sides, were covered with blood.

Blackie was looking at her wounds with its big round eyes. It seemed to be studying something.

Chapter 482 - Break through the Realm

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Fat cat, what... what are you doing?”

Ao Xinyan asked coldly, gritting her teeth.

Blackie refined a blue-green Spiritual Dose into a thumb-sized liquid and smeared it on the wounds. It smiled. “I’m helping you heal. If I don’t use the Millennial Qingpu Grass that I found in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit on you, you won’t survive at all.”

“Why don’t you let me die?” Ao Xinyan asked.

Blackie suddenly felt unhappy. “I have always eaten people. I rarely save people, because I’m afraid to meet people like you. I have enough mercy upon you to save your life and you tell me that you want to die?”

A desperate look flashed in Ao Xinyan’s eyes. She said, “My Body of Martial Arts has been broken. Even if my wounds are healed, I have become a waste. What does it mean to live?”

“Who told you that you would become a waste?” Blackie rolled its eyes.

After hearing this, Ao Xinyan, like a drowning victim grasping at a life-saving straw, found hope again. “Can you help me overcome my injuries?”

“Of course. Just look how powerful I am. However, I need to borrow Zhang Ruochen’s Dragon Pearl to support your half-dragon body. Maybe a real dragon could be fostered by this way.” Blackie laughed.

TAP! TAP!

Outside the tree hole, there was a light sound of footsteps.

A woman's voice suddenly came from the distance.

“A cat that cannot only arrange an array, but also refine medicine to cure wounds. You are so amazing. How about you follow me in the future?”

“Is someone catching up so quickly?”

Blackie shook its head, feeling unlucky. It wrapped up Ao Xinyan's robes and carefully stepped out of the tree hole.

There was a faint fragrance in the air.

Not far away, a young woman in a sheer red dress was sitting on a very thin tree branch, as if she was weightless. Drooping her long and slender legs, she watched Blackie walk out from the hole.

The woman was the Red Wish Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall.

Blackie glanced at her. “Little girl, how did you find us?”

“Little girl?”

Her eyebrows wrinkled. She smiled. “A little kitten dares to call me girl. You really are unique. I like you more and more!”

Blackie hummed coldly, “If you want to ****, look for Zhang Ruochen. I'm not interested in you.”

“Zhang Ruochen and Pei Ji are still fighting for life and death. Masters from the Black Market Excellence Hall are already on their way. Once both of them suffer great loss, it will be time for us to clean them up.” The Red Wish Emissary laughed.

In fact, masters from the Black Market Excellence Hall had been hiding in the shadows and watching the battle from afar. They had been watching the masters from the three powerful Saint families attack Zhang Ruochen and Ao Xinyan the whole time.

As Zhang Ruochen and Pei Ji fought, the Orange Star Emissary led 18 Glazed Knights to follow them. They

intended to attack the two men when they could no longer fight back.

As for the Red Wish Emissary, she had been following Blackie and Ao Xinyan.

The Red Wish Emissary smile charmingly. “Little kitten, tell me why Zhang Ruochen has come to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. I have a Pill of Beasts. If your answer satisfies me, I will give it to you.”

She took out a grain-size Pill with beast texture from the jade belt on her waist. She held it between her two fingers.

The Pill of Beasts, a sixth-level Pill, could help savage beasts improve their physical quality. Beasts that took it even had an opportunity to upgrade. A Pill of Beasts could be regarded as a very precious treasure.

The strong scent of the pill could be smelled from more than 33 meters away.

Blackie did not look at the Pill at all. Lazily it said, “Zhang Ruochen must have something important to do in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.”

“What kind of important thing?”

The Red Wish Emissary’s eyes glistened.

“You think I would tell you?” Blackie rolled its eyes.

“Hmm!”

The Red Wish Emissary turned up the corner of her mouth and smiled. She reached out a slender hand. Her five slender fingers began to quickly transform into countless hand shadows.

With a swoosh, wisps of light pink silk flew out from her fingertips.

The wisps of silk wafted through the air. They drifted through forests and wove into a net 33 meters away. It was almost invisible and could be seen only by one who was looking for it.

Blackie rolled its eyes again and said, “Little girl, your sorcery is useless in front of Zhang Ruochen. Are you sure you want to use it against me?”

SWISH!

Blackie’s eyes grew cold. It took back its tail and transformed into a swift black shadow that swept out. It arrived in front of the Red Wish Emissary.

It stretched out a sharp claw wrapped in lightning and caught her neck.

PFFT!

Blackie’s claw rubbed against the air, leaving three claw prints of lightning a meter long.

The Red Wish Emissary was shocked. She immediately cast a movement. She leaped from the branch, turned into a red shadow and fell to the ground a few meters away.

With a sharp cry, Blackie’s claw grabbed a red yarn from the Red Wish Emissary’s dress. The strong power of electricity tore the red silk apart, turning it into black smoke and dust.

The Red Wish Emissary stood on the ground still covered with a layer of red yarn. Her lithe and graceful body was still unwounded. She said coldly, “Awesome, a cat can block my sorcery.”

The Red Wish Emissary flicked her sleeves. Her feet were off the ground. She flew up and rushed towards the tree hole.

“Oh no! She wants to attack the half-dragon body.” Blackie quickly chased after her.

Ao Xinyan’s half-dragon body was quite rare, and Blackie had been pondering about making her turn into a Genuine Dragon Body. Naturally it could not let the Red Wish Emissary kill her.

Holding Ao Xinyan, the Red Wish Emissary rushed out of the tree hole and quickly flew into the distance, leaving her fragrance in the wind.

“Little girl, what on earth are you doing?”

Blackie angrily chased behind her.

The Red Wish Emissary smiled and said, “Zhang Ruochen has saved her twice. I want to see if he will come to save her three times.”

Blackie and the Red Wish Emissary both turned into shadows. Like two ghosts, they flashed through the jungle.

In the distance, Pei Ji was standing on the edge of a cliff. He watched Blackie chasing after the Red Wish Emissary 50 kilometers away with his two blood-red eyes. “The Red Wish Emissary has taken Ao Xinyan. Well, when the people of the Black Market Excellence Hall draw Zhang Ruochen out and they fight like cats, I’ll come out and kill them. It will be easy.”

Pei Ji knew that with his strength, he could beat Zhang Ruochen, but not kill him.

Therefore, he was holding the same view as the people from the Black Market Excellence Hall. Let them deal with Zhang Ruochen, he would stand in the shadows and wait until both sides were worn out.

...

...

Six days had passed in the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel.

Zhang Ruochen was sitting cross-legged in the center, completely wrapped in Blue Genuine Qi. The Qi became more and more dense. It seemed to change into a liquid state and then back into a solid state.

At first glance, Zhang Ruochen was like a round frozen crystal, his body slowly rotating.

He took a deep breath, and a loud sound came out from his body, as if he had broken through a bottleneck. The surrounding Genuine Qi immediately surged into his body.

CLAP!

At the bottom of the river, a breach appeared on the surface of the Time and Space Spinel.

More and more breaches appeared. Like a web, they continued to extend.

With a thud, the Time and Space Spinel burst open, turning into light spots. Like a shooting star, it flew out in all directions.

The light spots gathered together and flew into the center of Zhang Ruochen's forehead.

He stood at the bottom of the river and the power of the Space Domain naturally emanated. It held the enormous water pressure and pushed the river open, forming a 33 meter wide sphere.

“The energy contained in the Time and Space Spinel has finally been completely used up and disappeared. However, my understanding of the space seems to have improved since I absorbed the remainder of the Time and Space Power.”

Since he came here, Zhang Ruochen had carried the Time and Space Spinel with him. It was precisely because of this treasure that he could catch up with the superior geniuses and reach his present realm in just a few years.

Now, the energy of the Time and Space Spinel was used up and it had disappeared.

Although Zhang Ruochen was emotional, he was not upset or fearful.

The Time and Space Spinel, after all, was only a treasure to aid in practice. The essence of practice was to cultivate a warrior's own strength. To attend to trifles and neglect the essentials was not a good thing.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes. He began to carefully feel the power of the space that he had realized and absorbed it.

He opened his eyes and reached out a finger. “Space Collapse.”

BOOM!

More than 66 meters away, space shook violently and then quickly collapsed. The entire world seemed to be broken. The sky was shaking, and the Spiritual Qi became disordered.

SWOOSH!

The river was nearly 165 meters wide.

It was deep, and the current was rushing.

A giant vortex appeared in the center of the river. Rushing water was turbulently surging into the center of the vortex.

After a moment, all the water was completely swallowed into the collapsed space, exposing the dry bottom of the river and forming a shocking picture of the broken flow.

Zhang Ruochen exerted Space Moving. With his legs only slightly moving, he crossed the distance of 33 meters. A moment later he was on the bank of the river.

The collapsed space soon regained its calm.

RUMBLE!

The river upstream, like a huge wave, rushed in causing the river to return to its original form.

“How wonderful the Space Collapse is. If I use this, no matter how fast Pei Ji is, he will not be able to escape.”

The Space Collapse was the real trump card. Its power was much stronger than the Space Crack.

As Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation improved, the power of this move would be even more horrible.

Chapter 483 - Encounter

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen practiced for six days in the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel. His cultivation had reached the Final State of the Heaven Realm, which greatly increased his strength.

With his current strength, defeating Pei Ji without the use of space power was no longer a difficult task.

“I’ll go find Blackie and Ao Xinyan now.”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and sensed thoroughly.

The Yin Yang Wooden Graph had a special relationship with Blackie. At a certain proximity, he could find Blackie using the sense of the Yin Yang Wooden Graph.

Zhang Ruochen spotted Blackie’s exact location in the nick of time and rushed in that direction.

Zhang Ruochen practiced for six days in the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel, which was equal to two days in the external world.

Two days ago, Red Wish Emissary took Ao Xinyan to join with Orange Star Emissary.

Blackie was chasing closely behind Red Wish Emissary. However, he was ambushed by Orange Star Emissary and 18 Glazed Knights. After a fierce battle, Blackie was defeated.

“I am supposed to be an extraordinary being, a worthy opponent that should be unstoppable. I can’t believe that I was suppressed by these mortals. How shameful!”

Blackie let out a long sigh.

“Phhf!”

The sound of chains colliding rang out.

Blackie was bound by a red iron chain from its four legs to its head. Escaping was impossible.

The iron chain had a dragon’s pattern and phoenix seal carved into it, around which flowed beams of lightning.

That was the Dragon Lock Chain, a Holy Weapon that was extremely famous.

Legend had it that there was a saint in the Black Market who possessed a flying dragon. The Dragon Lock Chain was supposedly used to shackle the dragon. However, after the dragon died due to old age, the Dragon Lock Chain was left behind.

Then, Orange Star Emissary’s master entrusted the Dragon Lock Chain to her, which caused Orange Star Emissary to obtain the strongest soldiers.

“Cut the crap. Lead me to Zhang Ruochen now!”

Orange Star Emissary moved her hand and infused Genuine Qi into the Dragon Lock Chain.

Suddenly, the Dragon Lock Chain emitted a glaring blot of lightning, which let out a cracking sound and focused its attack on Blackie.

Blackie was in such dire pain that he let out a weird scream. Its fur stood up, as did its tail. Deep in its heart, it was thinking,

“Little brat, you’ll soon discover what the impact of the Dragon Lock Chain is yourself.”

Of course, he did not dare to say that out loud.

Blackie begged, “Oh madam, what’s the rush? We are arriving very soon! It’s right up ahead, we’re getting close.”

After an hour, Blackie led the people of the Black Market Excellence Hall to the outside of Blackwood Field.

Many big black trees could be seen, which made it into an ancient bushy jungle. Every huge tree was entangled by vines. There was algae growing on the roots, while the ground was covered with thick leaves.

Orange Star Emissary had looked at the map of the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit beforehand. Therefore, she knew where the place was.

Blackwood Field.

“What a cunning cat. How dare you to lead us into the forbidden area, Blackwood Field? You must be eager to die.”

Her expression became somber. She quickly retrieved her Dragon Lock Chain and dragged Blackie along.

Blackie’s claws were scratching the ground and, locked up by the Dragon Lock Chain, it was impossible for it to fight Orange Star Emissary.

“Whoosh!”

On the ground, there remained four long scratch marks but, in the end, Blackie was still dragged away by Orange Star Emissary.

Orange Star Emissary circulated her Genuine Qi to her palm. She was ready to give a final blow on Blackie’s head.

“Wait!”

Red Wish Emissary walked from behind. She smiled and said, “Tell the truth quickly, or else this lady will kill you, which is not necessary.”

Blackie gazed at her and said, “With my identity, there is no need for me to lie to a bunch of mortals. What I said was the truth. Zhang Ruochen really did come to the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit. He is deep inside Blackwood Field.”

“Cut the crap. You led us to a dead end. Do you think that we’re stupid?”

Orange Star Emissary eyes flashed an Icing Air. She circulated Genuine Qi to her hands once again. The Icing Air circulated and flowed around her palms.

“Stupid humans. I had practiced into an immortal body. Your little handprint won’t do me any harm. Even every kind of horrible tragedy won’t be sufficient enough to kill me. Your palm will only be a tickle to me,” said Blackie.

Looking at Blackie’s proud face, even Red Wish Emissary thought that it was worthy of being punished. She did not stop Orange Star Emissary any longer.

“Pow!”

Orange Star Emissary landed a palm on Blackie’s head.

Blackie screamed and fell to the ground, leaving a deep pit. Its four legs were stretched out and it did not move anymore.

“Dead?”

Red Wish Emissary walked toward Blackie and put a finger on Blackie’s neck. She found that the blood in Blackie’s body had stopped flowing, losing any aura of life.

To be honest, Red Wish Emissary liked the lovable cat quite a lot. Therefore, she sighed when she saw it die on the spot.

However, Orange Star Emissary had only treated Blackie like a savage beast and killed it without any hesitation. She said with a cold expression, “This cat was powerful. It not only possessed high intelligence, but was also equipped with extraordinary strength. If the Glazed Knights had not invoked the Nine Stars Formation Flag, controlling it would have been pretty impossible. If we had let it live and fully develop, it would have boosted Zhang Ruochen a lot. So killing it seemed to be the right thing to do.”

Red Wish Emissary said, “But now that we have killed it, who is going to lead us to Zhang Ruochen?”

“Since Ao Xinyan is in our hands, Zhang Ruochen will surely appear soon,” Orange Star Emissary replied.

Orange Star Emissary glanced toward Blackie’s dead body. She then flicked her arms and a sound could be heard from the dead body. The Dragon Lock Chain, which had been tangled around Blackie, was retracted into Orange Star Emissary’s sleeves, becoming a bracelet.

Suddenly, Orange Star Emissary heard some weird sound in her ears.

She circulated her Genuine Qi into her eyes and looked farther away.

Orange Star Emissary smirked and said, “Zhang Ruochen is almost here. Receive your orders, Glazed Knights, prepare the Nine Stars Formation Flag at any time and launch a timed attack at Zhang Ruochen.”

The 18 Glazed Knights, which were riding on savage beasts, stood in a line and separated themselves into two teams. Each team consisted of nine people who stood behind Orange Star Emissary and Red Star Emissary, respectively.

They wore Glazed Bone Armor and were armed with Dragon Bone Spears while holding a flag, imposing a ruthless manner and surely meaning business.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen came over and stopped in front of Orange Star Emissary and Red Star Emissary.

Red Wish Emissary’s hand buckled around Ao Xinyan’s neck, and she said, “Finally you’ve arrived, Zhang Ruochen. We waited for you for a long time. If you obey the Black Market’s order, we shall let your lover go.”

Zhang Ruochen gazed at Red Wish Emissary and said, “Who told you that she is my lover?”

Red Wish Emissary smiled and answered, “All men are the same, they love pretty girls. She can be regarded as the nation’s finest girl and, of course, this is not the first time that you’re on a rescue mission because of her. Who else would believe that you haven’t fallen for her?”

Ao Xinyan felt slightly shy after she heard this and could be seen blushing.

Zhang Ruochen replied, “So, have I fallen for you too since you are also one of the nation’s finest girls?”

Red Wish Emissary showed her white teeth and said in an arousing manner, “If you like me, I’ll do what you tell me to do.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and his eyes became fierce. He said, "Release Ao Xinyan, Red Wish Emissary, and I will grant you your life. Do not force me to murder you."

Orange Star Emissary said boldly, "What an arrogant peasant you are, Zhang Ruochen. So, you think that since you are crowned the king of the young generation, you will really be invincible? I have murdered your war pet, just as you will be murdered now. There is only one option for you today, and that is to pledge your loyalty to the Black Market and become our ally."

"War pet? Blackie?" Zhang Ruochen asked in confusion.

Just as Orange Star Emissary made a sneer, she suddenly felt a chilling sensation on her neck.

A cold claw was stealthily placed on her neck.

Orange Star Emissary panicked. Just as she intended to turn around, she could feel a sharp pain on her neck once she moved.

Blackie's claw had cut Orange Star Emissary's skin on her neck and drops of blood were now visible.

"Don't move. Otherwise, once my claw drops down, you can say goodbye to your brain," Blackie said boldly.

Orange Star Emissary was frightened and her body was shaking.

She was shaking because the war pet, which had been dead, had suddenly been reincarnated.

She was frightened because this was the first time for her to feel that death was so close to her. There was no doubt that she would be dead once she moved her body.

At the same, Red Wish Emissary saw Blackie, who was behind Orange Star Emissary, and her eyes brightened.

"Impossible! The cat did not die."

"Leave master Orange Star Emissary alone, you beast."

A Glazed Knight rushed forward. He circulated his full body power and pierced out with his Dragon Bone Spear, striking

toward the center of Blackie's back.

Zhang Ruochen waved his arm and the Abyss Ancient Sword shot out forward like a javelin. It became a beam and pierced through the Glazed Knight's chest from his back.

The Glazed Knight shivered and blood continuously spewed out from his mouth.

He moved his head down with great difficulty and looked at his chest.

A bloody hole as big as a bowl could be seen there.

"How... how... could it be..."

The Glazed Knight let out a dry cough and then fell from the savage beast's back.

Even Red Wish Emissary and Orange Star Emissary were stunned. The Glazed Armor was made from the bones of a monk in the Ninth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm. The armor was extremely tough, so how could it not withstand Zhang Ruochen's attack?

They did not know that the Abyss Ancient Sword was made up of Natural Divine Iron and it was also a Holy Weapon, which made its sharpness out of this world. Cutting a layer of the Glazed Bone Armor with that sword was not really difficult.

"Whoosh!"

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew around in the air and returned to Zhang Ruochen once again.

There was still blood on the sword.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Choose now, to live or to die."

Red Wish Emissary smiled and said, "Who else besides Zhang Ruochen is capable of doing this. Let's say that I let Ao Xinyan go and you ask the cat to release Orange Star Emissary, so we are no longer enemies from today and move on our own paths. Deal?"

Zhang Ruochen moved at lightning speed, appearing beside Red Wish Emissary silently. He reached out two fingers to

hold onto the arm of Red Wish Emissary and pointed at her meridians and said, “Speaking of conditions, you don’t have the right to do that.”

Red Wish Emissary was astonished. She was barely able to react and Zhang Ruochen was already in front of her holding her arm.

“How could Zhang Ruochen have become so powerful?”

At the moment, her wrist was locked tightly by Zhang Ruochen’s two fingers. A strong power was emitted from Zhang Ruochen’s fingers, causing numbness to extend through her arm.

Red Wish Emissary was initially holding Ao Xinyan’s hand. However, Zhang Ruochen was now controlling her arm. He moved her hands aside and she then lost control of Ao Xinyan.

The current Zhang Ruochen was no longer somebody that she could go against anymore. Obviously, Zhang Ruochen had broken through to another realm.

...

Chapter 484 - Cooperation

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Ao Xinyan was released from Red Wish Emissary's control. She stepped back two steps and stood behind Zhang Ruochen.

After two days of rest, Ao Xinyan's injuries had recovered. However, half of the meridians in her body had snapped. Her five internal organs and six hollow organs suffered serious injuries.

Therefore, Ao Xinyan still looked ill. Her Genuine Qi was unable to circulate, which gave her a lack of energy and made her steps light. If it had not been for Zhang Ruochen's Dragon Pearl inside of him that assisted with her recovery, she might not have been able to survive up to this point.

The shocked emotion on Red Wish Emissary's face was slowly wiped away and replaced with a charming smile.

“Swoosh!”

A golden beam layer suddenly emitted from her glabella and swept across her neck into her arm.

Red Wish Emissary twisted her wrist slightly. Like a spiritual snake, she slipped out of Zhang Ruochen's fingers.

“Shuah!”

As her body flashed, Red Wish Emissary was divided into eight phantoms and rapidly ran away in the distance.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised. He used his Spiritual Power to distinguish the true body of Red Wish Emissary from the eight humanly shadows. He took a step forward and quickly chased after her.

In the blink of an eye, Zhang Ruochen caught up to and was on the left side of Red Wish Emissary. He regulated his Genuine Qi to flow into his arms and struck out one palm, attacking toward Red Wish Emissary's left shoulder.

“Pow!”

Zhang Ruochen's palm power transmitted and struck Red Wish Emissary's body.

Despite that, Zhang Ruochen did not feel any physical presence. So, he bent his fingers and clawed forward, realizing that he had managed to only grab her thin red yarn.

The red yarn let out a charming scent.

Red Wish Emissary had already fled about 33 meters away and she was still wearing the same old red yarn, as if the clothes torn by Zhang Ruochen were not hers.

After reaching behind the nine Glazed Knights, she let out a long breath and stopped.

Her fair-skinned forehead was all sweaty and, of course, she still had lingering fear.

Red Wish Emissary now realized that Zhang Ruochen was indeed a force to be reckoned with.

He was completely different from the other God's favored sons. Although those God's favored sons were able to defeat her, most of them would hesitate to kill her.

However, Zhang Ruochen did not show any mercy toward her. If a palm landed on her, even if she managed to escape death, she would suffer some serious injuries.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the long red yarn and sniffed it. He asked, “Are you wearing a Golden Silkworm unbreakable jacket?”

Red Wish Emissary smiled forcefully and answered, “That's correct. What I am wearing now is a red unbreakable jacket. Zhang Ruochen, you might want to come forward and count for yourself how many layers I am actually wearing.”

Golden Silkworm was also another savage beast.

The silk of a Golden Silkworm was known as the finest thread in the world. It could be knitted into the lightest and the thinnest clothes. Besides, the unbreakable jacket had some untold power and its defensive power was astonishing.

The legendary martial technique of bodily movement, the Peeling Skin of Golden Silkworm, required a warrior to wear this unbreakable jacket in order to practice it successfully.

Red Wish Emissary had just cast the Peeling Skin of Golden Silkworm, which allowed her to escape from Zhang Ruochen.

“In that case, let me count them.”

Zhang Ruochen’s pinky finger pointed out, causing the Genuine Qi to turn into Sword Wave.

The Sword Wave with a beaming sound flew forward from his fingertips.

The nine Glazed Knights had already erected the Nine Star Formation Flag and were formed into a nine-pointed star array. Each flag was like a bright star with dazzling lights shining out.

Moving at light speed, Red Wish Emissary stood at the center of the array.

At the same time, she released her Martial Soul, which floated above her head. She began to circulate the array’s Genuine Qi.

Suddenly, the Genuine Qi gathered around her and increasingly centered on her body.

The Martial Soul of Red Wish Emissary was already very powerful, which was comparable with the strength of the monk in the Fourth Change of the Fish Dragon Realm. With the blessings of the Nine Star Array, the aura from her body rose gradually. The earth’s Spiritual Qi could be seen moving around every space.

Then, she struck out her palm and the palm power was unleashed, turning into a three-meter-long handprint, which dissolved Zhang Ruochen’s Sword Wave.

With the help of invisible powers, Red Wish Emissary lifted off the ground. She stood in mid-air and said, “The Nine Star

Array can gather the power of all the nine Glazed Knights into me. No matter how strong you are, it is impossible for you to hurt me.”

Those nine people were selected as Glazed Knights due to the fact that they were the top masters in the Completion of the Heaven Realm. The gathering power made them look even more terrifying.

The eruption of Red Wish Emissary’s power was far superior to Zhang Ruochen’s full force of power.

If Zhang Ruochen used the Space Collapse, he could break the array and, hence, kill Red Wish Emissary and the nine Glazed Knights.

However, Zhang Ruochen was aware of a strong familiar aura nearby in the shadows.

There had to be a master hiding somewhere.

If he dealt with Red Wish Emissary and the nine Glazed Knights with full force, then that master who was hiding would ambush him.

And if that happened, it would be the case of two birds with one stone for the hiding master.

Zhang Ruochen looked in the direction of Blackie. At that moment, the eight other Glazed Knights had surrounded Blackie and Orange Star Emissary in the center.

Even though they were surrounding them, they were not able to act recklessly because Orange Star Emissary was in the hands of Blackie.

“The people who are hiding, I suppose they are masters who were sent by Pei Ji and the Three Great Saints Powerful Family. For me, the biggest threat is Pei Ji, so I must eliminate him first.”

Zhang Ruochen was in deep thought.

Just as Zhang Ruochen had made up his mind, the voice of Red Wish Emissary was whispered into his ear. “Zhang Ruochen, you should be aware that there is a group of masters

hiding behind the bushes. We will lose our advantage if we keep on fighting.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at Red Wish Emissary. He realized that her lips did not even move a little. Apparently, she was using some occult art to whisper her voice into his ears.

Red Wish Emissary continued, “Actually, there is no need for us to be enemies, we can even be allies. How about you leave me alone and Orange Star Emissary is all yours?”

There was also a competitive relationship between the Seven Kills Emissaries.

Therefore, if Orange Star Emissary died at the hands of Zhang Ruochen, it would be beneficial for Red Wish Emissary.

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes and nodded lightly as he agreed to cooperate with Red Wish Emissary.

Red Wish Emissary was exhilarated when he saw Zhang Ruochen nod. She then ordered everyone. “Zhang Ruochen is too strong. We shall retreat first.”

The nine Glazed Knights began to move at a fast pace. The Nine Star Array kept spinning, taking Red Wish Emissary away in a systematic fashion.

Orange Star Emissary was shocked and her face became pale. She asked, “Red Wish Emissary, do you want to leave me behind?”

Red Wish Emissary replied, “Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation has improved too much. To stop him with a Nine Star Array is somewhat impossible. If we are to fight him forcefully, we will both fall into a vicious loop. Since that’s the case, allow me to leave first. Upon returning, I will surely lead a few masters to save you.”

Red Wish Emissary and the nine Glazed Knights disappeared briefly.

Orange Star Emissary knew that Red Wish Emissary was speaking the truth. Although she was angry, she could not fully blame her.

If she had not acted recklessly, she would not now be controlled by Zhang Ruochen's savage beast war pet and be unable to unleash her power. With the power of two Nine Star Arrays, suppressing Zhang Ruochen would be possible no matter how strong he was.

After Red Wish Emissary had left, Zhang Ruochen walked toward Orange Star Emissary and said, "Orange Star Emissary, this is the second time that you have fallen into my hands. There was somebody to save you last time, so I let you live. This time, death is your only option."

Orange Star said seethingly, "Zhang Ruochen, how about you order the savage beast to release me and we both fight like real men."

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, "I am here in this Primitive World of the Wood Spirit because I have some important errands. There is no more time that I should waste on you. Blackie, just kill him, we must move now."

Zhang Ruochen agreed to let Red Wish Emissary go because he was forced to do so, and partly because of Red Wish Emissary's high ambition.

Red Wish Emissary wanted to become the Black Market Excellence Hall's First Class young master.

Due to that fact, Zhang Ruochen could begin a cooperation with her and against Di Yi.

However, Orange Star Emissary was different. She was loyal to Di Yi's orders and intended to kill Zhang Ruochen at all costs. If he let her live, she would still be Di Yi's number one assistant.

Therefore, Zhang Ruochen could only let Red Wish Emissary go, but not Orange Star Emissary.

Wechat: feitianyu5 Sina Weibo: feitianyu's Weibo

Chapter 485 - A Sword in Hand, Defeating All the Powers

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Whoever dares to kill Her Excellency will certainly pay a heavy price.”

A tall, Glazed Knight jumped down from the top of the savage beast’s head. He gained his power and suddenly pierced the Dragon Bone Spear towards Zhang Ruochen’s chest.

With the support of the Glazed Bone Armor, the Glazed Knight released the power of the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Zhang Ruochen moved slightly to the side. He grabbed the Dragon Bone Spear and quickly struck out a palm and hit the Glazed Knight in the chest.

Bang! The Glazed Knight flew back.

Zhang Ruochen held the Dragon Bone Spear in his hand and played with it. He nodded his head. “I’m going to use this to improve the grade of my the Abyss Ancient Sword.”

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew out. It refined the Dragon Bone Spear and quickly absorbed it.

Zhang Ruochen checked and found there was one more basic inscription on the blade. The total number of basic inscriptions had reached 211.

The power of the Abyss Ancient Sword had increased again.

The Glazed Knight stood up from the ground. He pressed on his painful chest, which felt like it was almost broken. He stared at the sword in Zhang Ruochen's hands with disbelief.

The sword could actually swallow the Dragon Bone Spear.

The Orange Star Emissary frowned. "You can't defeat Zhang Ruochen. Leave now; don't worry about me."

The Orange Star Emissary led a group of Glazed Knights. One of them had been killed by Zhang Ruochen, but there were still eight knights left.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Blackie. "What are you waiting for?"

Blackie licked its lips with its tongue. "You want to kill her like this? Isn't that too good for her? Her talent isn't bad; she would make a perfect pet for me."

The Orange Star Emissary clenched her teeth with anger.

A cat should dare to be so arrogant. She was an Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall! She would rather die than be a pet.

"It's sad to just think that the Orange Star Emissary has fallen to such a status."

Pei Ji appeared from the distance. Eleven warriors at the Completion of Heaven Realm followed behind him.

Pei Ji had not been planning to reveal himself until Zhang Ruochen and the black market had caused destruction on both sides. However, he had not anticipated that the Red Wish Emissary would leave with the Glazed Knights.

His plan had failed.

So now, he intended to do it himself.

Zhang Ruochen turned. "Pei Li, finally you're here! I thought you would stay hiding."

"Hide? Why should I hide? You are merely an opponent I already defeated. If anyone should hide, it should be you," said Pei Ji.

The Orange Star Emissary suddenly felt optimistic. Perhaps, if Pei Ji could kill Zhang Ruochen, she might still have a chance to escape.

The Orange Star Emissary said, “Pei Ji, you can order the eight Glazed Knights all you want. If you can kill Zhang Ruochen, I will give you my Dragon Lock Chain.”

“Give it to me?”

A look of disdain flashed on Pei Ji’s face. He squinted his eyes and looked closely at the Orange Star Emissary. “If I kill Zhang Ruochen, you will be mine too.”

The Orange Star Emissary was not angry at all. With a seductive look, she said softly, “If you can really kill Zhang Ruochen, I will be yours!”

It must be said that the Orange Star Emissary was indeed very beautiful. She was also an Iceberg Beauty. A seductive look from an Iceberg Beauty was indeed quite exciting for others.

Seeing the Orange Star Emissary deliberately seducing a man, even Pei Ji was a bit turned on. He felt like his whole body was burning.

Suppressing his sexual passion, Pei Ji’s quickly ran his Genuine Qi to get into a fighting state. If he wanted the Orange Star Emissary, he had to kill Zhang Ruochen first.

Genuine Qi rushed into Pei Ji’s five Golden Blood Rings activating the inscription in the rings. The bloody light emitting from the golden rings circulated his whole arm.

“POW!”

Pei Ji made a blow using his full power.

His arms moved very quickly. The powerful Genuine Qi surrounding his arm brought out a forceful explosion.

Even though Zhang Ruochen had broken through the Final State of the Heaven Realm, he did not underestimate Pei Ji.

He carefully observed every tiny change in Pei Ji’s attack. Pei Ji’s fist was three meters away from Zhang Ruochen.

“SWOOSH!”

Zhang Ruochen tightened his five fingers and seized the Abyss Ancient Sword. Moving later but arriving first, he brandished the sword and hit Pei Ji's fist.

“BANG! BANG!”

Pei Ji's five Golden Blood Rings all broke and split in half.

The broken rings flew toward the Abyss Ancient Sword, as if attracted by an invisible force, and collided with it. Like crashing into water, they sank and were instantly swallowed by sword.

After refining the Golden Blood Rings, the Abyss Ancient Sword had five more basic inscriptions.

Pei Ji fell backwards. The five fingers on his right hand had been cut off leaving five bloody stumps.

His entire arm was trembling. He clenched the teeth. “How... how could... even if you broke through the realm, you shouldn't be so much more powerful.”

Pei Ji could not accept this. Even the Orange Star Emissary was greatly surprised.

Pei Ji was rated 41st on the Heaven Board. He was in the most powerful group in the Heaven Realm in the whole Kunlun's field. He had a limitless future.

Zhang Ruochen had used only one move and wounded Pei Ji heavily. Did that mean he had the power to enter the top 10 of the Heaven Board?

Pei Ji seized a warrior at the Completion of the Heaven Realm and bit through the arteries in his neck to suck his blood.

“Grumble, grumble!”

As Pei Ji drank the blood, the five fingers that had been cut off quickly grew back.

After three breaths, all the warrior's blood was gone. He turned into a wrinkly yellow-brown corpse.

Pei Ji discarded the corpse. He spread his arms and his body started to make a “paw-paw” sound.

He once again revealed the true body of the Immortal Vampires. His height increased one meter and a pair of huge blood wings grew on his back. He was frightening.

The 10 remaining warriors were terrified. They retreated back step by step, all the while watching the devil before them.

Pei Ji turned around, showing his blood-red eyes. He snapped, “Where are you going? Make the Combined Attack formation immediately and help me deal with Zhang Ruochen.”

They did not dare disobey him. They each took out a Formation Jade to form the Combined Attack. They controlled the array and slowly moved toward Zhang Ruochen.

The eight Glazed Knights also held array flags and walked towards him from another direction.

The arrays were not simple. Both of them had the power to easily destroy a Master at the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head gently. He kicked his legs and jumped into the air. Using all of his Genuine Qi he chopped down with his sword.

“BOOM!”

The array made by ten warriors of the Completion of the Heaven Realm was instantly torn apart by the the Abyss Ancient Sword.

‘WHOOSH!’

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew out and turned into a light shuttle. It circled the Completion of the Heaven Realm warriors, then returned once again into Zhang Ruochen’s hands.

All ten warriors fell straight down.

In the other direction, the eight Glazed Knights pierced their Dragon Bone Spears out at the same time. From the center of the array, a beam of light flew out toward Zhang Ruochen who was in midair.

Zhang Ruochen demonstrated Space Moving. His body flashed and disappeared into the air.

The next moment, he appeared in the center of the array. He struck out eight handprints in a row, hitting all eight Glazed Knights. They flew back.

Zhang Ruochen smelled the strong scent of killing. It had to be Pei Ji's blood.

Pei Ji was standing on the side watching for a suitable opportunity to attack.

Pei Ji made his move just as the fourth Glazed Knight was hit and flew back.

When the eighth Glazed Knight was hit, Pei Ji's sword reached the top of Zhang Ruochen's head. After a number of calculations, Pei Ji was sure that Zhang Ruochen could not hide anywhere.

...

The number of words in these two chapters is slightly less. At noon tomorrow, I will add another chapter. (WeChat follows: feitianyu5 Sina Weibo Follow: Fei Tianyu's Weibo)

Chapter 486 - Half-Saint Blood Pill

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Pei Ji did not know that Zhang Ruochen had long ago activated his Space Domain.

In the Space Domain, his every movement was within his control.

It looked like the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword was about to come crashing down on his head. A sinister smile glimmered at the corner of Pei Ji's mouth. Everything was going to end!

However, in the next moment, his smile froze.

He did not know what happened. The entire space seemed to have become frozen.

His movements stopped completely.

Zhang Ruochen, however, was not affected and moved to the right. He struck out quickly with a palm and executed the sixth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, Divine Dragon's Steal.

Streaks of lightning surged out from his palm forming a dragon shadow that struck Pei Ji in the chest.

PFFT!

Pei Ji's chest caved in slightly. He spat out a mouthful of fresh blood as he flew backward.

When masters fought, it was like this. Even the slightest mistake would immediately determine victory.

Normally, given Pei Ji's strength, even if he was not as good as Zhang Ruochen, he should still have been able to resist for hundreds of strikes. It was a pity that Zhang Ruochen had executed a Space Freezing halting his movement.

In that brief moment, Pei Ji's defeat was decided.

The Orange Star Emissary and the eight Glazed Knights did not know Zhang Ruochen had used the power of space either. They only saw Zhang Ruochen's strike send Pei Ji flying back, once again injuring Pei Ji heavily.

In front of Zhang Ruochen, the 41st master on the Heaven Board was just like a child. He was absolutely no match for him.

"It's impossible... impossible... how could he be so powerful..."

Pei Ji wiped away the blood at the corner of his mouth feeling very dissatisfied. He placed one hand on the ground and used the power of recoil to stand once more.

It was not easy even for a top 10 master on the Heaven Board to defeat him. How was Zhang Ruochen able to?

Suddenly, his vision blurred, and a streak of sword radiance chopped towards his neck.

Pei Ji was shocked. All the hairs on his body stood on end. He quickly sent out the power of the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword and blocked it.

Zhang Ruochen had struck with all his strength; Pei Ji had blocked hastily. Immediately, the relative superiority was decided.

BOOM!

Pei Ji could only feel that everything in front of his eyes was sword Qi. A gigantic pressure pushed down forcing him to take a step back to dissolve it.

Zhang Ruochen's struck again and again. His clever sword movements followed one after the other forcing Pei Ji to react with confusion without any power to set up an attack.

Pei Ji's realm in sword technique was not high to start with, yet he insisted on fighting Zhang Ruochen with the sword. Of course, he was no match.

However, if he did not use the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword how could he block the Holy Weapon, the Abyss Ancient Sword?

He would probably have died even quicker.

“Now that he has broken through the realm, Zhang Ruochen is truly too terrifying. If I don't break into the Fish-dragon Realm I am not a match for him. It looks like I have to break into the realm today.”

Pei Ji's intention changed, and a glimmer of viciousness flashed in his eyes.

CLANG!

The ear-piercing sound of swords clashed and an eye-catching sword radiance broke into the sky.

Pei Ji pressed against his sword with both hands. He held the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword horizontally and clashed it against the tip of the Abyss Ancient Sword. The Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword curved backwards into a sword-bow.

BOOM!

The sword-bow shot out and Pei Ji flew backwards at a very high speed. He landed more than 33 meters away.

Pei Ji found his footing. His shoulders were numb, so he quickly moved his Genuine Qi to heal the heavy injuries his shoulders had taken.

“Zhang Ruochen, I have to admit, you are indeed worthy of your title as the king of the younger generation. However, if you want to defeat me, that is impossible.”

Pei Ji took out a red Pill the size of a pigeon egg and held it between two fingers, “This is a Half-Saint Blood Pill. I was going to wait until I had reached a bottle-neck to use it but for that Dragon Pearl of yours, it is worth it to take it now.”

The Half-Saint Blood Pill was made using Half-Saint blood. Not only did it contain powerful Spiritual Blood it also had some of the Half-Saint's Saint Power. For Immortal Vampires, it was a supreme elixir.

Pei Ji was prepared to take the Half-Saint Blood Pill to break into the Fish-dragon Realm.

If he could reach the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, his strength was sure to increase considerably. He would soon be able to kill Zhang Ruochen and steal the Dragon Pearl.

“No, I cannot let him break into the Fish-dragon Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen did not hesitate. He immediately executed Space Moving and appeared in front of Pei Ji. He struck out quickly with his sword towards his right hand, wanting to steal the pill.

Pei Ji immediately executed the Shadow of the Nine Star Step. He dissolved into a phantom and nine Shadows and quickly retreated.

He changed places nine times in a row. Thinking he had thrown Zhang Ruochen off, he prepared to take the Half-Saint Blood Pill.

PFFT!

A bloody sword pierced through the back of his neck and came out from his mouth.

“Uh...”

The Half-Saint Blood Pill was near Pei Ji's mouth but in the end, he did not manage to take it. Pei Ji took one last look at the sword coming through his mouth and his entire body shivered.

Just a little bit more, a little bit more...

In his final struggle, Pei Ji condensed all the power in his body and frantically struck out behind him. He planned to take Zhang Ruochen to the grave with him.

BOOM!

Pei Ji's palm power left a crater more than 10 meters wide in the ground behind him. The ground around the crater cracked and split.

However, Zhang Ruochen's strike had been with a Sword Defending Technique and he had pierced Pei Ji's neck through space. He was not actually standing behind Pei Ji. Pei Ji's final strike before his death did not harm him at all.

Zhang Ruochen swung his sleeve and shook off the dust that surged his way.

SWOOSH!

He extended his hand and the Abyss Ancient Sword once again landed in his hand.

“I... am... not satisfied...”

Pei Ji watched as Zhang Ruochen walked closer and closer. His eyes bulged out and he wanted to strike again. Unfortunately, the power in his body had all been used up, even such a powerful life force as the Immortal Vampire could not continue at this point.

BOOM!

Pei Ji had only taken one step forward when his body swayed, and he fell to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen used his Spiritual Power to investigate. Once he confirmed that Pei Ji had truly died, only then did he bend down and remove the Half-Saint Blood Pill from his hand.

Zhang Ruochen examined the Half-Saint Blood Pill and found that on the surface of the Pill there were countless Pill inscriptions. Not only did it contain the blood of a Half-Saint, it also had a large amount of blood aura from normal warriors.

“This Pill is indeed the work of Immortal Vampires. It looks like they truly have returned!”

Zhang Ruochen had some knowledge of the Immortal Vampires. He knew that not only did they suck fresh blood from living people, they also turned fresh blood from living people into Spiritual Doses and made them into Blood Pills.

The blood of a Half-Saint was the main drug.

The other warriors' blood was supplementary.

They killed thousands upon thousands of people and gathered them into a blood lake.

The blood lake would be refined and become a cauldron of Blood Pills.

Each cauldron likely only contained a few Blood Pills, perhaps a dozen or so. Each one contained an unusually large amount of Spiritual Blood.

Zhang Ruochen put away the Half-Saint Blood Pill and searched Pei Ji's body again, but he did not find any other Blood Pills. He did find another three Genuine Martial Arms, one at the ninth level and two at the tenth level.

Zhang Ruochen put it all away to give to the Abyss Ancient Sword.

He also picked up the Holy Sword, the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword and headed back. He began to clean up the battlefield.

Since he had exposed the power of space, Zhang Ruochen could not leave anyone alive. He killed all eight Glazed Knights and stored the eight complete sets of undamaged colored glaze armor in his Spatial Ring.

Each set of colored glazed armor was worth an astronomical amount. If he did not sell them, and gave them to Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, and the others, it would help to greatly increase their power. They would have the power to protect themselves in the Saint Academy.

As for the eight Dragon Bone Spears, they were refined by the Abyss Ancient Sword, becoming eight lines of basic inscription.

Zhang Ruochen found Genuine Martial Arms on the bodies of the 11 warriors at the Completion of the Heaven Realm which the three Great Saint families had sent out. These were also all given to the Abyss Ancient Sword to refine.

After absorbing all of the Genuine Martial Arms, dozens more basic inscriptions appeared on the Abyss Ancient Sword. The total had reached 241.

Not only that, the sword edge had become sharper and the weight of the blade had also increased greatly.

Having done all this, only then did Zhang Ruochen begin to walk in the direction of Blackie and the Orange Star Emissary.

The Orange Star Emissary had seen Zhang Ruochen kill Pei Ji. Her brows furrowed tightly and she let out a long sigh.

How could Zhang Ruochen have become so strong?

It was likely that only the first ranked warrior on the Heaven Board, the Yellow God Emissary, had full confidence in being able to defeat him.

However, the Yellow God Emissary was in the Primitive World of Xuan Wu breaking into the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm and it was impossible for him to come to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.

So it seemed that her wish to escape had become an extravagant hope.

She just wondered, how would Zhang Ruochen punish her?

Chapter 487 - The Dragon Pearl's Treatment

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen stared deeply at the Orange Star Emissary. He frowned and said, "Don't you want to kill her?"

"This lady is an Innate Lunar Body," Blackie replied. "She is able use the essence of the moon to improve cultivation and buff up her physical quality. Her physical quality has the potential to surpass the Saints with the amount of moon quintessence she has absorbed. Her hidden potential is limitless. Killing her would be a total waste."

Blackie set Orange Star Emissary free and restored her to free movement. However, it used a secret spell to seal her Meridians.

The Orange Star Emissary could not circulate her Genuine Qi. Aside from her larger and stronger physical quality, she was no different from ordinary humans.

Even if she wanted to escape, it would be to no avail.

Zhang Ruochen had an unpleasant feeling towards the Orange Star Emissary. "Her potential is indeed very respectful, but she is not on the same track as us. Leaving her with us will only bring us harm."

Zhang Ruochen walked towards the Orange Star Emissary and grabbed her wrist.

"What are you going to do to me, Zhang Ruochen?"

She gritted her white teeth when she spoke.

She struggled and tried to resist. However, without being able to run her Genuine Qi, it was quite impossible for her to fight with Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen took a bracelet from her wrist and released her hand.

“This is the Dragon Lock Chain!”

Suddenly the bracelet emitted red beams and flew out of his hand. It ascended in the middle of thin air and let out a crashing sound. Soon, it grew to a 333-meter long pieces of iron that resembled a dragon. It was as thick as a pail.

The Dragon Lock Chain possessed Vessel Spirit. Moreover, the Vessel Spirit had already acknowledged the Orange Star Emissary as its master.

Under the control of Vessel Spirit, the Dragon Lock Chain began to attack. It moved with extreme speed, like a thick iron whip was attacking Zhang Ruochen.

“No mistake, this is a Holy Weapon indeed. Even its Vessel Spirit possesses such gargantuan power.”

Zhang Ruochen was swayed by his sight. He flew up, let out both hands and grabbed the Dragon Lock Chain.

His palms began to ignite and started to refine the Dragon Lock Chain.

Although the Dragon Lock Chain and the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword were both Hundred Inscription Weapons, the Dragon Lock Chain had been around for more than ten thousand years.

The Dragon Lock Chain’s Vessel Spirit had very strong spirituality. The Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword could not match it.

The only way to control the Dragon Lock Chain was to worship it.

The Dragon Lock Chain was like a tame wild horse under the refining process. It slowly gained calmness and turned into a red bracelet, strapping around Zhang Ruochen’s wrist.

The Orange Star Emissary clenched her teeth. “Zhang Ruochen, you are bold enough to snatch my Dragon Lock Chain. If my Master finds out, he will surely end your life.”

Zhang Ruochen did not even listen to her. He walked towards Ao Xinyan, took out the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword, and returned it to her.

Ao Xinyan retrieved her sword with both her hands. Her head faced downwards. She said gently, “Thank you, Group Leader.”

Without any apparent reason, Ao Xinyan dared not look Zhang Ruochen in the eyes. To thwart any possible eye contact with him, she could only look down.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Are you seriously injured? Why are you not recovering yet? Did you take any regeneration Pills?”

Ao Xinyan shook her head. She felt the sadness coming from deep within. She sobbed and said, “Pei Ji destroyed almost half of my Meridians. Even the five internal organs and six hollow organs are badly damaged. I’m afraid recovering is not possible anymore.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned. He pressed onto Ao Xinyan’s wrist and exuded Genuine Qi into her body.

The Genuine Qi circulated within her body and returned, flowing back into his hand.

Zhang Ruochen retrieved his hand. “Such dreadful injuries; you are almost half handicapped. I am afraid that for you to fully recover and rejoin the Meridians, we might need the help of a Saint and Alchemist together to heal you. But we are currently still in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit, we won’t be back any time soon. By the time when we get back, your Meridians might already be hard.”

Ao Xinyan’s inner injury was quite dreadful. She could not use her Genuine Qi for rehabilitation, hence her injury would worsen even faster. The fact that she could still hang on was already a miracle.

Once the injury prolonged, the Meridians would surely harden. Even if the victim recovered, their Martial Arts Journey would

be hampered. As for a top genius in Martial Arts, it meant that their road to the Holy Road was already bleak.

If there was no hope, was there any reason to continue living?

Blackie came forward and said, “Zhang Ruochen, you are the only one that can save her now.”

“What do you mean?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Blackie answered, “She possesses a half-dragon body, so her Meridians are made up of the human’s and the Dragon tribe’s. If she can absorb a sufficient amount of Qi of Saint Dragon, not only will she fully recover, she might transform into a Genuine Dragon Body.”

Zhang Ruochen contemplated and asked, “Are you referring to the Golden Dragon predecessor’s Dragon Pearl? We can save her by using the Dragon Pearl?”

Blackie nodded.

Zhang Ruochen walked towards Ao Xinyan. He pressed his palm on her back and starting to circulate the Dragon Pearl’s Qi of Saint Dragon.

The golden Dragon Pearl began to spin quickly in his heart.

The gold dragon Qi released through his Meridians and flowed quickly towards his palm, then surged into Ao Xinyan’s body.

Ao Xinyan let out a cry. She coughed blood and her injuries grew worse.

Zhang Ruochen immediately retrieved his palm. He helped her up and said, “It’s impossible. Her Meridians are broken to bits, she cannot withstand the power surge of dragon Qi. Forcefully injecting the dragon Qi into her body will only worsen her injury.”

Blackie said, “There are only two possibly solutions. The first is to let her swallow the whole Dragon Pearl in order for her body to absorb Dragon Pearl’s dragon Qi. She will then return the Dragon Pearl to you after she recovers.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “The Dragon Pearl is in my heart. I can’t release it until my cultivation reaches the Fish-

dragon Realm. You would have to slice through my heart to retrieve it.”

“Then what’s left is the second method, but this might be slightly troublesome.”

Blackie added, “Since you both have human Qi and dragon Qi, if the both of you can breathe in and out together and form a cycle, the dragon Qi will then transfer into her body.”

Ao Xinyan blushed. With slight embarrassment, she said, “That’s a bit weird, don’t you think?”

“You can choose to give up if you want to become a handicap,” Blackie answered.

Ao Xinyan bit her lip softly and looked towards Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was apparently calm. He looked at Ao Xinyan. “If this makes you feel uncomfortable then we don’t need to rush things. There will surely be another way. There are patrol teams from the Ministry of War in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit, we probably don’t even need to wait for the Ten-thousand fields Tavern’s ship to return to Chaotic Millionverse Mountain. As long as we are able to return, with the power of the Saint Academy, there will surely be another way to help you with your recovery.”

“But we are trespassers. If we look for help from the Ministry of War patrol team, we might end up behind bars. When we will return to the Saint Academy remains unknown and I will probably have succumbed from my injuries when the time finally comes.”

Ao Xinyan pursed her lips and raised her head. Her eyes were glowing as she looked into Zhang Ruochen eyes. “Group Leader, you saved me three times. You will save me this time too, right?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Blackie.

Blackie said, “This is the only way to save her. Of course we can choose to ignore her and pursue our journey to find the Qi of Origin in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. She is just

another trouble maker. If not for her, we might have already found the Qi of Origin by now.”

Since Zhang Ruochen had saved her so many times, there was no reason not to save her at this crucial moment.

“If that’s so, let’s begin.” Zhang Ruochen said.

As the sun set, the sky became darker and the air gradually became colder.

Zhang Ruochen’s pores began to emit green Genuine Qi. It gathered to become a humongous ball-shaped Qi shield. Ao Xinyan’s body drifted up with the Genuine Qi. She was like a fallen leaf, floating within the Qi shield.

Zhang Ruochen held her hand. Their palms stuck together.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Ao Xinyan’s face. It could not be denied that she was indeed very pretty. She had decent facial features, long eyebrows, a small nose and red crystal clear lips, as red as a gem.

One felt like kissing her just from looking at her.

Even if kissing her could lead to one’s immediate death, many would still not hesitate to get close and kiss her.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes to eliminate any desire that came into his brain and tried to control his emotions.

He lowered his head and kissed Ao Xinyan’s lips.

Their lips gradually grew closer and closer.

“AHH...”

Ao Xinyan’s body was twitching. Her fingers tightened uncontrollably and she trembled.

Gradually, their Qi began to connect and form a cycle.

Ao Xinyan’s body began to absorb Zhang Ruochen’s dragon Qi.

Under the nourishment of the dragon Qi, Ao Xinyan’s five injured internal organs and six hollow organs recovered swiftly. Her flesh began to regenerate and her wounds

recovered. The broken Meridians were reconnected under the languid flow of the dragon Qi.

Chapter 488 - The Extraterritorial Death

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Blackwood Field, an ancient forest that was over 1,500 kilometers deep, was one of the most dangerous territories in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.

There were many Blackwood Longevity Trees growing in Blackwood Field.

This kind of tree had a long lifespan and could even grow for ten thousand years.

Of course, the most important thing was that the Blackwood Longevity Trees could give birth to spiritual intelligence and become treemen. The longer they grew, the stronger the treemen's power would be.

At the moment, in the hinterland of the Blackwood Field, hundreds of thousands of treemen were gathering together. Some of them were more than 333 meters in height, their trunks were thick and full of power. Some of them were as high as a normal human being, they were short and fragile. It seemed that these treemen could be crushed by a normal human being.

The treemen were all standing under an altar which was as high as a mountain. Solemn and serene, they stood in silence.

The cylindrical altar was made of ten ton megaliths with mysterious patterns and characters on them.

From afar, the altar looked like a lofty mountain that had been flattened by a sword. It was majestic and imposing.

A human-shaped treeman, who looked very old, was standing on top of the altar. It said, “The great Tree God passed down an oracle that an evil Extraterritorial Death is going to enter Blackwood Field. If we cannot work together to kill the Extraterritorial Death, the entire world will be destroyed.”

Its sound was low, but it spread out 50 kilometers and entered into the ears of every treeman.

“What? The Extraterritorial Death is coming! What should we do?”

“The Tree God passed down an oracle, it seems the Extraterritorial Death is really horrible.”

“It’s so abhorrent! Those extraterritorial demons go too far in bullying us. They want to kill us all.”

...

All the treemen were in a panic. They realized that a great catastrophe was coming.

A 300 meter high treeman said with energy, “I would like to ask the Treant Ancestor what the Extraterritorial Death looks like. If I meet him, I will fight desperately to kill him.”

The human-shaped treeman standing at the top of the altar condensed a powerful force on its fingertip, and it pointed to the void space.

“HUAA...”

A light spot moved in all directions, forming a huge light mirror.

A figure of a young man appeared in the mirror.

If Zhang Ruochen had been here, he would have recognized the human being in the mirror as himself.

All the treemen memorized Zhang Ruochen’s appearance. They regarded him as their archenemy.

Zhang Ruochen did not know that the entire treeman tribe already thought of him as the Extraterritorial Death. As soon as he appeared, he would be attacked.

After an entire night, under the nourishment of the dragon Qi, a portion of Ao Xinyan's Meridians had been set back. She could regulate her Genuine Qi and recuperate herself.

Zhang Ruochen went to the other side and sat down cross-legged. He took out a piece of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood and squeezed it into his hands.

Now that he had broken into the Final State of the Heaven Realm, he could refine more Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood. The refinement of half a kilogram of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood was equal to a year's worth of traditional cultivation.

When Zhang Ruochen had been in the Medium State of the Heaven Realm, his body would reach saturation after 1.6 kilograms.

How much Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood can I refine in this realm?

Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood suspended between his two palms. It shattered into fine powder with a bang. His Genuine Qi wrapped around the wood powder and turned into an airstream. Then it surged into Zhang Ruochen's body.

After refining 1.5 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, Zhang Ruochen finally felt his body begin to saturate. However, it was still far from its limit.

He finished refining 2.5 kilograms. It was very strenuous for him refine the third kilogram of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood. His body started to reach its limit.

In the end, he stopped at 2.65 kilograms.

Although Zhang Ruochen still hadn't practiced into the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit, the total quantity of the refined Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood was beyond his expectation.

"The unique environment of the Primitive World of Wood Spirit should help in cultivating the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit. Then I could constantly refine 2.65 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood. I would be able to practice into

the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit before reaching the Completion of Heaven Realm.”

Refining 2.65 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood was equivalent to five years of practice.

Zhang Ruochen’s martial cultivation had improved considerably. Of course, it was not enough to reach the Completion of Heaven Realm.

In the meantime, Ao Xinyan’s wounds had been healing. It looked like she was already recovering.

She regulated her Genuine Qi. Holding the Bluewater Dragon Patterned Sword, she displayed a sword technique.

She did not stop until she had practiced the sword technique three times.

Zhang Ruochen walked towards her. “It looks like you have recovered from your injuries.”

Ao Xinyan immediately recalled how Zhang Ruochen had helped her heal. Her cheeks grew hot.

It was arguable that Ao Xinyan was also a master of Martial Arts. Even though she lacked experience, her psychological quality was still tough. Zhang Ruochen and she had merely embraced and kissed; they had not done anything more intimate.

So why was she still nervous when she saw him?

“Ao Xinyan, when did you become so hypocritical? It was just a kiss, why are you so scared of him?”

Ao Xinyan tightly pinched her fingers in the effort to suppress the shyness in heart. She met Zhang Ruochen’s gaze and tried to remain calm. “I have not completely recovered yet. I can only use 20 percent of my power.”

“I can lend you more dragon Qi.” He offered.

Ao Xinyan felt a jolt of electricity. She fluttered her dark eyes. Somehow, she had developed feelings for him.

He grabbed her palm and held it tightly. Ao Xinyan's heart twitched and she quickly lowered her head. Her breathing became rapid and shallow.

Zhang Ruochen was confused. "Why are you so nervous? Your Meridians have been set back and your injuries have healed considerably. You can withstand the direct instillation of the dragon Qi. We don't need the method we used last time."

"Oh! He is just instilling the dragon Qi..."

Ao Xinyan took a long breath, and her brows furrowed slightly. She felt a bit disappointed.

Zhang Ruochen did not care what she was thinking. He began to quickly regulate the dragon Qi in the Dragon Pearl. It flowed through his palm and surged into her body.

"What are you thinking? Hurry and run your exercises so you will absorb the dragon Qi," Zhang Ruochen said harshly.

Ao Xinyan was startled. She quickly ran exercises to transport the dragon Qi to her wounds.

Three days passed. Ao Xinyan had absorbed a large amount of dragon Qi, and her wounds had finally healed.

She did not practice into the Genuine Dragon Body.

It was not easy to practice into the Genuine Dragon Body. If she could swallow a Dragon Pearl, it would be much easier.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Since your wounds have healed, we should separate ways!"

"Why?" Ao Xinyan asked feeling a slight panic in her heart.

She had thought that their relationship was intimate. She wasn't expecting him to drive her away as soon as her wounds healed.

"I have something very important to do, and it's very dangerous," he replied. "You can't follow me. I have already delayed a few days because of you. I cannot continue to delay. From now on, take care of yourself. It would be best for you to go back to Kunlun's Field right away."

After saying this, Zhang Ruochen did not look at Ao Xinyan anymore. He walked toward Blackie and asked, “How is it? Did the Qi of Origin move?”

“No, it’s still in the depth of Blackwood Field,” Blackie replied. “I went and checked. You should know that the treemen have become fierce and their activities are more frequent. It seems that they are looking for something. It will be dangerous for us to enter Blackwood Field now.”

“Even if it’s dangerous, we have to go,” Zhang Ruochen said. He showed a strong look in his eyes.

Chapter 489 - Accumulating Military Merits

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“I want to go too, Group Leader,” Ao Xinyan said.

Zhang Ruochen stared at her with a serious look. Once again, he advised, “Blackwood Field is very dangerous. Even with my cultivation, I could still be killed inside. Are you sure you want to go?”

Ao Xinyan opened her beautiful eyes and said firmly, “I want to help you.”

She was insisting. Even if Zhang Ruochen chased her away, she would surely follow him into the Blackwood Field.

If that happened, it would be even more dangerous.

Zhang Ruochen nodded gently. “Fine! I can bring you with me, but once we enter the Blackwood Field, you have to obey my orders.”

“Great!”

Ao Xinyan was very happy. She agreed immediately.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment and took out a Black Glazed Spinel the size of a basin. He handed it to her. “Right now, you have a martial cultivation at the Final State of the Heaven Realm. Refine this Spirit Treasure of water nature; it should help you break through to the Completion of Heaven Realm.”

Ao Xinyan took the Black Glazed Spinel and quickly felt the rich Spiritual Qi of water nature inside. It was as cold as ice, but still sent out a touch of moisture.

With her half-dragon body, refining water natured Spirit Treasure, was like giving water to a fish. It greatly improved her physical quality and enhanced her cultivation.

“Thank you so much, Group Leader.”

She held the Black Glazed Spinel tightly.

“He gave me such a precious treasure, this obviously shows that he still cares about me.”

Zhang Ruochen walked to the edge of the Blackwood Field and stopped. He released his strong Spiritual Power and explored the dark forest.

When the strength of one’s Spiritual Power reached the forty-first level, he could sense danger and blessings and easily foresee disasters, maximizing the good and minimizing the bad.

“How is it?” Asked Blackie.

Zhang Ruochen’s face was grim. “There is a huge sense of murder in the Blackwood Field. If we enter, it will be difficult to escape.”

“It is the Wood Spirit Primitive World’s Qi of Origin. They want to kill you,” Blackie said.

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head and said without fear, “Let’s go! I’d like to take a look. What kind of danger could be hidden in Blackwood Field?”

Zhang Ruochen’s pressed his fingers against his temples and stimulated the Skyeye. With a Bang, a light streak cracked open from his eyebrow and turned into a vertical eye, exposing the Skyeye Pupil. It looked like a fireball.

Using the Skyeye, he could observe all the movement in the surrounding area, including every move the treemen made.

“There are an extraordinary amount of treeman living in the Blackwood Field. There are 39 Millennial Treemen within a thousand kilometers. Every one of them is comparable to a superior of the Fish-dragon Realm. Among them, the most powerful treeman is 440 meters tall and comparable to a Monk at the Third Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.”

If a warrior of the Heaven Realm without Skyeeye went in it, he would most likely die.

However, with Zhang Ruochen's power and his Skyeeye, it was worth a try.

“I left blood on the Heaven Board. If I kill an indigenous creature at the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, I can get 1,000 military merits.”

“And if I kill an indigenous creature at the Second Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, I can get 10,000 military merits.”

“If I kill an indigenous creature at the Third Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, I can get 100,000 military merits.”

“This is a perfect opportunity to kill treemen, gain fighting experience, and earn military merits.”

Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen's war intent actually increased.

Among the warriors of the Heaven Realm, only the top ten figures on the Heaven Board had the ability to fight with indigenous creatures at the Third Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Of course, even with their power, they could only combat with one or just barely defeat it.

However, the indigenous creatures were not stupid. If they realized that they could not win, they would flee immediately.

The Battlefield of the Primitive World was indigen's land. If an outsider wanted to kill the indigenous creatures, he could easily fall into the opponent's traps, and they wouldn't even know how they died.

Every year, a large number of warriors from the Heaven Board who were eager to gain military merits died in the Battlefield of the Primitive World. Among them, there were even top ten masters of the Heaven Board.

It was a very difficult task to gain 30 million military merits and reach the Ultimate Realm. In the past century, hardly anyone had been able to do it.

Zhang Ruochen, Blackie, Ao Xinyan, and the Orange Star Emissary finally entered the Blackwood Field. They began to take out the treemen around the outside of Blackwood Field.

After an hour, Zhang Ruochen and his party quietly arrived at the area where the nearest Millennial Treeman was.

This forest was densely populated with trees, heavy humidity, and difficult terrain. There was no way to see the sky.

In addition to the Millennial Treemen, many powerful century old treemen also grew in the forest.

At the edge of the forest area, Zhang Ruchen stopped and looked at Ao Xinyan and Blackie. "I will take care of the Millennial Treeman, you get the others. Remember, we must not let go of the trees, otherwise, we will reveal our whereabouts. If we are besieged by treemen, we will surely die."

Ao Xinyan said, "Don't worry Group Leader, these treemen are comparable to the cultivation of the Heaven Realm at most. Even without Blackie's help, I could take care of them with just my power."

After experiencing a few catastrophes, Ao Xinyan had grown a lot.

However, she also understood that in the Battlefield of Primitive World, "one shall stand, and one shall fall".

She had never killed anyone before.

She decided killing treemen would be good practice.

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head. He started a body movement, turned into a Shadow, and dashed into the forest.

In the center of this area, there was a giant 300-meter-tall tree reaching with a thick strong trunk. Seven adults holding hands could barely surround it.

A vine was wrapped around the bark. It had many Lines and was tough, as if it had casted by black gold.

In fact, the Millennial Treeman's bark, trunk, and roots were all treasures that could be used to make armor and Pills.

SWOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen rushed from a distance, passing through the vines and thorns. He stopped and stood under the giant tree.

Zhang Ruochen looked up. He could see clearly that the giant tree was breathing.

When the tree inhaled, the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi was like water in a stream, forming lines that gathered continuously towards it.

When the tree exhaled, the forest was filled with the sound of rustling wind. All the leaves swirled up and the wind was very violent.

It had grown for 1,300 years. It was unclear how much wind and rain it had experienced, but it still stood there. There had to be tremendous power in its trunk.

The Millennial Treeman sensed Zhang Rouchen just as he appeared below it. Two cracks opened on its trunk which formed two large eyes.

When it saw the human standing below, it shook violently. It shouted, "Extraterritorial Death, you finally appeared!"

Zhang Ruochen, with his hands on his back, asked curiously, "Why did you call me Extraterritorial Death?"

"Because you are the devil who will destroy the treeman tribe. Humph! The God of Trees passed us an oracle, he wants us to kill you at all costs."

The Millennial Treeman controlled its seven large branches. Like seven iron walls the branches attacked toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen propped up his Celestial Bodyshield and turned it into a blue Genuine Qi Ball, blocking the attacks of the Millennial Treeman.

"Dragon and Elephant Return to Earth!"

Zhang Ruochen jumped up, across the void. He pushed out a palm with his thick Genuine Qi. It condensed into a huge handprint and hit the trunk instantly.

This Millennial Treeman had practiced for 1,300 years. It was equivalent to a warrior with cultivation at the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

But Zhang Ruochen's attack was enough to kill a Monk at the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

POW!

The handprint struck the trunk, leaving a deep gash. Drops of red blood appeared.

The Millennial Treeman uttered a deep, painful sound.

The Millennial Treeman knew that it could not match the Extraterritorial Death. A root emerged from the soil and turned into long black tentacles. It moved swiftly toward the center of the Blackwood Field.

It wanted to inform the Treant Ancestor about the arrival of the Extraterritorial Death. If the Treant Ancestor was able to come, it could surely kill the Extraterritorial Death.

“What a treeman! It has a very strong defensive power. I used all my strength and barely harmed it.”

Zhang Ruochen could not give the Millennial Treeman any chance to escape. He immediately summoned the Abyss Ancient Sword. He injected Genuine Qi into the blade, activating the Holy Sword's power.

The sword tip shot out a 10-meter black light.

SWOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen swung the sword, dragging out a long sword light. Dozens of sword Qi rushed out to cut the trunk of the Millennial Treeman in half.

“Hateful... Extermination Death... you... you must die... oh!”

Just before the Millennial Treeman died, it shouted loudly. It was trying to inform the other treemen that the Extraterritorial Death was here!

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen had already opened his Space Domain, the Millennial Treeman's shout was not heard.

The trunk rattled and crashed, leaving only a bloody stump.

On the stump, there were more than 1,300 growth rings. And blood was gushing out from all of them.

The strange thing was that the blood of the Millennial Treeman didn't smell like blood. Instead it emitted a faint fragrant scent.

“Another 1,000 military merits.”

In the Heavenly Ring, Zhang Ruochen had defeated the Orange Star Emissary, 683rd on the Heaven Board. Thus, he had replaced her ranking and received military merits.

With the addition of this 1,000 military merits, he had obtained a total of 514,000 military merits.

He still needed to accumulate more.

Chapter 490 - Divine Dragon Chaotic Tower of the Sun and the Moon

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen set a short-term goal for himself to accumulate a million military merits in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.

Right now, there were only 18 warriors on the Heaven Board with over a million merits.

This meant that once he reached a million military merits, he would enter the Heaven Board's top 20.

Ao Xinyan, the Orange Star Emissary and Blackie caught up with him. They had killed all the Centurial Treemen.

The Orange Star Emissary placed her hands on her hips with a look of arrogance. "You dare to intrude the Blackwood Field, that only means death. You'll see, you will all die in the next three days."

"The Millennial Treemen's blood is known as the Blood of Wood Spirit. They are rare Spiritual Doses that can help warriors practice the Treasured Body of Wood. Besides that, taking the Blood of Wood Spirit can promote a warrior's cultivation."

Zhang Ruochen looked at the Orange Star Emissary and gave her a palm-sized jade bottle. He ordered her like a maid, "Go fill this up with the Blood of Wood Spirit."

"Who do you think you are?"

The Orange Star Emissary glared at him.

Zhang Ruochen said, “As a prisoner, you will be treated like one. If you refuse to obey me, I can kill you now since you are useless to me.”

She grew fearful when she saw that Zhang Ruochen appeared to be calm. She did not defy his order.

As long as she remained alive, there would surely be a chance to escape in the future.

She took the jade bottle and observed it. A bottle this small would surely be filled up in a nick of time. There was no need to seethe over a small matter like this. So she agreed.

However when she began to collect the Millennial Treemen’s blood, she realized that no matter what, the palm-sized jade bottle could never be fully filled.

“Could this be a Space Treasure?”

She had to be resilient and continue collecting if she wanted to assess how much this bottle could hold.

It was indeed a Space Treasure crafted by Zhang Ruochen. It was called the Auspicious Vase. The space inside the bottle was so vast that it could hold an entire well of water.

The Auspicious Vase could even hold a lake.

Ao Xinyan was surprised too. She stared at the jade bottle, slightly dazed. “Group Leader, is that a real Space Treasure?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “It’s just an inferior class Space Treasure, it is called the Auspicious Vase. However, the is just a semi-finished product. It doesn’t exert its full power yet. You can try by exuding you Genuine Qi into it; you will see some wonderful changes.”

Ao Xinyan could not control her curiosity. She walked over and snatched the Auspicious Vase. She held it with both hands and exuded her Genuine Qi into it.

The inscriptions on its surface let out white lights.

Then a small vortex appeared, forming a suction. The Millennial Treeman’s blood flew upwards and gathered. The

droplets became a small floating river and flew into the bottle.

SWOOSH!

In a brief moment, the Millennial Treeman's blood completely filled the bottle.

Ao Xinyan retrieved her Genuine Qi. The inscriptions slowly dimmed.

She shook the bottle. Apparently, the bottle was not full.

“Amazing! It absorbs the Millennial Treeman's blood all on its own!” Ao Xinyan was astonished.

The Orange Star Emissary beside her was also amazed.

Zhang Ruochen retrieved the jade bottle. “It's not finished yet. The real Auspicious Vase can hold a strong opponent, imprison them and even refine them. Legend says that in the Middle Ancient Times, Saint Monk Xumi used the Auspicious Vase to hold a Great Saint and almost refined him.”

“Group Leader, where did your semi-finished product come from?” Ao Xinyan stared at the jade bottle and blinked in disbelief.

Zhang Ruochen just smiled. He kept the bottle and did not reply.

After leaving the woods, Zhang Ruochen and his party continued to kill the other Treemen.

After a day, Zhang Ruochen had killed 36 Millennial Treemen. Among them, there were even five Bimillennial Treemen. Their strength was equivalent to a monk at the Second Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

After killing them, he accumulated 81,000 military merits, which totaled up to be 595,000 military merits.

Thanks to his Skeye, he could determine the location of every Treeman. If it was any other warrior on the Heaven Board, they would not be racking up the kills this fast.

At the same time, the other warriors would not be so efficient in hiding their position. With this many killer Treemen, they would likely expose their position and be sieged by them.

There was only one person from the Heaven Realm capable of accumulating more than 80,000 military merits in a day, and that person was Zhang Ruochen.

When night fell, Zhang Ruochen, Ao Xinyan, the Orange Star Emissary and Blackie hid and rested. They did not continue the killing spree.

Blackie set up two arrays, a Second-Class Hiding Array and a Fourth Class defensive strategy.

They sat inside the array. The creatures outside the array could not see the array or hear anything.

There was a fire inside the array.

Blackie was using a fourth level Genuine Martial Arms Bronze Spear to roast a savage beast's thigh. It was golden brown and gave off the distinctive aroma of meat.

Blackie took Millennial Treeman's blood and sprinkled it on the meat. The fragrance of the wood blended with the aroma of the meat.

Blackie was a skillful cook. Even Ao Xinyan could not resist the temptation and gently licked her lips. The Orange Star Emissary caught sight of the huge chunk of meat and had to control her hunger pangs.

Blackie's roasted meat was indeed one of the best.

Only Zhang Ruochen who was always on his guard did not relax. "We cleared out almost all the treemen in this area. Such a huge commotion will definitely create a stir within the treeman tribe, and expose our position. There won't be an easy way out for the next few days. The further we get to the center of the Blackwood Field, the more difficult our journey is going to be."

"We can only succeed if we persistently advance our cultivation and get stronger."

He took out the Auspicious Vase and had a sip of Blood of Wood Spirit. Then he started refining.

Ao Xinyan distracted herself from the savage meat and took out her Glazed Crystal to continue to refine. She wanted to

practice into a Treasured Body of Water Spirit and break through to the Completion of the Heaven Realm. Then, she could become Zhang Ruochen's most reliable assistant.

The meat was finally cooked. Blackie extended its paw with the meat on it. It looked at the Orange Star Emissary and smiled. "Want to try some?"

The Orange Star Emissary turned her head with a disdainful look and snorted.

Blackie smiled and asked, "Do you know why I tried so hard to spare your life before Zhang Ruochen?"

"There is no need to remind you about my identity since you already know. To be honest, your future in the Black Market looks bleak. On the other hand, if you follow Zhang Ruochen and I, I believe that you will accomplish more than you can imagine."

"You already witnessed the greatness of Zhang Ruochen's Auspicious Vase today, yes? Let's just keep this straight, he crafted that bottle on his own. With such skill, Di Yi is simply no match for him."

Her eyes lit up. "Zhang Ruochen really does have the ability to control space power?"

Blackie nodded. "Absolutely. Yet his master is no Buddhist Emperor or Golden Dragon, but Saint Monk Xumi."

The Orange Star Emissary did not care who Zhang Ruochen's master was. Her real concern was the hidden power within Zhang Ruochen. She planned to break the secret to Di Yi as soon as she managed to escape.

Blackie put down the roasted meat. He stood on two paws. "I chose not to kill you because you possess an Innate Lunar Body. It means that you are one of the five physical qualities I wanted to collect. Lucky you."

The Orange Star Emissary gave a look of doubt. She thought the cat was very strange, but couldn't help asking, "Five physical qualities?"

Blackie did not answer. Instead it asked her a question. “Have you heard of the artifacts?”

The Orange Star Emissary replied, “Of course I’ve heard of them. However even in Kunlun’s Field, the Ten-thousand Inscription Sacred Weapon, a top tier weapon, is rather scarce. The ten artifacts are just a legend. Even in the ancient times nobody ever actually saw them.”

Blackie was full of pride. “I have acquired an artifact and it is one of Kunlun’s Field’s top ten artifacts. It is called the Divine Dragon Chaotic Tower of the sun and the moon.”

“However the artifact needs five succeed physical qualities to be at its strongest.”

“The five physical qualities are the Genuine God Body, the Genuine Dragon Body, the Innate Extreme Yang Body, the Innate Extreme Yin Body and the Five Elements Chaotic Body. When the five physical qualities conglomerate as one, the artifact can trigger its full potential to deal with the upcoming catastrophe. You have succeeded in practicing the Innate Lunar Body which is an Innate Extreme Yin Body.”

Zhang Ruochen kicked Blackie in the buttocks. It fell forward and slammed into the fire.

“Can you stop boasting?”

Zhang Ruochen could not take it anymore. Blackie was really exaggerating too much this time.

If Blackie really did have the Divine Dragon Chaotic Tower, he would not have been sealed in the Yin Yang Wooden Graph by Saint Monk Xumi.

Moreover, Blackie had been sealed for over one hundred thousand years. How could it possibly know the current situation in Kunlun’s Field and dare to call it a catastrophe. If that was not boasting, what was it?

It was intolerable. Blackie bragged too much and deserved the kick.

Initially, the Orange Star Emissary had believed Blackie’s story, it sounded like it could be true.

But when she saw Zhang Rouchen kick the cat, she realized she had been tricked. Only a foolish person would believe the cat's tale.

Chapter 491 - King of Treeman

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The next day, the team was led by Zhang Ruochen. They walked into the depths of Blackwood Field. Soon, they met the pinnacle of the treeman tribe.

This treeman was 440 meters in height. It was absolutely monstrous.

It had lived for more than 3,400 years and its strength could be compared to a monk at the Third Change of the Fish-dragon realm. It was enough to be called “The King of Treemen”.

PFFT!

The King of Treemen was filled with anger when it saw Zhang Ruochen. It let out a furious roar, causing an absurd wind to blast through the mountains.

“Extraterritorial Death, you slaughtered the people of my tribe. Today, I shall tear you into pieces.”

News of the genocide of the treeman tribe had spread through the whole Blackwood Field.

The King of Treemen led two Millennial Treemen and a couple hundred Centurial Treemen to battle the Extraterritorial Death.

The King of Treemen did not know that Zhang Ruochen had come here to find it.

Killing this Treeman would earn him 100,000 military merits. Zhang Ruochen was excited thinking about the military merits he would earn.

Although the Third Change of the Fish-dragon Realm was only a realm above the Second Change, in reality there was actually a huge gap between them.

A superior like Pei Ji could defeat a Monk at the Second Change of the Fish-dragon Realm easily. But if he came head to head with a Monk at the Third Change, he would likely run for his life.

Zhang Ruochen had actually battled a Monk at the Third Change in the Fish-dragon Realm before. However he had borrowed the Sarira's First Degree Sealing Power and managed to obtain a huge source of temporary power.

The Sarira's First Degree Seal had been used and the power in it exhausted. If Zhang Ruochen wanted a similar power, he needed to break through the Fish-dragon Realm to unfold the Sarira's Second Degree Seal.

This battle would be the first real deal. Whether he could defeat the King of Treemen or not was unknown.

When the battle broke out, the two Millennial Treemen behind the King of Treemen were the first to rush out and siege upon Zhang Ruochen.

Millennial Treeman who had lived for over 2,000 years were in line with Monks at the Second Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

WOOSH!

One of the Millennial Treemen was holding seven vines. It struck them out like seven whips.

The vines were covered with a dazzling fire ray that emitted crackling sounds.

The vine was not something near ordinary. It was the Vine Monster for 1,000 years' practice, the Fire Vine.

The power of seven Fire Vines in addition to the power of the Millennial Treemen, was a mighty destructive force. Even a dozen-meter tall stone wall would collapse instantly after one strike.

Zhang Ruochen cast bodily movements to dodge the vines.

Suddenly, he rushed forward. He changed forms several times and penetrated through the seven vines. He landed on one of the Millennial Treeman's branches.

“Go to hell.”

The seven Fire Vines were like seven spiritual Fire Cobras. They shuttled through the branches and bound Zhang Ruochen's hands and legs.

The vines grew tighter. He was completely entangled.

The Millennial Treeman laughed loudly. It was controlling dozen sharp branches. The branches were like spears, their sharp tips stabbing and piercing.

Suddenly, there was a loud shredding sound in the vines. A sword radiance beamed out and let out a great amount of sword Qi.

SWISH!

The Fire Vines were torn to pieces, scattering everywhere.

Holding the Abyss Ancient Sword, Zhang Ruochen ascended into thin air. He turned his body swiftly and pierced the Millennial Treeman with a shredding sound.

The Millennial Treeman was split in half. It fell in two pieces, blood streaming out like it was raining blood. The ground was stained crimson.

The other Millennial Treeman was stunned to witness just how fearsome the Extraterritorial Death was. “King of Treemen! The Extraterritorial Death is too terrifying!”

“What? Move out of the way, I'll battle him.”

The King of Treemen was fast. In the blink of an eye, he was in front of Zhang Ruochen. He waved his two thick-as-millstone branches and attacked.

Zhang Ruochen leapt through the branches and flew up. “The defensive power of the treeman tribe is indeed powerful, but the attack power is feeble. King of Treemen, you are no match for me.”

“Damn Extraterritorial Death, you are too fast!”

The King of Treemen felt an enormous pressure. Not only did it move its branches, even its roots were mobilized. It was as if it had turned into a thousand handed giant, launching an unstoppable siege towards Zhang Ruochen.

Although the King of Treemen did not practice martial techniques, it had been living for more than 3,000 years. Surely it had a strong sense regarding the law of Heaven and Earth. Its attack was packed with purpose and lethality.

“That’s why he is the King of Treemen. His attack power really packs a punch.”

Zhang Ruochen chose not to compete with the King of Treemen with power. Instead he executed multiple cuts with his sword. He intended to chop its branches and roots with the sharp Abyss Ancient Sword.

However, the King of Treemen had a trick up its sleeve. Its every attack evaded the sword edge and launched a direct attack towards Zhang Ruochen.

“The only option left is the Sword Defending Technique.”

Zhang Ruochen struck out with the Abyss Ancient Sword. The sword passed through the branches and hit the trunk.

BAM!

A root as thick as a water bucket emerged from the earth and struck the back of the Abyss Ancient Sword. The sword was knocked out of his hand.

Zhang Ruochen snorted and stuck out one finger. He circulated Spiritual Power and pointed to the King of Treemen.

WHOOSH!

The Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi immediately formed into streaks of purple lightning. The lightning streaks connected, forging one giant streak. It pierced through the sky and struck the King of Treemen.

The King of Treemen let out a scream of pain. It was already burned black.

The King of Treemen attacked with its branches and roots. Its movements became languid.

Zhang Ruochen seized the opportunity and rushed under the King of Treemen.

SWOOSH!

The Abyss Ancient Sword returned to his hand.

Without hesitation, Zhang Ruochen rushed through with his sword. He chopped the King of Treemen's trunk in half.

“Nooooo!”

The King of Treemen roared. Just before he died, he controlled his two roots and attacked Zhang Ruochen in the chest.

BANG! BANG!

The King of Treemen's dying counterattack contained an entire lifetime's worth of power. It pierced through both his Celestial Bodyshield and the defensive power of the Dragon Pearl. He began to vomit blood.

Zhang Ruochen bent over, pressing his chest. Streams of blood flew from his mouth. He felt piercing pain in his five internal organs and six hollow organs. The sensation was like fire burning deep within.

“I'm too reckless!” he said, coughing. “The King of Treemen's strength is out of this world. I didn't expect him to counterattack before dying. I will not repeat this mistake. Thankfully I have the blessing from the Dragon Pearl, otherwise the consequences would be unimaginable. Good lord, I still killed the King of Treemen and got 100,000 military merits.”

Zhang Ruochen coughed twice; more blood came out of his mouth.

When the Millennial Treeman saw that Zhang Ruochen was seriously injured, it charged towards him. There was no better time than this to kill the Extraterritorial Death.

SWOOSH!

It swung its thickest branch at his head.

Zhang Ruochen condensed his eyes and suppressed the injury. He executed a sword Qi and chopped the branch off.

It extended another two branches and continued to attack.

“How dare you do that when I am here!”

Black light emitted from Blackie’s body. It expanded larger and larger.

Blackie grew to 33 meters tall and sported two huge wings. It was like a small black mountain with sharp claws and teeth.

SWOOSH!

Blackie claws extended and grabbed the Millennial Treeman out of the ground. “Kacha”. A bite on the Millennial Treeman broke the treeman’s trunk into half.

Then it swallowed the entire Millennial Treeman.

The Orange Star Emissary was extremely shocked at what she had just witnessed. “This... But this is just a savage beast.”

After shape shifting, Blackie looked nothing like a cat anymore; it looked like a Mythical Beast of Reckless Waste. It raised its head like a ravenous beast and took a step large enough to cross a river.

With eyes enraged like Thunder Bolts, it roared fiercely, “Treat me as a weakling, I’ll show you my true powers.”

Zhang Ruochen set his sight somewhere further in the distance. He saw a dark forest charging in their direction like a tidal wave.

“We have to leave immediately,” he said. “A hoard of treemen are coming and there are many Millennial Treemen. If we are surrounded, there is no way out.”

“Leave, quickly!”

Blackie’s aura disappeared instantly.

Its body shrank back to its original size. It turned into a dark Shadow and fled.

“Group Leader, let me take the honor of carrying you since you are injured,” Ao Xinyan said with concern.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "I'm fine. Take the Orange Star Emissary. We don't have to fight the treemen, let's get out of here."

Zhang Ruochen ran his Genuine Qi to protect his traumatized internal organs. He cast a bodily movement and raced out.

BOOM!

An earth shattering sound came from the forest.

Thousands of treemen rushed forward. They stopped.

The five treemen who led the team were a major force on their own. They were Kings of Treemen and had lived for 3,000 years.

"We're late," one said. "The Extraterritorial Death murdered the Tower Treeman King."

"Damn! Chase them! We must eliminate the Extraterritorial Death for good. Or else chaos will set upon the treeman tribe."

The treeman army continued their hunt.

Chapter 492 - Breaking into the Treeman Army

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Blackie had arranged the Hiding Array earlier at the top of a three kilometer high mountain. It rushed toward the precipice and jumped up with all fours. It rose up to the sky, jumped to the peak, and rushed toward the array.

SWOOSH!

Its figure immediately disappeared as if it had been swallowed by the void space.

Subsequently, Zhang Ruochen, Ao Xinyan, and the Orange Star Emissary also reached the peak and entered the array. They were temporarily hidden.

BANG!

The treeman army charged forward below the peak. They divided into two forces that moved northwestward and southeastward. Gradually, they disappeared at the end of the forest.

Ao Xinyan was relieved. “Fortunately, they didn’t discover us. Otherwise, we would’ve been in trouble.”

“The Millennial Treemen are very sensitive to the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi.” Said Zhang Ruochen. “The setup of the Hiding Array will surely cause some subtle changes in the surrounding Spiritual Qi. If we encounter Millennial Treemen with profound cultivation, we will not be able to escape so easily.”

Blackie stood at the peak and said calmly, “The Hiding Array I arranged is quite ingenious. Unless it’s a 5,000 or more year-old Treeman King, it’s absolutely impossible to discover any signs of the array.”

Ao Xinyan said, “As far as I know, the First Central Empire once launched a crackdown when they discovered the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. They arrested all the treemen over 7,000 years old.”

“So, my Group Leader, you don’t have to be anxious. Only a handful of creatures in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit can see through Blackie’s array.”

“I hope so!”

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything more. He took out the Auspicious Vase, drank some Blood of Wood Spirit, and started healing his wounds.

The Blood of Wood Spirit could supplement a warrior’s Spiritual Blood and help them heal. It was more effective than other Pills.

As he refined the Blood of Wood Spirit, Zhang Ruochen’s injury gradually recovered.

The Blood of Wood Spirit was a Millennial Treeman’s blood. It was also its quintessence after a thousand year’s cultivation, and contained the strong Spiritual Qi of wood. As he drank more and more, his blood seemed to change, becoming more and more like the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit.

“Taking Blood of Wood Spirit can really do me good in refining the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit.”

He had already absorbed more than 4 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood. He was not far from the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit.

His physical quality was increasingly close to the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit after taking so much Blood of Wood Spirit.

If he had a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit, he would be able to communicate with trees and flowers. Moreover, he could

turn into a tree, or even a treeman using the Spiritual Qi of wood nature.

“In Kunlun’s Field, the Blood of Wood Spirit is an extremely precious Spiritual Dose. Only powerful Saint families’ disciples are qualified to take it. Moreover, they only have a small amount, so they can’t take large doses.”

Zhang Ruochen felt that his cultivation was advancing quickly and he was making great progress every day.

The Auspicious Vase contained a lot of Blood of Wood Spirit, so he was not afraid of using it all up.

He also intended to collect more and bring it back to Kunlun’s Field so he could give it to Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling, Luo Shuihan, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, and his other friends.

Han Xue and Kong Xuan would be able to drink a lot of Blood of Wood Spirit. It would be of great benefit to them. If they were provided with the best resources now, they would make amazing achievements.

In particular, Han Xue was fast at cultivating. She cultivated even faster than Zhang Ruochen and Chi Yao had 800 years ago.

Zhang Ruochen had killed a Treeman King, a Millennial Treeman, and seven Millennial Fire Vines. In total, he obtained 117,000 military merits.

Combined with his previous military merits, he now had 712,000.

“My ranking on the Heaven Board should have improved.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Since his injuries had healed, it was time to go on earning military merits and collecting Blood of Wood Spirit.

The treeman tribe had many strong warriors. Until he actualized the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit, it would be impossible for Zhang Ruochen to sneak into the depth of the Blackwood Field.

He could only launch a surprise attack to weaken the overall strength of the treeman tribe. He also took this opportunity to enhance his cultivation and strived to actualize the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit as soon as possible.

Once that happened he would be able to mobilize a great amount of Spiritual Qi of wood nature and even turn into a treeman. Then, he could sneak into the depths of the Blackwood Field and take the Qi of Origin from the Primitive World of Wood Spirit.

Therefore, he was very eager to materialize the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit.

This time, he chose to act alone.

He walked out of the Hiding Array and proudly stood on the cliff at the top of the mountain. He displayed his Skyeeye and gazed far off into the distance.

There was a Millennial Treeman 300 kilometers away in the southeast.

“I should try to avoid the treeman army and deal with the lone Millennial Treemen.”

He suddenly jumped from the mountaintop. Just as he was about to plummet to the ground, he spread his arms and revealed himself as the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon.

He took nine steps. Every step he took was nearly a kilometer long. He hurried toward the Millennial Treeman 500 meters away.

A Millennial Treeman was certainly incomparable to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen killed it in just one attack. He collected the Blood of Wood Spirit and quickly left in search of other Millennial Treemen.

He spent the entire day killing treemen. He killed 19 1,000-year-old Millennial Treemen and three 2,000-year-old Millennial Treemen, resulting in a total of 49,000 military merits.

He stopped when it turned dark and returned to the Hiding Array at the peak. He took more Blood of Wood Spirit and practiced.

The next day, he went to the Blackwood Field again and resumed his hunt.

“Yesterday, I killed 22 Millennial Treemen, inflicting heavy loss on the treeman tribe. Today, they’re being more cautious. I can’t find a single lone Millennial Treeman. I will have to go after the treeman army.”

The treeman army had many top-class warriors. Unless there was no other way, Zhang Ruochen did not want to have a head-on confrontation with them.

He released the Space Domain. The space in front of him warped and he disappeared.

It did not make him invisible, rather the space warps caused a distortion of sight. Ordinary treemen could not see him.

The treeman army had stopped for a short break. They stood as a black forest in a vast field.

There were tall thick trees as far as the eye could see. However, at the slightest sign of disturbance, they would immediately change to treemen and launch a furious attack.

In the treeman army, there were five Treeman Kings. They stood in the center of the forest, like five towering trees, with a powerful presence.

Under the cover of the Space Domain, Zhang Ruochen cautiously slipped into the black forest. He walked beneath the treemen and charged at one.

The Treeman King had a keen sense. It had probably sensed his breath before he even took an action. Moreover, all the kings were close together in the center of the forest. If he was discovered, he might be sieged by the five kings.

Even though he was confident in his own strength, he was not egotistical enough to challenge five Treeman Kings in one go.

He chose to attack a 2,000-year-old Millennial Treeman instead of a Treeman King.

If he could kill it, he would obtain 10,000 military merits, a substantial payoff.

“The Extraterritorial Death is too abhorrent. Yesterday, he killed a dozen of my clansmen. He’s an absolutely irreconcilable enemy,” said an 800-year-old treeman.

The treeman said, “Now, aside from the two treeman armies, all of the treemen are gathered in the center of the Blackwood Field. We shouldn’t provide the Extraterritorial Death with any chance to attack.”

“What if the Extraterritorial Death comes to fight the treeman army? What should we do?”

After a moment of silence, all the treemen laughed out loud in the forest.

“There are hundreds of Millennial Treemen in the army, plus the five Treeman Kings. If the Extraterritorial Death tries to penetrate the Holy Wood Array for God Destruction, even if he has a profound cultivation he’s doomed to die.”

Zhang Ruochen, who walked below, stopped abruptly with a serious expression.

“Holy Wood Array for God Destruction”.

He had never expected that the treeman tribe knew how to embattle.

He had to be more cautious.

The Millennial Treeman sneered. “That’s right. The Holy Wood Array for God Destruction is a God-killing formation. It’s been arranged by the five Treeman Kings and aided by 108 Millennial Treemen. Never mind one Extraterritorial Death, even if there are ten Extraterritorial Deaths, they’ll surely be killed. Haha!”

Just then, the space below the Millennial Treemen undulated. Zhang Ruochen came out and swung his sword.

“Damn!”

The Millennial Treeman sensed the danger and was about to dodge.

However, Zhang Ruochen attacked so quickly that the trunk had already been hit.

SWOOSH!

He chopped off the trunk, immediately displayed Space Moving and fled away. He did not even collect its Blood of Wood Spirit.

The Millennial Treeman cried out and then fell down heavily with a bang.

The surrounding treemen were shocked.

“Another clansman killed... The Extraterritorial Death is here... The Extraterritorial Death has come again...”

Screams of panic and fear came from the forest. The treemen were in a mess and fled in all directions.

In the depth of the forest, an earth-shattering shout was heard.

“Extraterritorial Death, you have no way to escape this time.”

The five Treeman Kings released a powerful force that formed a strong fluctuation in the Spiritual Qi. Two kings stayed to comfort the frightened treemen.

The other three kings rushed out. They chased after Zhang Ruochen at their fastest speed.

Chapter 493 - Fighting Against Treeman Kings

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen looked behind him and saw three kings chasing him. He turned up the corners of his mouth. “The treemen are not very smart. They’re inferior to human beings.”

He immediately mobilized the force of space, displayed Space Moving, and disappeared.

All of a sudden, his figure appeared silently about 33 meters away from the three kings.

He continued to play the Space Moving, but in reverse. He rushed toward the field, where the treeman army had previously been stationed. He moved his figure quickly. Soon he was several kilometers away.

“Where is he? How can he disappear so quickly?”

The three kings stopped and looked around. They tried to find traces of him.

One of them looked back and saw a figure flashing across the field. Suddenly, it turned pale with fright. “Oh no! We’ve been lured away by the Extraterritorial Death. Now, he’s rushing toward the treeman army.”

“Hurry and catch up with him! We have to prevent him from killing our clansmen.”

The three kings were indignant. They yelled and hurried back.

Although there were many superiors in the treeman tribe, they were not good at fighting and had rarely experienced death.

Zhang Ruochen had killed a Millennial Treeman in secrecy. It sparked great concern among the treeman army.

The whole army was in disorder.

The two Treeman Kings were forced to rectify. The treeman army gradually restored order and calmed down.

Unexpectedly, some treeman began to shout, “Crap! The Extraterritorial Death is here again!”

“What? Again!”

The frightened Treemen panicked again. Like headless chickens, they fled in all directions.

BANG!

Treemen were bumping into each other. It was pure chaos.

The two kings sighed when they saw the mess. They had never expected that the mighty treeman army could be so vulnerable.

The Extraterritorial Death was a big name. Moreover, his behavior was truly terrifying.

As soon as Zhang Ruochen confronted the treeman army, he immediately started killing.

SWOOSH!

The sword radiance flashed again and again alongside the jarring sounds of the sword.

He barely raised his hands. In a breath, he killed three Millennial Treemen.

By the time the Millennial Treemen came to their senses and tried to besiege him, Zhang Ruochen had already retreated.

He had succeeded in one stroke, so he ran away.

“Damn it! I must kill him!”

When the Sky Treeman King saw the three dead Millennial Treemen, it was suddenly furious and roared loudly. Its branches swayed fiercely and a terrific hurricane formed.

Even a clay figure was temperamental, never mind a Treeman King.

Black tree roots came out of the mud like a dozen long tentacles. It charged at Zhang Ruochen.

“Sky Treeman King, don’t chase him,” warned the Bright Treeman King. “You could be trapped by the Extraterritorial Death.”

However, the Sky Treeman King had already led a group of Millennial Treemen to chase him. It did not bother to take the Bright Treeman King’s advice.

The treeman army was in a mess. The Bright Treeman King needed to take charge and could not leave.

The three kings who had chased Zhang Ruochen earlier returned to the army. One of them stood up and asked, “Bright Treeman King, have you seen the Extraterritorial Death?”

Bright Treeman King replied, “The Extraterritorial Death came back and killed another three Millennial Treemen.”

“Damn it! If I catch him, I will not allow him to die in peace.”

The Treeman King was tall and his trunk was as thick as a pillar. In order to vent its anger, it mobilized a branch. With a bang, the branch fell to the ground, crumbling a 100-meter-high hill.

“Wouldn’t it be wonderful if I could hit the Extraterritorial Death in one strike?”

Unfortunately, the Extraterritorial Death was sly. Moreover, he was too fast to catch up with. The Treeman Kings could not display their full capabilities. It was rather depressing.

Another Treeman King asked, “Where’s the Sky Treeman King?”

Worriedly, the Bright Treeman King said, “It was furious when it saw the Extraterritorial Death kill three clansmen. It led a group of treemen to chase after him.”

“No! The Extraterritorial Death is not only powerful, but also cunning. Among us, the Sky Treeman King is the weakest one. If it goes after him all alone, it won’t survive.”

“Bright Treeman King, you stay here and reorganize the army. We’re setting off to support the Sky Treeman King.”

“I hope we can make it.”

The three kings followed the Sky Treeman King’s tracks.

They had gone 250 kilometers before they found the Sky Treeman King.

It had been beheaded. Worse still, the blood in its trunk had been taken, turning it into a withered yellowish-brown tree.

In addition to the Sky Treeman King, seven Millennial Treemen had also been murdered and turned into a pile of bloody wood dust. Only piles of wood remained on the ground.

The three kings trembled with rage. Their trunks swayed so violently that the ground began to shake.

“Damn! The Extraterritorial Death has definitely returned to the treeman army. The Bright Treeman King won’t be able to defeat him.”

All three kings screamed in anger and hurried back again.

As expected, Zhang Ruochen had indeed returned to the treeman army for the third time after killing the Sky Treeman King.

“Run! the Extraterritorial Death is back again.”

This time, the treemen were not a mess. They fled in the same direction in a uniform manner.

It was quite a strange scene from a distance.

A forest of giant black trees moved rapidly in front. They were chased by a huge flame, which was centered on a human.

Undoubtedly, the human was Zhang Ruochen.

He displayed Ten-thousand-foot Prairie Fire, a vision of heaven and earth. Influenced by Genuine Qi, the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi turned into flames that suspended in mid-air and ignited the entire field.

The treemen couldn't avoid it; they could only run for their lives.

The Bright Treeman King was enraged. "Extraterritorial Death, you've gone too far. Today, we fight for life or death."

The Bright Treeman King had grown for 3,800 years. Although it was a tree, it could not be hurt by a common flame.

Moreover, its powerful strength was comparable to that of a Monk at the Peak of the Third Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

BOOM!

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to catch up to the treeman army, the ground in front of him suddenly broke apart. A tree root with numerous meridians sprouted out of the ground.

The root was covered with black metal rays. A strong wind arose imperceptibly and reached Zhang Ruochen.

"Divine Dragon's Steal."

He threw the sixth movement of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. Beams of purple lightning emitted with a crack from the center of his palm.

A low-pitched dragon's roar came from the center of the lightning.

A 30-meter-long lightning dragon flew from the center of the palm to attack the tree root.

POW!

The root shattered the lightning dragon, then hit Zhang Ruochen.

It was like he had been struck by a great mountain. He was flung back from the terrible force.

With his powerful strength, he quickly steadied himself and fell to the ground again.

"What a powerful power!"

He examined his hands and found several bloody cracks in the center of his palm. The flesh of his fingers had been torn off, his white bones exposed.

His two arms were completely numb, as if they were broken.

Fortunately, he had a strong physique and tough bones because he had the Treasured Body of Water Spirit. Otherwise, his hands could have been destroyed.

“This Treeman King is several times stronger than the last one. Both of them are 3,000-year-old Treeman Kings, but there’s a great difference between their strengths.”

Similarly, Monks at the Third Change of the Fish-dragon Realm were different in terms of strength. A powerful Monk could quickly kill a weak one.

Even if they were in the same realm, there’s a great disparity in strength.

Zhang Ruochen had killed the Sky Treeman King with ease, but the Bright Treeman King had wounded him considerably.

“My realm is not even close to that of the Treeman King. I can’t play hardball with them. I’d better use the Abyss Ancient Sword,”

Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

The five elements reinforce each other, and “metal restricts wood”.

As a Holy Weapon, the Abyss Ancient Sword was sharp and powerful. It was the best choice for dealing with the Treeman King.

Chapter 494

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Three strong auras came from a distance. Zhang Ruochen looked over and saw three giant trees rushing toward him. They circled around him, he was trapped.

“So fast!”

He smiled and threw the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. He activated the power of the Dragon Pearl. With a swoosh, a pair of 10-meter-long golden dragon wings sprouted from his back.

He fluttered both wings and rose up. As if he was a giant bird, he charged up a hundred meters, into the clouds.

“You want to escape? No way!”

Each of the four Treeman Kings threw a Millennial Fire Vine up into the sky.

The Fire Vines expanded to as thick as a bucket and stretched over a thousand kilometers. They soared to the sky and passed through the clouds. They hit Zhang Ruochen like four fire dragons.

A Fire Vine was like an elf, with wisdom and spirituality. Together with the power of the Treeman Kings, they erupted horrible power.

Zhang Ruochen did not dare to fight the Fire Vines and had to dodge constantly.

“No. I feel like a living target in the sky.”

He passed through the four vines, swooped down, and returned to the ground.

He folded his dragon wings and morphed into a shadow. He raced into a dense jungle and disappeared.

“Treeman Kings, I’ll continue my fight with you tomorrow.”

His voice echoed between heaven and earth. However, the four Treeman Kings could not find him.

“Damn it! He slipped away again!”

“He claims that he’ll come tomorrow. We should set a tight encirclement to prevent him from escaping.”

“Absolutely. Let’s set the Holy Wood Array for God Destruction tomorrow. We must kill the Extraterritorial Death.”

The four Treeman Kings gathered together and began to discuss strategies to deal with the Extraterritorial Death.

Zhang Ruochen was quite satisfied. He had easily obtained more than 10,000 military merits and was much closer to his goal of a million military merits.

However, he was not eaten up with pride. He clearly knew the reason he had earned so many military merits so quickly, was that the treemen were not good at fighting. Moreover, they were not intelligent, so they’d been fooled by him.

In the case of the cultivators at the Third Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, they had probably practiced into “Skin Refining to Gold” and “Bone Refining to Jade”. All of them were battle-seasoned. It would not be easy to deal with them.

“I’ve caused big losses for them two days in a row. Over the next few days, the treeman tribe will surely be cautious. I shouldn’t take any stupid risks. I have to enhance my strength, and then fight with them.”

When he said he would fight with the Treeman Kings tomorrow, it had been a total lie.

He had deliberately distorted the facts to confuse the treemen about when he would make his move.

He returned to the Hiding Array at the mountaintop. He took some Blood of Wood Spirit and began to cure his hand

wounds.

He was not seriously injured. Only his skin was wounded and he quickly recovered.

“Since I’ve broken through to the Final State of the Heaven Realm, I should be able to refine more Half-Saint’s Light and upgrade my Martial Soul to a higher realm.”

In the Medium State of the Heaven Realm, he had resorted to Half-Saint’s Light to enhance his martial soul. It was comparable to that of a cultivator at the Sixth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, which was approaching the upper limit of his body’s tolerance.

If the martial soul was too powerful, the warrior’s body could not endure it.

For example, with Zhang Ruochen’s current martial cultivation and body strength, if his Martial Soul suddenly reached a Half-Saint’s level, his body would likely explode.

Now that he’d broken through to the Final State of the Heaven Realm, his body strength had improved considerably. He could continue to absorb Half-Saint’s Light to further improve his Martial Soul.

If his martial soul was like that of a cultivator at the Seventh Change of the Fish-dragon Realm, he could mobilize more Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi, and then his strength would largely increase. Zhang Ruochen could be confident of success, even if he confronted four Treeman Kings.

Half-Saint’s Light was stored in the Qi Sea between his eyebrows.

He began to absorb the Half-Saint’s Light. His head emitted a holy white light that came from his eyes, ears, mouth, and nose and converged to the top of his head, forming a ring of white light.

The Orange Star Emissary sat cross-legged in the array, eyes fixed on Zhang Ruochen. She saw wisps of holy light surge out from his Qi Sea.

She was quite amazed.

“Unbelievable. His Qi Sea can store Half-Saint’s Light. Has he practiced to the Ultimate Realm of some realm and actualized the Chord of Gods to form the Qi Sea of divine light?”

She had also refined the Half-Saint’s Light to improve her Martial Soul.

However, she had never used the Qi Sea to store the Half-Saint’s Light. A common warrior’s Qi Sea was so fragile that the Half-Saint’s Light could easily cause it to explode.

Only warriors with the Chord of Gods could practice the Qi Sea of divine light and bear its power.

Just like Bu Qianfan.

Bu Qianfan had reached the Ultimate Realm in the Yellow Realm, so his Qi Sea could store the Half-Saint’s Light.

“No wonder Zhang Ruochen is so powerful. He has definitely reached the Ultimate Realm once. If he gets another 30,000,000 military merits, he’ll reach the Ultimate Realm for a second time. After that, none of his contemporaries will be able to defeat him.”

Her eyes changed constantly. She was considering how she could spread the news. By all possible means, the Black Market had to kill Zhang Ruochen and prevent him from fully developing.

Zhang Ruochen spent three days absorbing Half-Saint’s Light. As expected, the strength of his Martial Soul improved and was comparable with that of a cultivator at the Seventh Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

He released his Martial Soul and suspended it in mid-air.

The Martial Soul mobilized the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi for five kilometers. It condensed into a Qi sword dozens of meters long.

WHOOSH!

The Qi sword flew out like a meteor flying in the sky. After some time, it suddenly charged down and fell towards the ground. It crushed a Centurial Treeman from the treeman army.

With a bang, the Centurial Treeman's root broke. A huge pit appeared on the ground.

"I can burst out such a powerful force and nearly kill people 500 kilometers away with a Martial Soul at the Seventh Change of the Fish-dragon Realm and the Heart Integrated into Sword. However, this movement consumes a lot of Genuine Qi. After an attack, my Genuine Qi must be quite low."

It was amazing to kill people 500 kilometers away. Actually, it required several conditions.

First, the strength of the Martial Soul had to be at the Seventh Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

Second, the warrior had to have practiced Heart Integrated into Sword.

Third, their Spiritual Power had to have reached the fortieth level and the Skyeeye had to be opened. With the Skyeeye, one could clearly see their enemies hundreds of kilometers away.

Each of these three conditions was indispensable.

For a warrior in the Heaven Realm, it was quite amazing to achieve even one of the three conditions.

Even among cultivators at the Fish-dragon Realm, very few could satisfy all of these conditions.

After consuming so much Genuine Qi, Zhang Ruochen felt weak. He quickly drank some Blood of Wood Spirit to restore his Genuine Qi.

It was not long before he reached his Peak again.

"Today, I have to reach my goal of a million military merits."

He stood up ready to fight.

"Group Leader, I'll follow you."

Ao Xinyan lifted her sword and exited the array after him.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Ao Xinyan and his pupils contracted. "Have you practiced into the Treasured Body of Water Spirit?"

“That’s right. I’ve practiced into the Treasured Body of Water Spirit and my half-dragon body has also enhanced. Moreover, with the help of the Black Glazed Spinel, I’ve broken through to the Completion of the Heaven Realm. My current strength is not inferior to Pei Ji any more. I won’t hinder you,” said Ao Xinyan.

With her current strength, Ao Xinyan was indeed not weaker than Pei Ji. In fact, she was even a little stronger than him. Moreover, she had just broken through to the Completion of the Heaven Realm and would improve further.

If she practiced for another length of time, she would probably be in the top ten on the Heaven Board.

“Ok! Since you want to go, let’s go! Based on your cultivation, you could suffer more.”

A radiant smile suddenly appeared on her pretty oval face. She licked her red lips and looked thoughtful. She was very happy.

She jumped down from the peak after Zhang Ruochen and hurried towards the treeman army.

Zhang Ruochen flung out his Abyss Ancient Sword and displayed the Sword Defending Technique. His first target was the Bright Treeman King, the second strongest among the four Treeman Kings.

The four Treeman Kings had set up the Holy Wood Array for God Destruction. They were ready for a big fight; it was time to kill the Extraterritorial Death.

However, they had never expected that the Extraterritorial Death was so dishonest. They had waited for three days and did not see him.

The treeman army had their guard down. A Holy Sword suddenly flew from the sky and attacked the Bright Treeman King.

Without warning, the Abyss Ancient Sword pierced through its trunk with a bang. It left a huge gaping wound in the Bright Treeman King’s body, and a trail of blood.

Chapter 495 - Sixteenth on the Heaven Board

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Bright Treeman King was badly hurt from the unexpected sword. The hole in its trunk was two meters wide.

However, treemen had strong vitality. As long as its trunk was not broken, it would not die so easily.

“It’s... It’s Extraterritorial Death! Hurry up! Arrange the array!” It shouted.

SWOOSH!

The Abyss Ancient Sword circled in void space, chopping obliquely with its long sword light.

The sword edge collided with the trunk, causing sparks and a sound of friction.

It was like hitting against an iron column.

The trunks of Treeman Kings were tough; common weapons could not hurt them.

However, the Abyss Ancient Sword was no ordinary weapon, it was a Holy Sword.

The Bright Treeman King’s trunk was chopped down. Only a long stump gushing blood remained on the ground.

A strong Treeman King fell down in this way.

Originally, the four Treeman Kings had intended to team up with other Millennial Treemen and arrange the Holy Wood Array for God Destruction to kill Zhang Ruochen. However,

with the death of the Bright Treeman King, the array collapsed before they could even attack.

And the other Millennial Treemen had begun to flee, so it was impossible to continue to arrange the array.

“I don’t think we cannot deal with the Extraterritorial Death.”

The three Treeman Kings looked at each other and immediately rushed forward.

Each of them threw a Fire Vine. The vines changed into three long fire snakes. They rotated constantly and launched attacks from three different directions.

The Abyss Ancient Sword emitted a long sword light. It rotated rapidly in mid-air and formed a huge circle of sword Qi, hundreds of meters in diameter.

SWOOSH!

The sword Qi chopped the Fire Vines. They were cut into pieces and flung away.

Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul mobilized the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. His fighting ability improved so that he was comparable to Monks at the Third Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

After all, his opponents were Treeman Kings. They were not Monks in the Fish-dragon Realm, or cruel savage beasts. They repelled his attacks and could only exert defensive actions.

However, even with his current strength, he could only suppress them. It was not easy for him to kill them.

He fought with them for an hour. Finally, he had the chance to hit the middle part of a Treeman King’s trunk and kill it.

“Damn! The Golden Treeman King has been killed by the Extraterritorial Death. The two of us cannot defeat him. Hurry up! Let’s get out of here and return to the altar. We can only suppress him by turning to the Treant Ancestor.”

The two Treeman Kings quickly returned to the hinterland of the Blackwood Field.

The Treeman Kings had strong defensive power and were very fast. If they wanted to escape, it was difficult for Zhang Ruochen to kill them.

“You can’t escape anymore!”

He raised a finger and pointed to the two runaway Treeman Kings.

BANG!

The whole space shook. It quickly broke apart and collapsed from the outside in.

The two Treeman Kings were trapped in the collapsed space. They cried out. Their trunks shattered, and their leaves dissolved into fine powder.

When space regained, they had completely disappeared.

Above him, some leaves fluttered to the ground.

The leaves were stained with blood.

Ao Xinyan was shocked and a bit sad. She somehow thought the treemen should not be killed. She and Zhang Ruochen were intruders and they had destroyed the peaceful world.

“Leader... Group Leader, why do we have to kill these treemen? Is it just for military merits?” Ao Xinyan felt confused looking at the bloody stumps on the ground before her.

Zhang Ruochen withdrew his sword, closed his eyes, and took a deep breath. “The Battlefield of Primitive World is cruel. There’s no true or false, and no good or evil. Only the battle between creatures from two different worlds.”

He turned around and took a deep look at her. He said, “If you are merciful, you shouldn’t have come to the Battlefield of Primitive World. On the battlefield, there’s only killing and being killed. If you’re too merciful, you will likely be killed.”

Was the Primitive World of Wood Spirit a Battlefield of Primitive World?

Of course it was.

Soldiers of Primitive World of the Ministry of War fought with the treeman superiors of the Primitive World of Wood Spirit every year. Many people on both sides were killed or wounded.

However, the Primitive World of Wood Spirit was a relatively peaceful Battlefield of Primitive World. Its mortality rate was not that high.

A real Battlefield of Primitive World could be a hundred times crueler than the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. A merciful person could not survive on the battlefield.

Zhang Ruochen had been well prepared mentally, when he stepped onto the Battlefield of Primitive World.

The reason he had come here was to harden himself.

If it was possible to avoid bloodshed, he would not slaughter the innocent willfully. He would not raise his hands against the poor indigen of Primitive World. He would only kill superiors if he could.

There was a sensation below the stone tablet Heaven Board of the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain.

The stone tablet of Heaven Board was magnificent, standing at a height of 676 meters. It had stood atop the mountain from time immemorial.

Many warriors gathered together in the square below to watch the change on the Heaven Board every day.

If a name disappeared, it meant that the corresponding warrior had died or broken through to the Fish-dragon Realm.

People paid close attention to the masters who had been famous for many years and ranked top thousand on the Heaven Board.

“It’s amazing! Zhang Ruochen’s military merits increased so fast. In just a few days, he reached sixteenth on the Heaven Board, and his military merits are up to 1,297,000 points.”

“Zhang Ruochen? Is he that young king from the Eastern Region?”

“Of course, it’s him. There may be many people with the same name, but only he can enter the top 20 of the Heaven Board at such a young age.”

A nearby young warrior sighed in recognition. “At that speed, he will likely accumulate 30,000,000 military merits soon and actualize the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm.”

Not far away, someone laughed grimly. “It’s not so easy to actualize the Ultimate Realm of the Heaven Realm. Although the Martial Arts are thriving, only a few people can reach the realm.”

Everyone looked over at him. A yellow-robed man sat in a stone house on the edge of the square.

He looked to be at least 20 years old and stood about two meters tall. His arms were long and half a palm longer than average.

His five sense organs were three-dimensional. With deep eyes and a straight nose, he looked very handsome.

However, no one dared to get close to him.

If anyone approached within ten steps of him, he would display a strong murderous feeling. As a result, the people could not help feeling fear and had to draw back.

Undoubtedly, those who could reach the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain were not the weak.

A few bold warriors ventured over and stood 10 steps away from him. He said, “Although only a few people can reach the realm, it’s still possible for someone to accumulate 30,000,000 points, inflict the Chord of Gods, and reach the Ultimate Realm.”

“Take the example of the current Holy Queen of Majesty and Morality. She reached the Ultimate Realm 800 years ago. It’s said that the corpses of the indigens of Primitive World she killed can be piled up into a hill, with blood flowing like a stream. Nearly all the creatures in the Primitive World were killed. She obtained more than 90,000,000 military merits, which is unsurpassable.”

“Another example is the Evil Monk of Death, the rebel of the Thousand Buddhas Sect, 600 years ago. He also killed around a hundred thousand indigens of Primitive World and reached the Ultimate Realm. However, we now call him the Evil Ancestor of Death, rather than the Evil Monk of Death.”

“In addition, the Saintess of the Demonic School, Ling Feiyu 300 years ago; the smart talent Luo Xu 200 years ago; the Little Holy King, Wan Zhaoyi 70 years ago; they all reached the Ultimate Realm.”

“As the Martial Arts thrive, men of talent come out in succession. More and more warriors will reach the Ultimate Realm. It’s not necessarily impossible for Zhang Ruochen to achieve that based on his natural gift and speed of accumulation.”

The yellow-clothed man laughed and took out a wine pouch. He drank some wine and put the pouch on the table.

His eyes were cold, and he laughed again. “He’s indeed a talented person, but he’s a luckless man. Someone on the Heaven Board is still superior to him. And if that person launches an attack, Zhang Ruochen will not live to actualize the Ultimate Realm.”

“You’re talking about Huang Shenyi, right?”

Another person said, “Huang Shenyi is also a peerless Genius. At his current speed of accumulating military merits, he will probably reach 30,000,000 military merits within a year. In terms of current strength, Zhang Ruochen is still far from Huang Shenyi.”

The yellow-clothed man smiled and said, “Of course. Huang Shenyi encountered a huge opportunity when he practiced in the Primitive World of Xuan Wu.” “He has powerful strength. Hua Li, second on the Heaven Board, can’t withstand three movements. As for Zhang Ruochen, he only needs half a movement.”

Huang Yanchen and a group of young disciples from the East Region Saint Mansions stood inside the crowd. When she heard this, she could not stand it anymore. She walked over

and snorted. “You probably think highly of Huang Shenyi! Zhang Ruochen is the top warrior of the Saint Academy in the Eastern Region. If they fight, the result is unknown.”

Chapter 496 - Huang Shenyi

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The news that Zhang Ruochen was heading to the Wood Spirit Primitive World had spread throughout East Region Saint City. Furthermore, there were rumors that the so-called three Great Saint families had sent out large numbers of masters toward the Battlefield of the Primitive World with the goal of defeating Zhang Ruochen.

Having learned of this news, Huang Yanchen came out from refinement. She and other young masters from East Region Saint Mansions' Chen family had rushed to Myriad Chaos Mountain, ready to give Zhang Ruochen a hand.

However, they had just come to Myriad Chaos Mountain, and they had not even seen Zhang Ruochen yet when they, ran into a shamelessly boasting maniac.

Thus, there was a scene in front of the Heaven Board stone tablet.

A yellow-clothed man raised his head slightly and stared at Huang Yanchen. His face lit up wickedly. He said, "Lady, I see that you are wearing a martial robe from the Saint Academy, you must also be a young master. I wonder if you will dare to accept my challenge. Can we test ourselves on the Heavenly Battle Stage?"

"Why not? I'm worried that you won't be a match for me."
Huang Yanchen was proud and her demeanor cold.

She had long found the yellow-clothed man unpleasant. Since he dared to say that Huang Shenyi would certainly be stronger than Zhang Ruochen, even if Zhang Ruochen could swallow this insult, she could not.

In her opinion, Zhang Ruochen was another word for being invincible. If anyone looked down on him, they would have her as an enemy.

Huang Yanchen's martial cultivation had broken through to another realm. She had now reached the Medium State of the Heaven Realm. In the same generation, she could be considered an extremely rare specimen.

Because she was talented and daring, she accepted the yellow-clothed man's challenge.

A serious expression appeared on Chen Tianshu's face. He carefully observed the yellow-clothed man and felt some worry in his heart. He felt that this man was not someone to anger, so he reminded her in a low voice, "Cousin, you haven't figured out his background, yet you have rashly agreed to battle him. I fear this is not good."

Huang Yanchen's personality had always been impulsive. In addition, she was angry, and so she had readily agreed to the challenge.

At this moment, with Chen Tianshu's reminder, she also felt like something was wrong. So, she asked, "Who exactly are you?"

The young warriors present were also very curious. They also felt that the yellow-clothed man was not as simple as he appeared, and that he was certainly not someone to be trifled with.

The man in yellow said, "Commandery Princess Yanchen, we met once before in Omen Ridge. You only have eyes for Zhang Ruochen so, naturally, you do not remember me. But I have not forgotten you. Your mother struck down from the sky with a sword very heroically. Such mightiness, I still remember it clearly today."

"Who exactly are you?" Huang Yanchen asked.

The yellow-clothed man laughed, "You are just asking my name now, is it not too late? Of course, there is no harm in telling you. After all, we are of the same clan. Huang is my

surname, and my name is Shenyi. You can call me the Yellow God Emissary.”

“Boom!”

Everyone on scene was shocked and involuntarily stepped back. They all went crazy.

“What? He is THE Huang Shenyi, the first on the Heaven Board?”

“Wasn’t Huang Shenyi practicing in the Primitive World of Xuan Wu? Did he come back early?”

Throughout the world, a number of people who dared to impersonate Huang Shenyi.

The talented disciples of the East Region Saint Mansions’ Chen family were all greatly shocked, and everyone pulled out their weapons. They looked at the yellow-clothed man like he was a great enemy.

While she was in Omen Ridge, Huang Yanchen had once seen Huang Shenyi. However, at that time, she had been too far away to see his appearance clearly.

At this moment, she looked closely at the yellow-clothed man. Only then did she realize that this person’s figure was indeed very similar to Huang Shenyi’s.

“Legend says that no warrior that Huang Shenyi has challenged has ever walked off the Battle Stage alive. None of them survived.”

“That girl from the Saint Academy is very unlucky to have agreed to battle Huang Shenyi. If she is really going to the battle, I’m afraid that everything points to disaster.”

“If she doesn’t go as agreed, how will she keep her head up in the future? In the way of martial arts, the biggest taboo is to be cowardly. Since she has agreed to someone’s challenge, how can she go back on it?”

...

The warriors beneath the Heaven Board stone tablet were all looking at Huang Yanchen with pity, shaking their heads back

and forth and sighing.

From their perspective, Huang Yanchen making Huang Shenyi angry was the same as angering death itself.

“I don’t believe that he is really Huang Shenyi.”

Chen Tianran huffed coldly. Raising the Ghost King Spear, he took large steps forward and leaped up. With strength like thunder, he struck at the man in yellow.

He was ranked 12th in East Region Saint Mansion among the younger generation so naturally, he was not weak. He had battled against Zhang Ruochen once, but he had been defeated in one move. Thus, he rather admired Zhang Ruochen’s power.

This time, he had volunteered to rush to Myriad Chaos Mountain with Huang Yanchen, and he was ready to offer Zhang Ruochen his support.

Right now, he was going to help Huang Yanchen test the yellow-clothed man’s strength.

What if he was just boasting and not Huang Shenyi at all?

When he saw Chen Tianran charging toward him with a spear, the corner of the yellow-clothed man’s eye moved slightly, and he laughed mockingly. “A first-rate genius of East Region Saint Mansions’ Chen family. Is this all you’ve got?”

The yellow-clothed man’s fingers twirled in thin air. With his palm in the center, he formed a tornado the width of a bowl.

The tornado extended out until it was dozens of meters tall. It had turned into a wind cudgel, and it swung toward Chen Tianran.

“Boom!”

The tornado wind cudgel struck Chen Tianran, shattering his Celestial Bodyshield, and sending him flying.

Chen Tianran’s body slammed into a stone pillar and broke it. He landed heavily on the ground, smashing the flagstones. He slid more than 30 meters back before coming to a stop.

“Ah!”

Blood sprayed out of Chen Tianran's mouth, after which he fainted away.

“Sixth brother!”

Huang Yanchen and Chen Tianshu immediately rushed over and helped Chen Tianran up from the ground.

Now, people could see that Chen Tianran's chest had turned into a mess of blood and meat by the wind power. A layer of flesh had even been whipped away, and rows of neatly lined up ribs showed through, as well as the internal organs behind the bones.

It was so scary!

“He's still breathing. He's not dead, yet.”

Chen Tianshu's expression was solemn as he immediately put a Muscle Growing Pill into Chen Tianran's mouth and helped him swallow it.

Afterward, he circulated his Genuine Qi and pressed his palm against Chen Tianran's head, helping him refine the healing Pill.

The warriors watching from a distance were all shocked into silence.

“It is indeed Huang Shenyi. His power over the wind is terrifying!”

“The skill to form the wind into a club, and then strip away flesh and blood from someone's chest without killing them is much more incredible than being able to kill someone!

Huang Shenyi had only struck out casually, and yet he had already shown such power. The crowd could not help but shiver in fear.

Furthermore, everyone knew that it was not because Huang Shenyi did not want to kill Chen Tianran, rather, it was because the military orders in place in Myriad Chaos Mountain did not allow the killing of fellow humans.

If someone dared to kill people with impunity, the Ministry of War would send Primitive World soldiers to have them killed.

Of course, the rules were different on the Heavenly Battle Stage. Before a warrior stepped onto the Battle Stage, both sides would sign a death waiver. Even if one accidentally killed the other, they would not receive any punishment.

Given Huang Shenyi's delicate control over the wind power, one could imagine that, if he wanted to, he could control the wind power so that it stripped away all the flesh and blood from one's body, leaving only the bones. Yet, the other person would still not immediately die.

This was a very difficult and terrifying skill. The delicate control of power was probably comparable to the ability of a Half-Saint.

“To be able to become the first on the Heaven Board, Huang Shenyi was indeed an extraordinary figure. It was impossible but to admire him.”

“The fact that he was able to accumulate 10,000,000 military merits already demonstrates his strength.”

When Huang Yanchen saw the extent of Chen Tianran's injuries, a wave of icy air surged out from her meridians, covering the ground at her feet with a thick layer of frost.

“Swish!”

Sword radiance flashed, and Huang Yanchen's sword immediately flew out of its sheath.

Huang Yanchen had activated a wind nature Sacred Mark, so naturally, the Genuine Qi she produced carried the power of wind.

Following her sword movement, a powerful wind picked up immediately and formed into a vortex that headed straight for Huang Shenyi.

“She still dares to fight Huang Shenyi even though he is so powerful? She is too daring!”

“Even if Huang Shenyi fears the Ministry of War's orders and does not kill her, it would still be very easy for him to destroy her cultivation or ruin her appearance.”

After witnessing Huang Shenyi's power, everyone knew that fighting with him spelled certain death. Even among the top Heaven Board warriors, not many would fight Huang Shenyi voluntarily.

Of course, regardless of her actual power, just drawing her sword against Huang Shenyi was already worthy of being admiration.

“You greatly overestimate your own abilities. Did you really think that no one would dare to kill you because your fiancé is Zhang Ruochen? In my eyes, he is nothing more than an ant.”

A murderous light flashed through Huang Shenyi's eyes, and his figure swayed.

One moment, he was sitting on a stone stool. The next, he had become a shadow and appeared over 10 meters away. His hands moved slowly through void space like he was drawing a Tai Chi map.

Since Huang Yanchen had come voluntarily to her death, he, naturally, would not hold back.

If he killed Huang Yanchen, Zhang Ruochen would certainly show himself.

At the same time, it would affect the state of Zhang Ruochen's heart. It would be a great help in his battle with him.

The palm technique he was going to execute was very extraordinary. It was called, “Broken Bone Palm.” If Huang Yanchen was hit, she would not die immediately. Rather, three days later, she would die after all the bones in her body shattered.

Huang Shenyi's arms seemed to be moving very slowly but in reality, they were moving very fast.

Although his palm had not struck down, everyone present seemed able to guess the result.

That woman was dead, for sure!

Just as Huang Shenyi's palm was about to land on Huang Yanchen's body, two people charged out from behind her.

Shadows.

“Swish!”

“Swish!”

“Huang Shenyi, we will fight you.”

The two shadows moved at an extremely fast speed, and their bodily movements were rather extraordinary. Furthermore, their bodies were slender and emanated a faint fragrance. It was two uncommonly beautiful women.

The woman on the left was Duanmu Xingling.

She transferred her Genuine Qi into her palms and formed an Aquarius Mark. She struck out, colliding palms with Huang Shenyi.

The woman on the right was Luo Shuihan.

Her entire body gave off a golden light, holy and elegant. She clenched her snow-white fingers.

She lightly sketched out a Luoshui Fist Technique. That wave of fist strength combined with some rule of heavenly way, exploding out with enough power to topple mountains and overturn oceans. It smashed into Huang Shenyi's left palm.

“Boom!”

The two of them clashed head-on with Huang Shenyi with an earth-shattering boom.

A great wave of energy ripples spread out, with the three of them in the center. It knocked the young warriors around them in all directions.

“Pffft!”

Huang Shenyi's figure quickly retreated. He slid 30 meters back before his legs rooted and he steadied himself.

Luo Shuihan and Duanmu Xingling also flew back, and then slowly landed on the ground.

Duanmu Xingling arched out her full bosom and looked at her snow-white hands. With surprise, she said, “No wonder he is first on the Heaven Board, he is indeed very powerful. If we

were fighting one-on-one, perhaps I would not be your match right now. But, today, you are not facing me alone, instead, you are facing the Three Devils of the Western Campus. How about it, as the first ranked person on the Heaven Board, do you dare to take the challenge? Hehe!”

Chapter 497 - Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Huang Shenyi brushed the dirt off his clothes and glanced at Lui Shuihan and Duanmu Xingling, who were across him. He said coldly, “You were able to counter one of my attacks, proving that you two are somewhat skilled. However, if you think that you are capable of fighting against me, you are mistaken.”

Duanmu Xingling smiled and said, “Is that so? We will only know if we are wrong after a fight.”

“Swish!”

Duanmu Xingling transformed into a ghostly shadow and charged, leaving seven shadows on the ground.

By the time the seventh shadow stopped, she was hovering a meter off the ground. With her fingers closed, she formed a palm knife and struck at Huang Shenyi’s neck with the power of ice.

Duanmu Xingling seemed to have reached an impossible speed with her attack, but Huang Shenyi’s strike was even faster.

No one saw how he attacked. They only heard a bang and saw Duanmu Xingling fly outward.

Duanmu Xingling landed on the ground and retreated a dozen steps, bearing a pained expression on her face. Her left palm covered her lower abdomen while a streak of blood stained the corner of her lips. Her face was as white as paper.

“You survived my attack. Interesting.”

Huang Shenyi’s pupil contracted slightly.

He immediately leaped forward and stretched out one of his hands. Following the palm power, a dozen wind blades flew from the center of his palm.

Each wind blade turned into a two-meter tall white skeleton. There was something evil about them and they each held a long knife, giving out a ghost-like cry.

From the distance, Huang Shenyi’s palm power formed a ghost army.

An Inferior Class martial technique from the Ghost Level, Ninth Earth Evil Wind Palm.

It was only now that Huang Shenyi became serious.

“Huang Shenyi is so powerful. No wonder he claimed to be able to defeat the second person on the Heaven Board, Hua Li, within three strikes. With my level of skill, I wouldn’t even be able to block this one attack of his.”

Duanmu Xingling was already seriously injured by Huang Shenyi’s attack. She did not dare to meet the approaching Ninth Earth Evil Wind Palm directly and could only retreat as much as she could.

She was furious. A proper Saintess of the Moon Worship Sect had been forced to retreat by an Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall. If word got out, would it not ruin her reputation?

Luo Shuihan and Huang Yanchen immediately charged and stood in a line with Duanmu Xingling.

“Zigzag Luoshui River, flowing smoothly.”

Luo Shuihan stepped up and stood at the forefront. Every inch of her skin glowed with a golden light. Her slender arms followed a strange path, outlining the shape of the nine twists of the Luoshui River, creating a Genuine Qi river in midair.

Duanmu Xingling and Huang Yanchen both struck, using their own martial techniques to block Huang Shenyi’s palm power.

“Boom!”

They met the attack head-on once again. Huang Shenyi continued to have the upper hand, sending Luo Shuihan, Duanmu Xingling, and Huang Yanchen backward.

Huang Shenyi stopped attacking. He stared at Luo Shuihan and said, “Are you the Saintly Being of Saint Luo Gentry, Luo Shuihan?”

Luo Shuihan answered, “Yes I am.”

Huang Shenyi nodded and said, “No wonder you could block my attack. You are the Holy Body of Golden Light of the Six Great Kings of the new generation in the Eastern Region. Alright! For the sake of her predecessor Luo Xu, I won’t kill her today.”

Immediately, Huang Shenyi’s turned to Huang Yanchen and said coldly, “Commandery Princess Yanchen, I can let you go today but don’t forget about our duel. If you do not appear on the Heavenly Battle Stage within half a month, I will view it as a sign of you looking down on me. When I eventually break into the Fish-dragon realm, I will have no choice but to go to the Qianshui Commandery to challenge the Qianshui Commanery Prince. Hehe.”

Upon saying this, Huang Shenyi let out a sinister laugh and left.

“What an arrogant man.” Duanmu Xingling pouted and huffed coldly.

Luo Shuihan said, “He is indeed very arrogant, but his strength is truly frightening. I heard that he is also a very powerful Array Master and that his Spiritual Power has already broken through to the 40th level. With the help of the arrays, he would be even stronger. When he fought with us earlier, he probably only used 30% of his power at most.”

“He’s so powerful,” Huang Yanchen said as she furrowed her brows.

Based on the power Huang Shenyi had demonstrated earlier, Huang Yanchen felt as though she was looking up at a great mountain who barely had to lift a finger to crush her to death.

Yet, Luo Shuihan said that he had only used 30% of his power.

If he were to use all his power, how strong would he be?

Duanmu Xingling was unhappy and muttered, “If I could break through to the Completion of the Heaven Realm, I would definitely be able to fight him.”

“Xingling, what are you saying?” Huang Yanchen asked.

Duanmu Xingling smiled sweetly and hugged Huang Yanchen’s arm, “Sister Chen, I’m saying that because Huang Shenyi is so powerful, you shouldn’t challenge him to a battle. Upon stepping onto the Heavenly Battle Stage, you would have already died under his hand before being able to admit defeat.”

Luo Shuihan added, “Xingling is right. With your current ability, you’d be a dead man walking if you agreed to battle Huang Shenyi.”

Huang Yanchen shook her head and said in a serious tone, “Huang Shenyi is very sinister and cunning. If I don’t agree to battle him, he will certainly go to Qianshui Commandery to defeat father and other members of the Royal Family. He has left me no choice but to battle him.”

Given Huang Shenyi’s cultivation, he was no match for the Qianshui Commandery Prince even if he broke through to the Fish-dragon Realm. However, with his power and status as one of the Seven Kills Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall, Huang Shenyi’s power was unimaginable.

Duanmu Xingling said, “He is not forcing you to battle him, he is forcing Zhang Ruochen to show himself. He has always wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen. Now, we can only hope that he will return from the Wood Spirit Primitive World soon enough. Perhaps only he is a match for Huang Shenyi.”

Lu Shuihan was worried and said, “It is rare for one to come across a genius such as Huang Shenyi who has been at the Completion of the Heaven Realm for many years. Even if Zhang Ruochen rushed back, he may be no match for Huang Shenyi.”

“There’s no other way. He has to come back to face this battle. After all, he is Sister Chen’s fiancé”. Duanmu Xingling stroked her chin with her fingers. A bright light appeared in her eyes and she said, “It looks like I have to make a trip to the Wood Spirit Primitive World to give the news to him ahead of time.”

...

The Wood Spirit Primitive World, the Blackwood Field.

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged at the summit of the mountain. Both his hands were placed near his abdomen and a fist-sized Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood hovered between his palms.

Strands of Genuine Qi flowed out of his palms. Crashing into each other, it turned the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood into wood powder.

The pores on his palms acted like a vacuum and absorbed the wood powder into his body.

“In the beginning, when I formed the Treasured Body of Water Spirit, it refined a total of 4.5 kilograms of Black Glazed Spinel. If I want to successfully form the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit, I would need about 4.5 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood.”

He had already refined 4.4 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood and was getting closer and closer to achieving the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit.

However, the closer he got to success, the more difficult it became to absorb the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood. The power that exuded as each particle of wood powder absorbed into his body left a Heaven-shaking, Thunder-exploding effect and caused a great deal of damage to his body.

His flesh was continuously destroyed and then healed.

As Zhang Ruochen refined the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood he took the Blood of Wood Spirit, enduring a level of pain that common people would not be able to. Drops of blood oozed out of his pores and bloody lines ran across his skin.

He could only refine 50 grams of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood per day, and yet his clothes were completely drenched in blood.

After recovering overnight, Zhang Ruochen continued the refinement process the next day.

Ao Xinyan looked at Zhang Ruochen's bloody state and bit her lip, hesitant to let him continue. She was tempted to persuade him that he should take things slow and that it was not too late to refine the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit after entering the Completion of the Heaven Realm.

However, Blackie stopped her and said, "Zhang Ruochen is currently practicing the Wood Spirit and Water Spirit in "Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits". It is a lot more difficult than practicing Treasured Body of Water Spirit alone. Later on, he will have to blend all five types of Five Elements Spirit Treasure and practice the Five Elements Chaotic Body. Without great perseverance, he will not be able to successfully complete the Five Elements Chaotic Body. He is not only practicing the "Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits", he is also training his willpower. You will not be doing him any good if you try to change his mind now."

"I understand."

Ao Xinyan sat down again and looked at Zhang Ruochen from a distance. She realized that this was why he had such a high cultivation at such a young age. Indeed, not as simple as just being talented.

I cannot be lazy either. Otherwise, in the future, the difference in skill between us will grow larger and larger.

With this in mind, Ao Xinyan took out the Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood that Zhang Ruochen had given to her previously and began to refine it.

She was also going to practice the "Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits".

Her power would increase greatly with the combination of the Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits and her half-dragon body.

After five continuous days, Zhang Ruochen finally refined 4.5 kilograms of Purple Cloud-patterned Eaglewood, and had successfully completed the Water Spirit and Wood Spirit “Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits”.

“I finally succeeded!”

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes and took a deep breath, feeling very happy.

He stood up, walked to the edge of the cliff and began communicating with the wood nature Spiritual Qi between heaven and earth.

Afterward, he stretched out his finger and the Genuine Qi at the tip connected with the wood nature Spiritual Qi, forming streaks of Genuine Qi lines that looked like tree roots.

Gradually, the Genuine Qi lines became more and more solid and eventually formed a true wooden root. It drilled into the mud and rock and pierced deeply into the cliff.

“Pffft!”

A tender sprout grew out of the wall of the cliff at a rate visible to the naked eye. It grew leaves, a bud, and, finally, blossomed into a beautiful flower.

The cliff and even the mountain turned into a sea of flowers. The air was filled with the thick fragrance of flowers.

Upon seeing this, Ao Xinyan and the Orange Star Emissary were both shocked. It was like seeing a miracle.

Was such mysterious power only possessed by Saints?

“What beautiful flowers, how fragrant.”

Ao Xinyan took a deep breath and looked intoxicated. She said excitedly, “Group leader, when one successfully learns the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit, will they be able to bring life back to a withered tree, to move flowers and connect wood, to immediately create a lively sea of flowers, woods, or meadow?”

Chapter 498 - The Treeman Altar

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen retrieved his power. He smiled and said, “It won’t be that easy. One is not necessarily strong enough just by practicing into a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit. One has to at least train into the Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits of both Water and Wood Spirit. Wood Spirit Genuine Qi is used to awaken the vitality within the earth, and Water Spirit Genuine Qi is used to stimulate the growth of the vegetation.”

“So how can we actually awaken the vitality within the earth using the Wood Spirit Genuine Qi?” Ao Xinyan asked. “And if that’s the case, how do we stimulate the growth of vegetation using the Water Spirit Genuine Qi?”

Zhang Ruochen answered, “You will understand the norms and mysteries within heaven and earth once you practice your Spiritual Power to fortieth level. For now, even if I explain it to you, you will still have a hard time understanding it.”

Ao Xinyan’s Spiritual Power was only at 36th level. Looking at the figures, it seemed like fortieth level was within grasp. But in reality, even if she practiced another ten years, reaching it was still filled with uncertainties.

Her Spiritual Power was already quite strong amongst the warriors in the Heaven Realm.

“Zhang Ruochen, I thought you came to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit for some extraordinary purpose, but it seems that you are just hiding in this Small World for a nice sweet date with your lover. Look at these flowers, how romantic! I envy you both.”

A woman's voice could be heard from beneath the mountain and within the clouds.

SWOOSH!

The next moment, Duanmu Xingling penetrated through the clouds stepping through the void space. She leaped upwards and landed on the edge of a large cliff.

Stepping onto a huge rock, she ascended to the top of the mountain and landed in front of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen knew it was her as soon as he heard her voice. He was intrigued. "Senior sister apprentice Duanmu, what are you doing here?"

Duanmu Xingling stared coldly at Zhang Ruochen and turned her head to the side. "With my title of nobility of the First Central Empire, of course I'm here to undergo training. I should be asking you the same. You too have a title of nobility, Commandery Prince. Why didn't you report to the Ministry of War? You snuck into the Primitive World of Wood Spirit, didn't you?"

Zhang Ruochen did not intend to hide the truth from her. He nodded. "Indeed. I'm here for something important that may cause huge destruction to the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. If I came using my identity as the Yunwu Commandery Prince, the Ministry of War might launch an investigation, including an investigation into me too. Sneaking into the Primitive World of Wood Spirit is different, even if the Ministry of War launches an investigation, I can still deny any misconducts."

Zhang Ruochen was not surprised at all that Duanmu Xingling had earned a title of nobility.

It was not a difficult task for a heresy Saintess to acquire a title of nobility.

Duanmu Xingling looked toward Ao Xinyan with hostility. She reverted her sight back to Zhang Ruochen and said, "Set aside your so-called important purpose. Come back to the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain with me. We have a huge matter to look into there."

"What is it?" Asked Zhang Ruochen.

She told him about the upcoming battle between Huang Yanchen and Huang Shenyi.

Zhang Ruochen listened calmly. A slight frown appeared on his face.

“Huang Shenyi is forcing me to fight with him,” he concluded.

“That’s right.”

“If you’re not going to show up in the next ten days,” she added. “With Sister Chen’s attitude, she will definitely enter the Heavenly Ring and fight Huang Shenyi. If that happens, there might be undesirable repercussions.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled, “With her character, she will definitely go.”

“How can you smile at something like this?” She asked coldly.

Zhang Ruochen appeared to be calm. He looked into the depth of Blackwood Field and said, “Ten days should be enough! Senior Sister apprentice Duanmu, why don’t you go back to the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain first. Do not let senior sister apprentice Huang Yanchen enter the Heavenly Ring, no matter what. I will be back within ten days. If Huang Shenyi wants to battle, I will give it to him.” #

Duanmu Xingling appeared to be content at that. “Huang Shenyi’s strength is quite overwhelming. Even Sister Chen, senior sister disciple Luo and I had a hard time defending against him. How confident are you that you can beat him?”

Ao Xinyan had full confidence in Zhang Ruochen. “No matter how strong Huang Shenyi is, Zhang Ruochen will defeat him.”

Duanmu Xingling was unhappy to hear her speak. She glared at her and then smiled. “Ao Xinyan, I am discussing a serious matter with Zhang Ruochen, what gives you the right to barge in? Have you even met Huang Shenyi? Do you know how strong he is?”

Zhang Ruochen was quite confused. He looked at Duanmu Xingling. He wondered why she was so angry when she was normally very cheerful.

Why was she so angry today?

Ao Xinyan was also very arrogant. She showed a sign of anger after Duanmu Xingling scolded her. She stood up, ready to fight.

At this moment, the Orange Star Emissary who was sitting further away smiled coldly and said, "Of course she doesn't know how strong Huang Shenyi is. But we know it. In fact, let me tell you that with Zhang Ruochen's current strength, Huang Shenyi might succumb on the Heavenly Ring in five moves. Don't disregard my words. Zhang Ruochen has practiced into the Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits. I think he will do just fine."

Duanmu Xingling noticed her for the first time. She smiled. "Is that the Black Market Excellence Hall's Orange Star Emissary? Since when did you become a prisoner? Tell me the truth, what is Huang Shenyi's trump card? If you tell me the truth, I will not give you a hard time."

Orange Star Emissary looked at Duanmu Xingling with disdain. She snorted coldly and turned her head.

"It doesn't matter if you refuse to answer. Do you believe I would remove all your clothes?" Duanmu Xingling asked cheerfully. She walked towards the Orange Star Emissary.

The Orange Star Emissary frowned. "What's the point of telling you? Even if you know what kind of power you are facing, you can't change it."

"Oh really?"

Duanmu Xingling grabbed the Orange Star Emissary's belt. She held a bronze dagger in her other hand. She drew a few small cuts on her face and blinked her big round eyes. "Zhang Ruochen is a terribly good person, therefore he might have spared your life. However, I'm having a bad day, and I might just take it out on you. How do you think I'm going to deal with you?"

The Orange Star Emissary was not fazed. "I'm an Emissary of the Black Market Excellence Hall. How could I possibly be threatened by you? Even if you had thousands of tricks up your sleeves, I would not snitch."

Duanmu Xingling's eyes sank. She pointed her dagger at the Orange Star Emissary's collar and dragged it downwards.

The sharp dagger slashed through her clothes, exposing fair white skin.

“Enough!”

Zhang Ruochen shouted, turning his back to the Orange Star Emissary, “Don't use this kind of approach to force her. I'm going to the Blackwood Field now. I'll be back in ten days. When I get back, I'll approach Huang Shenyi in person.”

Duanmu Xingling kept her dagger. She glared at the Orange Star Emissary and walked towards Zhang Ruochen. “Let me come with you.”

“Duanmu, you little brat,” Blackie said. “Zhang Ruochen and I are going to do something really important. This journey is quite dangerous. It is unwise for you to follow us if you're here just to make up a number. Take these two ladies back to the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain. I assure you that once we complete this mission, Zhang Ruochen's strength will increase exponentially. By that time, Zhang Rouchen will be able to beat not just one Huang Shenyi, but two Huang Shenyis.”

Duanmu Xingling's eyes sparkled. She asked, “Are you telling the truth, Blackie?”

Of course Duanmu Xingling would be more supportive if he was in the Primitive of World Spirit for something important, instead of dating with his lover. She would not get in the way.

“I am very capable,” Blackie vowed. “You should know this better than anyone. With our friendship, how could I lie to you?”

“Well then, I believe you! Blackie is still the cutest out of everybody. Unlike some other people, I know I can always trust Blackie.”

Duanmu Xingling pinched Blackie's ear. She raised her head and looked at Zhang Ruochen, smiling. “Since you really do have an important task, I will not waste your time. We'll meet again at the Chaotic Millionverse Mountain. I hope that by that time, you will be able to defeat Huang Shenyi.”

The Orange Star Emissary smiled coldly and said, "If Zhang Ruochen practiced for another three years, he would probably stand a chance against Huang Shenyi. As for now, you better not set your hopes on him."

Blackie looked like she was giving him a headache. "Take her Duanmu. Don't let her escape! I've kept her with us because she is useful."

After Duanmu, Ao Xinyan and the Orange Star Emissary left, Zhang Ruochen and Blackie headed quickly towards the depth of Blackwood Field.

It was difficult to spot traces of the treemen in Blackwood Field. The forest was silent, only their footsteps could be heard.

Blackie asked, "Zhang Ruochen, are we going directly into the treemen's ancient nest?"

"Of course not. There are many superiors within the treeman tribe. Even if we fight together, we are still no match against them. Moreover, our target is the Qi of Origin in the Primitive World of Wood Spirit. Let's try not to alarm them."

By taking Blood of Wood Spirit, Zhang Ruochen had practiced into a Treasured Body of Wood Spirit.

He could feel every plants vitality. He even knew what they were thinking. It changed his way of thinking.

They had killed too many treemen. There was no need to kill all of them.

"That's easy," said Blackie. "Once we find the Qi of Origin, the Yin Yang Wooden Graph will fly over and retrieve it."

"Let's hope it works smoothly." Zhang Ruochen nodded.

Blackie became as small as a fist. It reached up its paw and flew onto Zhang Ruochen's shoulder.

Zhang Ruochen started to circulate the Spiritual Qi of Wood Spirit. He absorbed the surrounding wood nature Spiritual Qi.

The Spiritual Qi of wood nature condensed into a gargantuan black 100-meter-high tree. It encased Zhang Ruochen and

Blackie into its trunk and turned into a Centurial Treeman.

The root of the Centurial Treeman rose and moved quickly, rushing towards the hinterland of Blackwood Field. Soon, Zhang Ruochen saw the altar of the treeman tribe.

The altar was very grand, like a lofty mountain. When viewed from afar, it gave a sense of majesty.

Below the altar were the conglomerating treemen. They gathered together into a black jungle.

Blackie looked dignified. “Something is not right. How could the treeman tribe build such a miraculous altar?”

“Why?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Blackie answered, “I do not really understand much about the treeman tribe, but from what I know, the treeman tribe is a natural spirit. It is impossible that they understand sacrifice. Normally only humans and a few savage beast tribes perform animal sacrifices as offerings to the gods to acquire the Sacred Mark. This altar... how unusual, I need to study it.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “In that case, let’s go our separate ways. I’ll retrieve the Wood Spirit’s Qi of Origin while you study the altar.”

“Great. According to the guidance of the Yin Yang Wooden Graph, the Primitive World of Wood Spirit’s Qi of Origin is hiding below the altar,” Blackie said. “It appears to be supporting the altar. On the other hand, it seems like this altar is suppressing what’s below. Weird, very weird indeed. Let me study it thoroughly.”

Chapter 499 - Stone Gate

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

There were countless treemen gathering below the altar. Their roots were planted into the earth and spread everywhere, creating a lushly vast forest.

The treeman Zhang Ruochen had created with his Genuine Qi of Wood Spirit walked pass the Millennial Treemen. It did not cause any uproar.

Zhang Ruochen was relieved. Practicing into the Treasured Body of Wood Spirit allowed him to hide.

He executed his Spiritual Power. Carefully it reached out and began to search.

When he retrieved his Spiritual Power, he was surprised. The number of superiors in the treeman tribe surpassed his expectations. There were at least 35 Treeman Kings.

Among them, there were also a few treemen who let out a terrifying aura, an aura that could put a warrior at unease. Zhang Ruochen's speculated that they were likely 4,000-year-old treemen. Their strength was comparable to a Monk at the Fourth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm.

One could imagine that if they were exposed, they would fall under siege. Even though Zhang Ruochen had extraordinary power, he could still be crushed.

One had to be very careful.

SWOOSH!

Blackie shrank to the size of a mosquito. Flapping its wings, it flew out of the hole in the tree trunk and landed below the altar to study the Lines on the altar.

“Looks like Blackie really does have some trick up his sleeve that enables him to shrink to such a degree.”

Zhang Ruochen was thinking.

Even a Monk at the Ninth Change of the Fish-dragon Realm with a Glazed Treasured Body, could only shrink and expand up to ten times his regular size. That was the limit.

Blackie definitely shrank more than that.

Zhang Ruochen controlled his treeman body and continued moving forward. He stopped below the altar and said to himself, “The altar area is full of treemen. If I step up to the altar, the superiors will definitely be suspicious. I need to create a commotion to distract them.”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and secretly circulated his Spiritual Power to connect with the Spiritual Qi of heaven and earth.

WHOOSH!

Under the influence of Spiritual Power, a thick cloud gradually formed above the altar.

The cloud grew thicker and more vast. It covered the scorching sun until no sunlight could pass through it. The world suddenly became extremely dark.

Claps of thunder could be heard from within the dark clouds. The Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi gathered and struck out a few streaks of lightning. They turned into an electric serpent that pierced through the sky.

“What’s happening? Why did the dawn suddenly turn into dusk?”

“I felt some kind of powerful energy condensing in the clouds. If the energy erupts, surely a great disaster will come upon us.

“That is... It’s a trick of the Extraterritorial Death! The Extraterritorial Death is coming! The Extraterritorial Death is coming!”

The treemen who had witnessed Zhang Ruochen’s power of thunderbolt were haunted with fear and began to panic.

Only the Millennial Treemen and Treeman Kings stayed calm. But they started to become more serious, as if a huge rival was coming. They began to look everywhere for the Extraterritorial Death.

None of them realized that just below the altar, a treeman's trunk was slowly making a breach in the earth.

Zhang Ruochen seized the opportunity and came out from the treeman's trunk. He executed Space Moving and disappeared. Then he moved through space and reappeared at the top of the altar.

Zhang Ruochen could feel a energetic heavy presence working on his body as he ascended to the top of the altar.

The heavy energy forced him to bend his legs slightly. His bones cracked. However, he quickly got used to it and regained his posture.

“So there is 20 times the energy on top of the altar. Now that's meaningful. Seems like Blackie is right, this altar is indeed different.”

Soon, Zhang Ruochen was at the top of the altar. He discovered a stone gate leading to the underground.

On the surface of the stone gate, there were some mysterious carved Lines and odd little dots.

At a first glance, the Lines and dots were like a starry sky.

Zhang Ruochen did not go through the carvings on the stone gate thoroughly. Circulating his Genuine Qi, he reached out a palm and struck the stone gate.

The stone gate vibrated with a bang but did not shatter.

Instead, the Lines began to glow.

Zhang Ruochen was curious. He looked at his palm; it felt strange.

With his current power, he could normally break a metal gate, let alone one made of stone.

And yet his palm had not even left a dent.

“I will use Space Moving.”

The power of space was the most mysterious. It could penetrate through any tough object even a stone gate. After all any substance was a part of space.

POW!

A loud noise could be heard.

Zhang Ruochen applied Space Moving but crashed into the gate. Hard.

He did not pass through the stone gate. He felt pain and dizziness.

“My cultivation is too weak. I can’t exert the true power of space. The Lines on the stone gate even resist my power.” Zhang Ruochen rubbed his aching shoulder and could not help observing the Lines on the stone gate again.

The power of space could indeed pass through any object in this world. However, some strong inscriptions could affect space. If Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation reached a higher realm and he gained a deeper understanding of space, he would be able to pass through inscriptions.

“Could it be... Perhaps it is necessary to provide offerings to open the stone gate?”

Zhang Ruochen thought so.

He took the Auspicious Vase out from his storage ring. He took the blood of the Millennial Treemen from the vase and poured it on the stone gate.

The blood dripped onto the gate with a squeak and immersed into it.

The stone gate absorbed the blood of the Millennial Treemen.

Zhang Ruochen showed a look of satisfaction. He poured more blood onto the stone gate.

The Lines of the stone gate absorbed the blood. Slowly they turned red and spread out towards the door.

BANG!

The cylindrical altar spun slowly and let out a deafening sound.

The Treeman King closest to the altar was the first to feel strange movement on the altar. It looked towards the altar and saw Zhang Ruochen. It shouted loudly, “No! The Extraterritorial Death is on the altar! He must stop him! He cannot enter the altar.”

The Treeman King rushed towards the altar. It swept a meter-thick branch at Zhang Ruochen.

WHOO!

A strong wind could be felt.

The surface of the branch was flowing with a metallic beam. Every leaf was like a sharp blade. The Treeman King had very commendable power. Its branch was like striking out a thousand knives at once.

There was already a gap in the stone gate. Zhang Ruochen could not afford to escape; he could only fight the Treeman King with full force. He only hoped that he could resist until the stone gate was opened.

Zhang Ruochen stood next to the stone gate. With one hand holding the Auspicious Vase, he continued to pour the blood while his other hand held the Abyss Ancient Sword. He began to fight the Treeman King.

BANG! BANG!

Zhang Ruochen’s sword technique was admirable. Every sword Qi exuded was closely followed by another.

The altar was filled with sword shadows.

The sword Qi cut down leaves and gutted a few branches, which flew everywhere. Some of the branches fell on the altar while others were crushed into powder under the sword Qi.

The Treeman King stopped attacking when it realized that it had become a naked trunk with no leaves or branches.

“Extraterritorial Death... you bully...” The Treeman King growled.

Zhang Ruochen held his sword and stood up. He said bluntly, "If you don't back off, you will have to die."

"How arrogant, Extraterritorial Death! We will kill you!"
Another Treeman King shouted.

Nine Treeman Kings rushed to the altar. They surrounded Zhang Ruochen and attacked him.

Although Zhang Ruochen had practiced into the Treasured Bodies of Double Spirits, he did not dare be so presumptuous as to battle with nine Treeman Kings. Moreover, in addition to the nine kings, there were still more below, rushing towards the altar.

Zhang Ruochen was in a sticky situation. He was being besieged by treeman tribe.

"Execute the Holy Wood Array for God Destruction. We must not let the Extraterritorial Death escape."

Below the altar, one of the Treeman Kings was ordering the others. It gathered the other treemen to execute the array.

Zhang Ruochen resisted the incoming attacks with his Celestial Bodyshield and performed his sword movement, fighting with nine Treemen at once. However, he would only be able to hold on for a short time before his sword and Celestial Bodyshield were broken.

A branch crashed down heavily on Zhang Ruochen's left shoulder, causing him to fly back.

"Die!"

Three Treeman Kings launched an attack towards Zhang Ruochen together.

Suddenly, the stone gate at the top of the altar opened.

SWOOSH!

There was a beam of glaring red light coming out from the stone gate. It turned into a light column that pierced through the dark clouds and flew into the vast universe.

Zhang Ruochen demonstrated Space Moving and disappeared into thin air. The next moment, he was beside the stone gate.

With a flash movement, he entered the stone gate.

The three treeman Kings' attacks were to no avail. They had been unable to stop him.

"How does the Extraterritorial Death disappear so suddenly?" One of the Treeman Kings asked, shaking.

"He... He entered the stone gate..." One of the Treeman Kings said.

"What?"

"What should we do now?"

The stone gate had closed again.

The Treemen Kings stared at each other in disbelief. They did not know what to do next.

A Treeman King who had been around for 4,000 years said in an ancient voice, "Don't worry everybody. The Treant Ancestor is cultivating deep inside the altar. The Extraterritorial Death entering the stone gate only means death for him."

"True. The power of the Treant Ancestor is incomparably superb."

The 4,000-year-old Treeman King added, "However, we should still execute the array, just in case."

The Treeman Kings retreated from the altar and performed the Holy Wood Array for God Destruction.

Even if the Extraterritorial Death was lucky enough to escape from the altar, they could still deal with him. Perhaps even annihilate him.

Chapter 500 - The Tree Progenitor, Qi of Origin

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Five thousand kilometers from the Blackwood Field lay a vast, flat, empty stretch of terrain.

In the wilderness, a small city was built from huge stones. It had a watchtower, martial arts arena, and a mansion.

The patrolling army which was sent by the Ministry of War to the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit was stationed in this city. Although their numbers were few, the army was entirely made up of elite sergeants.

A sergeant who was standing on the watchtower saw a blood pillar at the horizon. The blood pillar shot up, straight into the sky, piercing through the clouds.

The entire Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi of the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit began trembling.

The sergeant then rushed to the city and reported the incident to the patrolling army's Commander in Chief.

“Blackwood Field is a heavily guarded, restricted area as ordered by the Ministry of War. Since a blood pillar has suddenly surged from the altar deep in Blackwood Field, something extraordinary must be happening.”

The Commander ordered the first and second patrol teams to rush into Blackwood Field and investigate the sudden event.

Each little team had only ten people.

However, the first and second patrol teams were made up of masters. Even the weakest sergeant had achieved the

Completion of Heaven Realm.

Not to mention the captains of the patrol teams, who were superiors of the Fourth Change in the Fish-Dragon Realm. The Holy Meridians in their bodies had already activated, which allowed them to convert their Genuine Qi into a small amount of Spiritual Qi.

With their strength, nobody could stand against them, even the treeman tribe.

“Blackwood Field was the most restricted place. If something happened here, it might even reach the Heavens and alert Her Majesty. We must be careful and not act recklessly.”

The captain of the first patrol team looked serious. He was the first to ride on the Purple Tiger-Like Dragon Beast, and he flew with haste.

The other sergeants then followed. They, too, flew savage beasts towards Blackwood Field.

Inside the stone gate, an uncommon chill cooled the surroundings. Icicle debris littered the ground, giving off a squeaking sound when stepped on.

Zhang Ruochen exuded both Space Domain and Spiritual Power. He climbed carefully down the underground stone ladder.

In the midst of his Qi Pool, the Yin Yang Wooden Map became active.

The scroll emitted a dim light.

Obviously, it had sensed the Qi of Origin in the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit. As Zhang Ruochen descended, the light emitted by the Yin Yang Wooden Map became brighter and brighter.

After a while, Zhang Ruochen arrived at the bottom of the altar.

The space of the altar was quite vast, about the size of four football fields put together. It was dark. However, a red light glowed in the center of the space.

Zhang Ruochen walked towards the light. He discovered that the red light was actually a gargantuan blood pool.

The pool was full of blood. It had treeman's blood, as well as the blood of savage beasts and humans. The mixed blood coagulated with a pungent stench.

A few lines were engraved at the edge of the blood pool.

The lines were connected to the blood pool at one end and to the ground at the other. From far away, the lines looked like blood vessels. The effect was quite eerie.

“Why is there so much savage beast and human blood here?”

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen realized an extreme energy was approaching swiftly from the rear.

Daunted by fear, he quickly turned around.

“Shuah!”

A shadow flashed by his sight.

Before he could even see what the person looked like, a strong power hit him in the chest, throwing him backwards.

“Bang!”

Zhang Ruochen crashed against the stone wall and fell to the ground. With one hand on the floor, he let out a cry. Blood trickled from his mouth.

He raised his head and looked over at the blood pool. By the pool stood a small old man in a gray robe. He was only about 1.6 meters tall.

It appeared to be a human figure, but in fact, it was a treeman.

His body was made up of tree roots as thick as a finger. Even his hair and beards were wooden strands. His body was entirely wooden.

“Are you the Treeman Ancestor of the treeman tribe?”

Zhang Ruochen held on to his injury and slowly stood up. He stared at the elder who was standing opposite.

Zhang Ruochen had heard the name of “Tree Progenitor” from the treemen.

Among the treeman tribe, only one treeman had such powerful cultivation, the one and only Tree Progenitor.

The Tree Progenitor spoke with a gruff voice, “Extraterritorial Death, how dare you trespass in this place! What do you want?”

A strong power exuded subtly from the body of Tree Progenitor. It sought to obliterate Zhang Ruochen’s will.

Zhang Ruochen remained untouched. He smiled and said, “I would like to ask you, why is there so much savage beast and human blood below the altar? Where did the blood come from?”

The Tree Progenitor’s strike seemed to seriously wound Zhang Ruochen.

However, in reality, he was protected by the Dragon Pearl. So, he had not suffered any serious blow. Nonetheless, he looked like he was seriously injured after he spit out blood.

In this way, he could lower the Tree Progenitor’s guard. When a timely opportunity arose, he could launch a thunderous strike and reverse the situation.

The Tree Progenitor answered, “Since you will be a dead man soon, I’ll just tell you. The blood in the pool was transported by a sergeant of your human tribe.”

Zhang Ruochen was astonished and asked, “The people from Ministry of War transported the blood here?”

“It must be! We Blackwood treeman tribe made a secret agreement with the human tribe. We will guard the altar, if they leave us alive and let us continue to breed in Blackwood Field,” The Tree Progenitor said.

Zhang Ruochen followed up with another question. “What’s the use of the blood that is stored in the altar?”

“I don’t know.” The Tree Progenitor shook its head.

Suddenly, the Tree Progenitor looked merciless. He said, “You have asked too much. I’ll send you to hell now.”

“Swoosh!”

The Tree Progenitor stuck out a palm. It was full of seven wooden rods.

The seven rods were sharp, as if seven long spears protruded. Their power was chilling. 49 wooden rod shadows appeared and sealed all of Zhang Ruochen's escape routes.

Although the palm seemed to be struck out casually, the power exuded was fearsome enough to eviscerate even a monk of the Third Change in the Fish-Dragon Realm.

However, Zhang Ruochen was waiting just such an opportunity. Just as the Tree Progenitor attacked with his palm, Zhang Ruochen used Space Moving to teleport behind him.

“Not good.”

The Tree Progenitor was caught off guard. He felt a space fluctuation behind him, and he knew that Zhang Ruochen was already there.

He had no time to even turn around. The Tree Progenitor condensed his power immediately and struck out behind him.

“Space Vortex.”

Zhang Ruochen swung his arm and chopped towards the Tree Progenitor's back.

As his palm struck out, space tore open into a two-meter-long crack.

The space underground was too small. Zhang Ruochen did not dare use Space Collapse rashly, because he feared that he, too, would be sucked into chaos. After all, he had not yet fully mastered space control.

“Chh!”

The Tree Progenitor's arm was amputated by the Space Crack. It turned into sawdust.

However, with his profound cultivation, his reactions were still fast, and he was still alive.

The Tree Progenitor leaped forward and retreated to a corner. He turned around and looked at Zhang Ruochen nervously.

“You’re not injured?”

“Of course I’m injured, but not as bad as you think.”

Zhang Ruochen added, “That’s why you’re the Tree Progenitor, with such speed. That strike did not even kill you.”

“Since you could not kill me, then the next person who should be dead is you.”

The broken arm of Tree Progenitor rapidly grew a few green buds. After a while, a wooden arm grew again.

“Of course I’m no match for you, but killing me won’t be easy.”

Having said this, Zhang Ruochen jumped into the blood pool without any hesitation.

After that, his body completely sank into it.

“This Extraterritorial Death is too dumb to know that this is not a normal blood pool. This blood pool contains a wicked Sacrifice Power, which is enough to refine his body into blood. He will become part of the blood pool.”

The Tree Progenitor kept watching the blood pool.

After an hour, there was no sign of Zhang Ruochen in the blood pool.

He was relieved. His stiff face cracked a smile. He stroked his beard and said, “How unexpected. The Extraterritorial Death jumped into the blood pool and died. Good! I do not need to waste any energy.”

Once Zhang Ruochen jumped into the blood pool, he immediately opened Space Domain, which turned into a three meter radius Qi Shield. He dove to the bottom of the blood pool.

According to the Yin Yang Wooden Map, the Qi of Origin of the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit was at the bottom.

“I’ve already dived for fifty meters, yet I haven’t reached the bottom of the blood pool. How much savage beast and human blood is in this pool? Why did the people from the Ministry of

War send the blood to this place? Perhaps they also built the altar.”

Zhang Ruochen was completely puzzled.

“Swoosh!”

Suddenly, the Yin Yang Wooden Map trembled greatly. It turned into a light spot, which came out from Zhang Ruochen’s head and flew towards the bottom of the blood pool.

A mini altar stood at the bottom of the blood pool. It was only nine meters tall. It was also cylindrical and filled with line carvings.

The Qi of Origin of the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit was suppressed below the altar.

“Swoosh...”

The Yin Yang Wooden Map flew towards the altar. It opened and let out some rays of light. The rays converged and formed a space door, which put the Qi of Origin directly into it.

The Yin Yang Wooden Map then rolled up and floated in the blood.

Zhang Ruochen rushed forward and grabbed it. He was intrigued. He said, “Finally, I succeeded! “Since the Yin Yang Wooden Map has absorbed the Qi of Origin of the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit, then I should be able to achieve the condition of profound practice. I must seize the opportunity and improve my Spiritual Power by a level to the 42nd level.”

The Yin Yang Wooden Map absorbed the Qi of Origin of the Five Elements Primitive World, which allowed Zhang Ruochen to enter a state of profound practice. His Spiritual Power had directly improved to the 41st level.

The Qi of Origin of the Primitive World of the Wood Spirit was ten times stronger than the Qi of Origin of the Five Elements Primitive World. It was sufficient enough to improve Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power to the 42nd level.

Once Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power had reached the 42nd level, even if Zhang Ruochen only used his Spiritual Power, he

could exert the power of a monk of the Fourth Change in the Fish-Dragon Realm. His strength had greatly increased.